

1193 d. 4

THE  
L I F E  
And glorious ACTIONS of  
EDWARD Prince of WALES,  
(Commonly call'd the BLACK PRINCE)  
Eldest SON of  
King EDWARD the Third.

CONTAINING,  
Remarkable Occurrences of those Times, and particular Relations of the Battle of *Cressy*, where the whole Power of *France* was broken, two Kings slain, and a third put to Flight. The Battle of *Poitiers* ten Years after, when he again overthrew the *French*, and took their King Prisoner. The Battle of *Najara* in *Spain*, where at one Blow he decided the Fate of a Kingdom, and forced the *Spaniards* to accept *Don Pedro* for their King.

ALSO THE  
H I S T O R Y  
Of his Royal Brother  
JOHN of GAUNT,  
King of *Castile* and *Leon*, Duke of *Lancaster*, and  
Father of HENRY IV King of *England*,

RELATING  
His several Expeditions, and an Account of his Right to  
the Kingdom of *Spain*.

WITH  
His Marriages, Issue, and the Descendants from Him now existing; among which are the present Emperor of *Germany*, King of *Spain*, and King of *Portugal*.

---

Collected from Records, Manuscripts, and Historians  
By ARTHUR COLLINS, Esq;

---

L O N D O N:  
Printed for THOMAS OSBORNE, in *Gray's-Inn*.  
MDCCLX.





THE  
P R E F A C E.



EDWARD, Prince of Wales, commonly called the Black Prince, was the first of this Nation who had the Title of a Duke; and, intending to publish a History of all who were Peers of this Realm, I wrote the Account of his Life some Years ago, as also that of his Brother John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster: But after more than twenty Years Labour, in making Collections for that Work, I found such a Want of publick Spirit, as obliged me to lay aside my Design, not being able to sustain the Charge of printing so copious an Undertaking.

The present Juncture brought to my Remembrance the Ingratitude of the Spaniards to the heroick Prince, whose Life is here set forth; as also, the Arts, Dissimulation, and Perfidioufness of King Charles V. of France, in breaking the famous Peace of Bretigny, which he and his Nobles sued for with the lowest Submission, and which our great Prince concluded with that Monarch. This put me on revising what I had wrote, and enlarging the History of his Life.

He

## *The* P R E F A C E.

*He has ever been the Darling of our Nation; and, I do not doubt, my Readers will allow he justly acquired that universal Applause, and generous Concern, all Ranks of People have ever paid to his Memory.*

*The Battles of Cressley, and of Poictiers, where our Prince greatly signalized himself, fully demonstrate, that Superiority of Forces struck no Terror into the English, but heightened that Magnanimity and Intrepidity, our Nation in all Actions has constantly maintained.*

*In the Life of King Edward III. wrote by the Reverend Mr. Barnes, the warlike Acts of the Prince of Wales are recited, but are much dispersed, and are so prolix, that few have Patience to read his History: It will also appear by my Quotations, that I have added many remarkable Particulars, omitted by him; and, on Examination of the several Historians, have improved and altered what has been necessary.*

*In the History of John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, and King of Castile and Leon, are related his several Expeditions into France and Spain; with an Account of his Right to the Kingdom of Spain, which the Spanish Monarch of that Age did not think himself secure in, till he had matched his Son with the true Heir, the Daughter of that great Prince; from whom the present Emperor and the King of Spain are derived; as the King of Portugal is from another of his Daughters: And most of our Nobility, and others of Distinction, are also descended from him, as this History shews.*





THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
LIFE and Glorious ACTIONS  
OF  
EDWARD,  
Prince of *Wales*, first Duke of  
*Cornwall*, commonly call'd the *Black*  
Prince.



EDWARD Prince of *Wales*, eldest Son and Heir of King *Edward* the Third, was the most renowned General in the World; and from his dreadful Deeds in War (as most Writers agree) was surnamed by the French, *Le Noir*, or the *Black Prince*. His Mother

B

ther

ther was *Philippa*, <sup>a</sup> youngest Daughter of *William* Earl of *Heinault*, by *Jane*, Daughter of *Charles* Earl of *Valois*, Brother to *Philip the Fair*, King of *France*, fourth of that Name. Queen *Philippa* was delivered, at *Woodstock* near *Oxford*, of this her first-born Son, <sup>b</sup> on the Seventeenth of the Calends of *July*, at Ten o'Clock in the Morning; being, after our Account, on *Friday* the 15th of *June*, Anno 1330. <sup>4</sup> *Edw.* iii. And so welcome to his royal Father was the News of his Birth, and of his being a fair, lusty, and well-shaped Infant, that he <sup>c</sup> granted to the Messenger, *Thomas Prior*, forty Marks *per Annum*, out of his Exchequer, for Life, till he should settle Lands on him to that Value. And afterwards he gave Pensions to <sup>d</sup> *Joan* of *Oxford*, his Nurse, ten Pounds *per Annum*, and to *Mathilda Plumpton*, <sup>e</sup> *Bersalrix* or *Rocker* to him, ten Marks *per Annum*; but the royal Mother suckled him with her own Breasts. His Tutor was Dr. *Walter Burleigh*, (or *Burley*) who had been bred in *Merton College* in *Oxford*<sup>f</sup>; so famed for Learning and Piety, that he was taken into Queen *Philippa's* Service (at her first Coming into *England*) and became her Almoner.

Before this royal Prince was three Years of Age, the King intending some considerable Provision for him, (though he had before made him <sup>g</sup> an annual Allowance for the Expences of his House, &c.)  
did,

<sup>a</sup> *Barns's History of King Edward the 3rd.* p. 1. et 27. *Assmole's* Life of K. *Edward*, in *Hist. Gart.* p. 643, 669. <sup>b</sup> *Knighton*, p. 2558, and *Sandford's Geneal. Hist.* p. 181. <sup>c</sup> *Pat.* 4 *Feb.* 5 *Ed.* 3. p. 1. m. 33. <sup>d</sup> *Pat.* 10. *Ed.* 3. p. 1. m. 30. <sup>e</sup> *Pat.* *ibid.* <sup>f</sup> *Hollinshed's Chron.* p. 1002. <sup>g</sup> *Pat.* 4 *Ed.* 3. p. 2. m. 42. *Rot.* Lib. 5. E. 3. m. 8.

did, by his Charter dated (18 *Maii*) in the seventh Year of his Reign, grant to him, <sup>h</sup> by the Title of *Edward* his most dear and eldest Son, the County of *Chester*, the Castles of *Chester*, *Bes-ton*, *Rothelan*, and *Flynt*, and all his Lands there: As also, the Cantred and Land of *Englefield*, with their Appurtenances, to him and his Heirs Kings of *England*, together with all Knights Fees, Advowsons, Liberties, Royalties, and all other Things belonging to the said County, Castles, Lands, and Cantreds, as well in *England* as in *Wales* and the Marches thereof, as fully, and under the same Conditions, as he himself received them before he was King: And, the better to maintain this Dignity, the next Day had <sup>i</sup> a Grant of all the Corn, as well in Grainges, as growing on the Ground; as also, all the Arms, Victuals, Cattle, Goods, and Chattles, in all the said Castles, Lands, and other Places to him before granted; together with all Debts, Arrearages of Accounts, and other Services due to himself.

Likewise, before he was seven Years of Age, in the Parliament held at *Westminster* 11. *Ed.* iii. he was created Duke of *Cornwall*, as appears by his Charter of Creation, <sup>k</sup> bearing date the Seventeenth of *March* the same Year, and invested by the Sword only; which is the first Precedent for the Creation of the Title of Duke with us in *England*. And the same Day the King, at *Westminster*, signifies to the Sheriff of *Cornwall*, <sup>l</sup> that, being willing to give Honour to *Edward*, Earl of *Chester*,

B 2

ter,

<sup>h</sup> Cart. 7. E. 3. m. 4.  
11. E. 3. n. 55.

<sup>i</sup> Pat. 7. E. 3. p. 1. m. 13.  
<sup>l</sup> Rymer's Fœdera, vol. 4. p. 735.

<sup>k</sup> Cart.



ter, his eldest Son, he creates him Duke of *Cornwall*; and, for the better Support of that Honour, grants to him the Stannaries in the said County, together with the Coinage, and all the Issues and Profits thence arising; excepting one Thousand Marks he had before granted to *William de Montacute*, Earl of *Sarum*, and the Heirs Male of his Body, 'till such Time as certain Lands, &c. fall to him, whereof he had a Grant in Reversion. Likewise, for the better Support of the State and Honour of Duke, the King settled on him divers Mannors and Franchises; which, though some lay in other Counties, were nevertheless made Part of the Dutchy of *Cornwall*, and were to descend to the said Duke,<sup>m</sup> and to the eldest Sons of him and his Heirs Kings of *England*, Dukes of that County successively, and not to be sever'd from the said Dukedom, upon the Death, or Non-existency of the said Dukes, but to revert to the Crown together therewith. And in 17 *Ed. iii.* the King granted, "that all the Castles, Honours, Mannors, Lands, and Tenements, belonging to the Dukedom or Earldom of *Cornwall*, which were held in Dower, or for Term of Life, or Years, should remain to this Prince, as Duke, still as they fell; and to the eldest Son of him and his Heirs, as Dukes of the foresaid Dukedom.

In 12 *Ed. iii.* on the King's Going into *Brabant*, he was<sup>o</sup> constituted *Custos Angliæ*, and held a Parliament at *Northampton*,<sup>p</sup> on the Twenty-sixth of *July*; wherein great Aids were granted to the King,

<sup>m</sup> *Dugdale's Warwickshire*, p. 90.  
24.   <sup>o</sup> *Pat. 12 E. 3. p. 2. m. 12.*

<sup>p</sup> *Pat. 17. E. 3. p. 2. m.*  
*F. Knighton*, p. 2571.

King, towards the Maintenance of his War. The Year following, he held another Parliament at *Westminster*, on the Thirteenth of *October*; whereof the Result was, <sup>a</sup> that this young Prince, *Warden of England*, with the other Lords, granted to the King the tenth Sheaf of all the Corn of their Demesnes, except of their bound Tenants; the tenth Fleece of Wool, and the tenth Lamb of their own Store, to be paid for two Years. On the Close of this Sessions, the King, resolving to keep his *Christmas* at *Antwerp*, <sup>r</sup> sent for the Prince, his Son, to adorn the Solemnity with the greater Grace; having given Proofs of a Genius far exceeding his Age. His exact Shape, and well proportioned Limbs, raised a full Expectation of his future Manhood, among the Lords both of *England* and *Almain*; so that a Match was proposed and agreed on, between him and the Duke of *Brabant's* Daughter, the Lady *Margaret*.

The Treaty bears Date at *Brussels*, on *Tuesday* before the Feast of *St. John Baptist*, 1339. 13 *Ed. iii.* whereby the King promised to settle a Dower on her equal to that of his Queen *Isabel*; the said Duke giving her, for her Portion, fifty Thousand Pounds Sterling. And, for the Performance of the Contract on the King of *England's* Part, the following Persons were bound:

*John*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*; *Henry*, Earl of *Lancaster* and *Leicester*, Steward of *England*; *John*, Earl of *Warren*; *Henry*, Earl of *Derby*; *William*, Earl of *Northampton*; *William*, Earl of *Salisbury*, Marshal of *England*; *Richard*, Earl of *Arun*

B 3

<sup>a</sup> *Barnes*, p. 150.<sup>r</sup> *ibid.* p. 147.

*Arundel* ; *Thomas*, Earl of *Warwick* ; *Hugh*, Earl of *Devonshire* ; *Hugh*, Earl of *Gloucester* ; *Robert*, Earl of *Suffolk* ; *William*, Earl of *Huntendon* ; *Henry*, Earl of *Bochan* ; *Henry de Percy* ; *Thomas Wake de Lydell* ; *William Ros de Hamlake* ; *John de Moutbray* ; *Ralph de Nevill* ; *John de Beaumont* ; *Thomas de Berclay* ; *Roger de Grey* ; *Henry de Ferriers* ; *John Darcy* ; *Robert de Clif-ford* ; *John de Typtoft* ; *John de Moulyns* ; *John de Faukeberge* ; and *Thomas de Ponynges* ; Knts. And, in regard they were both within the third Degree of Consanguinity, a Dispensation was divers Times endeavoured to be obtained, by Letters sent from the King to the Pope, who would not comply therein ; whereby the Marriage was never consummated.

He was constituted *Custos Angliæ*, when the King's Occasions call'd him out of the Kingdom, to which the Title of *Locum tenens Regis* was sometimes added ; and, in his younger Years, the Archbishop of *Canterbury* was appointed to be the Chief of his Council, to direct him in all Affairs. In the Parliament held *an. 17. E. 3.*, the King created him Prince of *Wales*, investing him with a Coronet, a Gold Ring, and a Silver Rod : And, that he might be enabled to maintain a Port according to his Style and Dignity, gave him several Lands, all particularly enumerated, \* in a Writ directed to *William de Emel-don*,

*Rymer's Fœdera* Tom. 5. p. 113.    <sup>s</sup> *Rot. Rom.* 14 *E. 3. m.*  
 2. 18. *E. 3. m. 2.* and 19 *E. 3. m. 3* and 4.    <sup>t</sup> *Pat.* 14. *E. 3.*  
 p. 2. m. 28 16 *E. 3. p. 2. m. 6* &c.    <sup>u</sup> *Assmole* p. 671.  
<sup>w</sup> 12 *Maii Cart.* 17 *E. 3. m. 24. n. 27.*    <sup>x</sup> *Pat.* 17. *E. 3. p. 1.*  
 m. 8.



*don*, to deliver them to this Prince, or his Attorney. With this Dignity, the King also gave him <sup>y</sup> all Debts and Arrears of foreign Rents due to himself, for what Cause soever, in North-*Wales* and South-*Wales*, together with all Victuals, Arms, Horses, Oxen, Cows, and other Things, in all the Castles and Lands which he held by the King's Grant.

This glorious Prince first entered on the Stage of War, in the twentieth Year of his Father's Reign, <sup>z</sup> and received the Honour of Knighthood from him on the Twelfth of *July*, on his Landing at *La Hogue* in *Normandy*, when he was sixteen Years and twenty-seven Days old. At the Battle of *Cressy* (fought the same Year) he led the Van of the Army, <sup>a</sup> and, after a fierce Encounter with the *French*, was in some Distress by the Enemies breaking in among his Archers. But the Particulars of this ever memorable Victory, as I find them related by our several Historians, is as follows: On the Day preceding the Battle being *Friday* the Twenty-fifth of *August*, 1346. King *Edward* defeated a Party of the *French* King's Army, consisting of twelve Thousand Men, advantageously posted on the Banks of the *Somme*, but yet too weak to withstand the vigorous Efforts of the *English*, who, animated by their King, rush'd into the Water, and after an obstinate Dispute gain'd the opposite Shore, with the Slaughter of upwards of two Thousand Men of Arms, besides Footmen.

This Victory was as welcome to the *English*, as

B 4

unex-

<sup>y</sup> Extract. Donat. 17. E. 3. m. 4.    <sup>z</sup> Barnes, p. 341. Staw, p. 241. Speed, p. 589.    <sup>a</sup> Froissart, Cap. 130.

unexpected by the Enemy, who thought to have enclosed King *Edward* between their Army and the River; but now he encamped in the Fields of *Cressy* in *Pontbieu*, with a full Resolution there to abide the Coming of the *French* King, who, relying on the superior Number of his Troops, advanced with an ill grounded Confidence, already looking on the Victory as his own.

The Night before the Battle, King *Edward* made an Entertainment for the principal Officers of his Army, at which he appear'd so chearful and compos'd, as wonderfully rais'd the Spirits of his Men. And, having repos'd himself, he arose betimes, and with the Prince his Son heard Mass and receiv'd Absolution.

The King divided his Army into three Divisions, and gave the Command of the Foremost to the Prince of *Wales* his Son, then sixteen Years, two Months, and eleven Days old, but of a Courage and Strength so far beyond his Age, as he that Day sufficiently manifested, he was neither inferior to so great a Charge, nor unworthy so renowned a Father. But the King, lest he should be taxed with Rashness in venturing too much on the Conduct of a Youth, gave express Command to *Thomas Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*, and the Lord *John Chandos*, to have an Eye both to the Prince's Person and to direct him with their Counsel on any Emergency. The second Division was led by *Richard Fitz-Alan*, Earl of *Arundel*, and *William Bobun*, Earl of *Northampton*; and the Third by the King himself, amounting together to thirty Thousand Men compleat. The Archers  
in

in the first Division were rank'd in the Form of an Herse, about two Hundred in Front, and Forty in Depth, whereby the Enemy (who, were superior in Number) were matched in Front, and, thro' the Thinness in Flank, the Arrows were more likely to reach Home and do certain Execution. The Prince of *Wales* stood at the Bottom of this Herse on Foot, among his Men of Arms in a close square Brigade, having on his left Wing the Earls of *Arundel* and *Northampton*, with a strong Brigade of above seven Thousand Men of Arms, Billmen, and Archers: And, to prevent being surrounded, a Ditch formed like a Half-Moon was cast up toward the Town and the River *Maye* on their left Hand, whereof one Horn reach'd the Place where the Carriages were enclosed behind the Prince's Battle, and the other the left Side of their Front, their right being covered with the Prince's Brigade. Besides this, they were defended on the East Side by the Forest of *Cressy*, and on their left Hands by the Town and River of *Maye*. The King's Division, consisting of twelve Thousand Men, was placed as a Reserve some Distance from the Field of Battle near a Hill, on which the King from a Windmill determined to behold the first Success of the Fight. At the Rear of the Army the King enclosed all the Carriages and Horses by felling and plashing of Trees, leaving only one Entrance thereto strongly guarded by a Party of Men of Arms and Archers; by which Means all Hopes of Safety by Flight being taken away, their Preservation alone consisted in the Destruction of their Enemies.

This



This is the best Description our Historians have delivered to us of the Array of the *English* Army, wherein they neither mention the Nature and Quality of the Ground (tho' great Advantages depend on the Choice of Place) or what Pallisadoes, Trenches, or other Inventions were used to keep off and defend the Archers from the furious Attack of the Men at Arms, without which they, who were principal Actors on this bloody Stage, had been borne down and presently render'd unserviceable.

The King knighted the same Morning Fifty young Gentlemen, among whom were Sir *Guy Brian*, a young Baron; Sir *Robert Mauley*, Brother to *Peter Lord Mauley*; Sir *John Ravensholm*; Sir *Peter Brewis*; Sir *Thomas Lancaster*; Sir *Henry de Englaïne*; Sir *John Beauchamp*, and Sir *Walter Percival*, Ancestor to *John* the present Earl of *Egmont*. And, the Army being thus disposed, the King, on a white Hobby with only a white Wand in his Hand, rode from Rank to Rank between the two Marshals of his Field, encouraging every Man to defend his Honour and Right, whose very Presence, with a few seasonable Words touching the Justice of his Cause, added fresh Courage to the Brave, and warmed the faintest Hearts with eager Desire of making Trials of their Valour. After a short Repast, they laid themselves on the Grass with their Bows and Helmets by their Sides, and in this Posture expected the Approach of the Enemy, from about Nine of the Clock in the Morning.

[ II ]

On the other Side, King *Philip*, who began his March from the City of *Abbeville* (about three or four Leagues distant from *Cressy*) at Sun-rise, sent four Noblemen to discover the Posture of the *English*, who, after taking a View of the excellent Order in which they lay, advised the King to defer giving Battle 'till the next Day; alledging, *As well the Vigour and Alacrity of the English, as the disorderly and fatigued Condition of his own Troops tired with so long a March in their Armour.* But tho' the King approved of this Counsel, yet the Confidence, Rashness, and Levity of the *French* hinder'd its Execution, refusing to halt at the Command of the Field-Mmarshals; and rushing forward in great Disorder notwithstanding all the King could do to oppose them, 'till they were in Sight of the *English*. It will be difficult to describe the Order of the *French*, where Disorder was a principal Agent. Their King, at the first Sight of the *English*, is said to have changed Countenance, when he gave Command to prepare for the Battle. He divided his Army into nine Squadrons, and those into three Divisions, tho' not without many Alterations and great Confusion. The Van was first committed to the Charge of *John of Luxemburgh*, King of *Bohemia*, and *Charles* Earl of *Alencon*, King *Philip's* Brother, with whom were *Charles* of *Luxemburgh*, Marquis of *Moravia*, Son to the King of *Bohemia*, after Emperor of *Germany*; *Peter* of *Clermont*, Duke of *Bourbon*; *Lewis*, Earl of *Flanders*; *Ralph*, Duke of *Lorrain*; *James*, the only Son of Prince *Humbert* Dauphin of *Viennois*; *Henry*, surnamed the  
*Liberal,*

*Liberal*, Earl of *Vaudemont*; *Guy*, Earl of *Blois*; and other Persons of great Distinction. This Division at first consisted of twenty Thousand Men, being three Thousand Men at Arms, six Thousand Cross-bows of *Genoa* and other *Italians* under the Command of *Carolo Grimaldi* and *Antonio Doria* their Countrymen; but afterwards by Advice of the King of *Bohemia* it was increased to twenty-nine Thousand, by the Accession of all the *Genoese* Cross-bows led by *Ame* Earl of *Genoa*, who, being joined to their Countrymen, were look'd upon as a proper Match for the *English* Archers, and appointed to begin the Battle, being in all fifteen Thousand Cross-bows. The second Division, making six Thousand Men at Arms and forty Thousand Foot, was headed by King *Philip* himself accompanied by *James* King of *Majorca*; Prince *Albert*, Elector Palatine of the Empire; *Otko*, Duke of *Austria*; the Bishop of *Liege*; *John* Lord *Beaumont* of *Hainault*; and the King of *Bohemia*, who was removed from the Van at King *Philip*'s Desire.

The Rear was brought up by *Ame* Earl of *Savoy*, having with him the Bishop of *Noyon* and the Earls of *St. Paul* and *Sancerre*, five Thousand Lances, and twenty Thousand Foot.

It was about Three of the Clock in the Afternoon, before this numerous Army was ranged in Order of Battle; and then, as the *Genoese* were beginning to charge, a smart Shower of Rain, with loud Claps of Thunder, and a short Eclipse of the Sun a while withheld the Contention; but the  
Air

Air soon cleared, and the Sun shone directly on the Faces of the *French*.

The *Genoese* having discharged their Crossbows without any Execution, occasion'd by the Wetness of their Strings, gave back in great Disorder, as soon as they receiv'd one Flight of Arrows from the *English* Archers, whose Bows were covered during the Shower. The *French* King, enrag'd at their Cowardice, cried out to *slay the Rascals*; and the Earl of *Alencon*, no less impetuous than his Brother, endeavour'd to make his Way with his Horse over their Bodies. This hot young Nobleman had affronted them before they engag'd, when they alledged how unfit they were for fresh Service, after a wearisome March in their Armour: And now (contrary to all Policy) was driving them from the Battle, when they might have been of excellent Service, if only in receiving the first Storms of the *English* Arrows. Whereas they were not only most miserably trodden under Foot and put to the Sword, but also many of the *French* Gallants, thereby entangled with them, were overthrown by the *English* Archers, who equally pursued the Destruction of the *French* and *Genoese*, shooting thickest where the Tumult and Confusion was greatest. Some also, following the *English* Army as they saw Opportunity, stepp'd in among them, and with long Knives dispatched all they light on without Distinction. At length the Earl of *Alencon* with his Troops, having got clear of the poor *Genoese*, came (tho' not without great Loss) on the right Side of the *English* Archers, and with great Fury attack'd the Prince of *Wales*;



*Wales* ; but not being supported, after much Valour shew'd in vain, they were cut in Pieces, the *French* King not daring to relieve them for fear of disordering all his Army. Yet the Prince presently after was so warmly attack'd by three fresh Squadrons of *French* and *Germans* (who forced their Way thro' the Archers) as the Earl of *Warwick*, doubting the whole *French* Army followed, dispatched a Messenger to King *Edward*, in the Name of himself, the Earl of *Oxford*, Sir *John Chandos*, and Sir *Reginald Cobham* ; to inform him of the Danger, and of their Desire that he would move to their Assistance. The King who during the Heat of the Action never stirred from the Windmill (where he was first posted) seeing the *French* Standards drop, enquired of the Messenger, *If his Son was dead, wounded, or fell'd to the Ground* ; who answering in the Negative, the King replied : “ Go you back, and bid them that  
 “ sent you, take Care to trouble me no further,  
 “ while my Son is alive: But let him take Pains to  
 “ win his own Spurs, and to deserve the Honour  
 “ of Knighthood which I so lately conferred upon him. For I am resolved by the Grace of  
 “ God, the Reputation of this glorious Day shall  
 “ fall to his Portion and to those who are with  
 “ him.” This greatly encouraged the Leaders of the Prince's Forces, and they were displeased with themselves for sending the Messenger. But, before the Return of the Messenger, the Archers joined their Ranks again, and the Earls of *Arundel* and *Northampton* sent a strong Brigade of Men of Arms to the Prince's Assistance, which almost

enclosing the Enemy in Rear and Flank, whilst the Prince kept them in Play in Front, they were in a little Time entirely broken and defeated.

This Success encouraged the Prince (who hitherto had not stirred from his Post) to advance forward, and, being joined by the Earls of *Arun-  
del* and *Northampton*, the Archers were ordered to fall into Wings on each Side. The *French* met them with a gallant Resolution, somewhat refreshed with the Thoughts that their Deaths should not be sent them at a Distance, but that now they might Hand to Hand contend for the Victory: Yet here also they found themselves unequal to the Task. The Marquis of *Moravia*, Son to the King of *Bohemia*, was the first who renewed the Battle; but being wounded in three Places of his Body, and having his Standard beaten to the Ground, and his Men miserably slain about him, he with much Difficulty turned his Horse, and rode out of the Field, having cast away his Coat-Armour that he might not be known.

And now the *French* King in Person, with some select Troops, made the last Essay to turn the Fortune of the Day; but with such ill Success, that he was obliged to quit the Field, with only sixty Persons in his Company; yet not before he had given convincing Proofs of his Valour. He was wounded both in the Neck and Thigh, and having had one Horse slain under him, and being dismounted from a second, had undoubtedly been slain, or taken Prisoner, if the Lord *John* of *Hainault*, his Brother in Law, had not a third Time remounted him,

him, and, taking hold of his Horse's Bridle, almost by Force compelled him to forsake the Field. Here the royal Standard of *France* was beaten to the Ground (the Standard-bearer being killed in Sight of their King) and, whilst both Nations warmly contended for it, a *French* Gentleman immediately dismounted from his Horse, and, at the Hazard of his own Life, ript it from the Shaft with his Sword, and, wrapping it in Folds about his Body, rode out of the Field.

From this Time there was little or no Opposition made, and Night coming on gave an Opportunity to more than half the *French* Army to escape; tho' in such small Parties as plainly shewed the Greatness of the Defeat. The *English* never offered to pursue them, unwilling to hazard so glorious a Victory by breaking their Ranks, but stood all Night upon their Guard in the Field of Battle; wisely considering not only the great Numbers that escaped, but also how fresh Troops were with all Expedition marching that Way, to have joined the *French* before the Battle.

King *Edward* managed this Victory with as great Moderation, as he had shewed Conduct in the obtaining it: He first embraced the Prince his Son, and kissed him, saying, *Dear Son, God give you Grace to persevere as you have begun; you are my best Son, you have acquitted yourself nobly, and truly deserve the Crown for which we fought:* But the Prince made no Reply, only bowed almost to the Ground. Then the King rendered Thanks to God, whose Aid he had implored at the Beginning of the Battle; and commanded that none should

insult, or boast of their Success. Early the next Morning, being *Sunday*, he sent out five hundred Lances, and two thousand Archers on Horseback, to discover what became of the Enemy; who met great Troops of Soldiers coming from *Abbeville*, *St. Requier*, *Roan*, and *Beauvais* (ignorant of what had happened) whom they likewise defeated, and slew seven Thousand more: And had scarce recovered their Order again, before they were encountered by a more formidable Body, conducted by the Archbishop of *Roan* and the Grand Prior of *France*; who likewise were defeated by the Earls of *Arundel*, *Northampton*, and *Suffolk*; and both their Leaders, with most of their Men, were killed on the Spot. Our Writers also relate, that such Numbers of Stragglers which fled from the Battle, and lost their Way in the Fog the next Morning, were slain, as equalled those killed in the Fight. So great a Loss did *France* sustain by this fatal Battle; whereas this Victory was obtained with such prodigious Fortune, as neither the *French* nor *English* Historians (without mentioning the Number of the common Soldiers) take Notice of more than one Esquire to be killed before the Fight, and three Knights in Battle. And it is evident from the History of the Baronage of *England*, that not one of the *English* Nobility fell that Day; tho' most of them accompanied their King to the Battle, as appears from the same Authority.

The *French* Loss in this memorable Battle was irreparable; not so much as to the Number of the common Soldiers, tho' at least thirty Thousand lay dead in the Field of Battle, as in the entire



Ruin of the Flower of their Army, and the Slaughter of the prime Nobility and Gentry of *France* : There fell (besides the <sup>a</sup> two Kings of *Bohemia* and *Majorca*, the Duke of *Lorain*, Nephew to the *French* King ; *James*, Son of *Humbert*, Dauphin of *Viennois*, and *Lewis*, Earl of *Flanders* ; all Sovereign Princes) <sup>b</sup> *Carolo Grimaldi* and *Antonio Doria*, Commanders of the *Genoesse* ; the Earl of *Salemme* and the Lord *Moyne* of *Bastleberg* (both of the King of *Bohemia*'s Retinue) with seven other *German* Noblemen ; *Charles*, Earl of *Alencon*, King *Philip*'s Brother ; the Earls of *Blois*, *Vaudemont*, *Harcourt*, *Aumale*, *St. Paul*, *Auxerre*, and *Sancerre*, with several others of the *French* Nobility ; who were also accompanied in their Deaths, by twenty-four Bannerets, twelve hundred Knights, fifteen hundred Gentlemen and Men of Arms, and four thousand Esquires on Horseback.

The King of *Bohemia* was the Son of *Henry* of *Luxemburgh*, Emperor of *Germany* ; and a Soldier of great Reputation and Experience, tho' almost blind with old Age, and the Loss of one of his Eyes in his *Italian* Wars. Before the Engagement, being told the Posture of the *English* Army, he said (contrary to the confident Opinion of the *French*) *Then I see the English are resolved to die or conquer*. And, when he found how his Party was like to succeed, he, with a Resolution scarce to be paralleled, expressed himself after this Manner to the chief Commanders of his Forces :

“ Gentlemen,

<sup>a</sup> *Æn. Syl. Hist. of Bohemia*, c. 32. & *Knighton's Hist. Ed.* 3. p. 2630. *Froissart* and *Sleidan's Epit.* p. 193. *Mezeray, ad hunc An.*  
<sup>b</sup> *Gio. Villani's Hist.* c. 66. p. 879.

“ Gentlemen, you are my Men, my Compani-  
 “ ons and Friends in this Expedition ; I only now  
 “ desire this last Piece of Service from you, that  
 “ you would bring me forward so near to these  
 “ *Englishmen*, that I may deal among them one  
 “ good Stroke with my Sword.” They unani-  
 mously agreed to obey him, tho’ (as they said)  
 Death should be the Result of their Obedience.  
 And, that they might not by any Extremity be  
 separated, they fastened their Horses Bridles toge-  
 ther ; and, putting themselves in the first Rank of  
 their own Horsemen, courageously charged the  
 Prince of *Wales* ; but, engaging themselves too far,  
 were all slain, and the next Day found dead about  
 the Body of their King, with their Horses Bri-  
 dles tied together. Thus fell the noble King of  
*Bohemia*, leaving the Honour of his Death to  
 adorn the rising Laurels of the young Prince of  
*Wales*. His Arms were three Ostrich Feathers,  
 with this Motto, I C H D I E N, signifying  
*I serve* : And, his Standard being taken by the  
 Prince, he afterwards used the same Device ; which  
 has ever since been borne by the Princes of *Wales*  
 his Successors, eldest Sons of the Kings of *Eng-  
 land*.

Some Historians relate, that the *French* King  
 had determined to have made an End of the  
 War ; and therefore had brought into the Field  
 the great and hallowed Banner of *France*, called  
*Oriflambe*, believed by the *French* to have come  
 down from Heaven, and formerly only used in  
 the Wars against the *Infidels* ; signifying thereby  
 his Intention of putting all the *English* to the  
 C 2 Sword,

Sword, except the King and his Son the Prince of *Wales* : And that King *Edward*, being informed of this Resolution, erected his Banner called the *Burning Dragon*, for a Token that he designed as little Favour to the *French*. But, not to depend too much on this Relation, I rather incline to the Opinion of those who say, this severe Charge proceeded from the Disproportion between the Numbers of the *French* and *English*, whereby the latter would have been so much encumbered and disordered, if they had been allowed to break their Ranks and take Prisoners, as might have endangered the Loss of the Day. And King *Edward*, on this Occasion, acted with all the Precaution of a wise General, therein avoiding the Barbarity of putting Men to the Sword in cool Blood ; which one of his Successors, *Henry V*, was obliged to, after the Defeat of the *French* at the Battle of *Agincourt*, the Prisoners exceeding the Number of his own Army.

King *Philip* of *France* retired (as I said before) out of the Battle by Favour of the Night, with not above sixty Persons <sup>d</sup> in his Company, whereof only five were Barons : *John*, Lord *Beaumont*, in *Hainault*, the Lord *Charles Montmorency*, the Lord of *Beaujeu*, the Lord of *Aubigny*, and the Lord of *Montfort l'Amaury* ; besides the Archbishop of *Rheims*, the Bishop of *Amiens*, and the Chancellor of *France's* Son, all under the Standard of the young Prince *James*, Son of *Humbert* Dauphin of *Vienna*, who was himself slain in the Battle. The *French* so well allowed of this Flight

<sup>d</sup> *Frois. c. 130. Giov. Villani, l. 12. c. 66. p. 877.*

Flight of their King, that by Way of Commendation they called it *le Beau Retracte*.

Thus slightly attended, this unhappy Monarch rode out of the Field, till he came to the Castle of *Broye*, about two Leagues Northward from the Place of Battle, which he found shut up; and, calling for the Captain in Haste, he demanded, who it was that expected to be let in there in the Night? The King replied, *Open your Gates quickly, for I am the Fortune of France*; probably thinking at that Time of those Flatterers who had fir-named him *le Bien-Fortune*, or *the Fortunate King*, which Title he holds to this Day; tho', as *Mezeray* observes, he was then the *Unfortunate*. The Captain, finding it was the King, opened the Gate and let down the Bridge, where he was dutifully received; but after having drank, and taken some Refreshment, he departed before Day; and by the Help of his Guides reached *Amiens* the next Morning, not thinking himself secure in *Broye* so near his Enemy. At *Amiens* he blamed several of his Captains, and was so highly incensed at the Lord *Gondemar du Fay*, that, had he been in his Way, it had cost him his Head; for he said, *He believed he did not do his Duty truly in defending the Passage at Blanchetteaque, where the English went over the Somme*: But the Lord *John Beaumont*, to qualify the King's Displeasure, with much Reason said, *How could it lie in Gondemar's Power to resist the whole Puissance of the King of England, when a royal Army itself, and all the Flower of the Realm of France could not prevail against him*. This pertinent Expression pacified the King, who made



no longer Stay at *Amiens*, but returned to *Paris*.

From this Time the *French* began <sup>e</sup> to call *Edward*, the young Prince of *Wales*, *Le Neior*, or the *Black Prince*; <sup>h</sup> and in a Record, 2 R. 2. n. 12. he is called the *Black Prince*. King *Edward*, after the Battle, by Proclamation granted a Truce for three Days, that the Country People might be encouraged to search the Fields of *Cressy*, and bury their Dead. The Bodies of the Kings and great Princes he caused to be taken up decently, and conveyed with him in solemn Pomp to *Monstrevil*, where they were deposited in Holy Ground in the Great Abbey, the King himself and the great Lords wearing black at their Funerals: Particularly, for the Honour of *John*, the famous old King of *Bohemia*, whose Death was generally lamented; his Body the King sent to the Marquis his Son, then at the Abbey of *Riscampo*, whence it was honourably conveyed to *Luxemburgh*.

Whilst the King lay at *Monstrevil*, his Parties wasted and burnt *Campaigne* and *Beauraine*; and, in the March of the Army towards *Bologne*, <sup>i</sup> took *St. Josse*, *Estaples*, *Neufchastel*, and *St. Estienne*; and burnt and wasted all the Country for about eight Leagues, as also the Suburbs of *Bologne*. On the *Thursday* <sup>k</sup> before the last of *August* (others say <sup>l</sup> the Seventh of *September*) the King and the Prince of *Wales* laid Siege to the strong Town of *Calais*, which had always been a great Nuisance to *England*; it was then almost impregnable, but, the King having given such a Blow to *France*, he  
knew,

<sup>e</sup> *Froissart*, c. 131.    <sup>h</sup> MS. Rot. Parl. ad Ann. præd. p. 171.  
Cotton's Records, p. 160.    <sup>i</sup> *Froissart* and *Knighton*, 2588, and  
*Du Chesne*, p. 665.    <sup>k</sup> *Du Chesne*.    <sup>l</sup> *Knighton*, p. 2588.

knew, if he was not able to reduce them by Force; he might overcome them by Famine. At the Instant of investing the Town by Land, a mighty Navy blocked it up by Sea, <sup>m</sup> said to consist of seven hundred and thirty-eight Ships, and fourteen thousand nine hundred and fifty-six Mariners; so that, the Sea being open, he had in his Camp whatever might serve either for Use or Pleasure.

In the Beginning of the Year 1347, 21 *Ed.* iii. the King sent the Prince of *Wales* into *England* for Supplies; and I find by the Date<sup>n</sup> of an Instrument of his to Sir *Henry Eam* (who was afterwards one of the Knights of the Garter at the first Institution) that he was on the Eighteenth Day of *January* at *Westminster*. The Original in *French* is in Mr. *Asbmole's* History of the Order of the Garter; and, as it shews his Bounty to a valiant Servant, I take Leave to insert it in *English*:

“ *Edward*, eldest Son of the noble King of  
 “ *England* and of *France*, Prince of *Wales*,  
 “ Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earl of *Chester*, to all,  
 “ who shall see or hear these Letters, Greeting:  
 “ Know, that whereas our thrice-dear and well-  
 “ beloved Sir *Henry Eam*, from the Time that he  
 “ hath taken at our Hands the Order of Knight-  
 “ hood, hath offered and promised of his Free-will  
 “ to be intending to our Service, during his Life, and,  
 “ while we shall sufficiently furnish him with Arms,  
 “ to go along with us to what Part we shall please,  
 “ as well in Peace as in War; and to bear Arms  
 “ with us at our Pleasure, against all Men, except  
 “ the Duke of *Brabant*, his Liege Lord, in De-  
 C 4 “ fence

<sup>m</sup> *Hackluit's Voyages*, vol. 1. p. 119, and *Froissart*.    <sup>n</sup> *Asbmole*, p. 707.

“ fence of his own Lands: We accepting of this  
 “ his Offer and Promise, and being willing to  
 “ retain him in our Service, and (that he may be  
 “ the more obliged to serve us before any other)  
 “ to bear such a Regard unto him, whereby  
 “ he may the better maintain his Estate, have gi-  
 “ ven unto him the annual Rent of one Hundred  
 “ Marks, duringhis Life, to be received out of our  
 “ Mannor of *Bradenash*, in the County of *Devon-*  
 “ *shire*, every Year at the Terms of *Easter* and  
 “ *St. Michael*, by equal Portions, of the Hands of  
 “ the Keepers of the said Mannor for the Time  
 “ being, the Offer and Promise aforesaid being in  
 “ all Points held and kept. And We will also,  
 “ that at what Time, and as often, as his said  
 “ Payment shall be upon Arrear, in Part, or in  
 “ Whole, without Term assigned, it shall be law-  
 “ ful for the said Sir *Henry* to distrain on the  
 “ said Mannor, and to have what is so distrained,  
 “ until he shall be paid so much as shall be found  
 “ due unto him upon Arrear, as aforesaid. In  
 “ Witness whereof We have made these our Let-  
 “ ters Patent: Given under our Seal at *Westmin-*  
 “ *ster* the Eighteenth Day of *January*, in the  
 “ Year of the Reign of our most dear Lord and  
 “ and Father the King over *England* the Twen-  
 “ ty-first, and over *France* the Eighth.” And  
 King *Edward* reciting these Letters Patent, ° of his  
 most dear, most well-beloved, and most trusty  
 Son, *Edward*, Prince of *Wales*, &c. as he stiles  
 him, confirms the said Grant, the Twenty-eighth  
 of *June*, in the Twenty-third Year of his Reign.  
 He returned again to the Siege of *Calais*, and  
 was

was with the King his Father at the Surrender thereof, after it had endured a Siege of eleven Months within three Days ; viz. from the Seventh of *September*, 1346, to the Fourth of *August*, 1347. And it is no less remarkable of the generous Prince of *Wales*, that when six of the most substantial of the Inhabitants of *Calais* had (as they were obliged) to save the rest, came with their Governour to deliver the Keys of the Town and Castle, bare-headed, and bare-legged, in their Shirts, and Halters about their Necks, offering themselves to the King's Mercy ; saying, *O most gracious Prince, behold here six poor Wretches, who were lately considerable Merchants, and the most substantial Citizens of Calais ; and now, together with the Keys both of Town and Castle, do all entirely submit our Bodies to your Will and Pleasure, thereby to save the Lives of the rest of the People of Calais, who, poor Souls, have already suffered incredible Miseries : Only we beseech your royal Majesty, of your great Clemency, to have Compassion on us.* The King looked angry at them, as greatly incensed at their extreme Obstinacy in holding out so long against him, and on the Account of the great Damages they had done his People at Sea ; so that he commanded their Heads to be stricken off immediately. Whereupon the Prince of *Wales* interceded for them, as did all the Lords then present, but he was not to be moved ; saying, *The Men of Calais have been the Occasion of the Death of many of my Subjects ; wherefore now these Fellows shall die also, tho' too small a Sacrifice for the Ghosts of so many.* At this the Prince himself (as Sir *John Froissart* observes) durst not speak any further : But then the  
Queen,



Queen, <sup>p</sup> who sat ruefully looking on, rose hastily from her Seat, tho' then big with Child, and kneeling down, with many Tears, said to him, *O my gracious Lord and Husband, since I have passed the Sea in great Danger to visit you, I have not yet made any Request unto you: But now I humbly and heartily require you, in Honour of the Son of the blessed Virgin Mary, and for the Love of me, that you would be merciful to these poor Men.* The King, looking relenting on her, raised her from the Ground, saying, *Ab Madam! I would you had been somewhere else at this Time; for you have so tenderly conjured me by the Honour I ought to bear to my Redeemer, and by the Love I must always have for you, that I am not able to deny your Request: Wherefore now, Lady, I resign them to your Hands, to do with them as you shall think best.* On which the Queen ordered them to be brought into a private Apartment in her Tent, where the Halters were taken off their Necks, and new Cloaths brought them: She also ordered them their Dinner, and six Nobles a-piece, and then caused them to be conveyed to the Castle of *Guimes*, and set at Liberty.

The King staid at *Calais* more than a Month, and the Prince of *Wales*, during that Time, march'd with a strong Detachment of the Army <sup>a</sup>about thirty Leagues into the Realm of *France*, even to the River *Somme*; where having fired and ravaged the Country round about, he returned safe to *Calais* with much Prey and Booty. Whilst King *Edward* was busied in settling his Affairs at *Calais*, and repairing and adding to the Fortifications, there came

<sup>p</sup> *Froissart, Du Cbesne, and Mezeray.*

<sup>a</sup> *Knighton, p. 2595.*

came ' to him Guy Bishop of *Bologne*, and Cardinal by the Title of *Sancti Cæcilii*, sent as Legate from the Pope to join with two other Cardinals in *France*, in Order to make a Reconciliation between the two Kings. He had been first with the *French King* at *Amiens*, and labour'd so successfully, that he presently obtained a Truce to be agreed on from the Fifth of *September* to the Thirteenth; which, being prolong'd to the Twenty-eighth of the said Month, was then ' fully ratified to endure between both Kings, their Subjects, &c. 'till the Eighth of *July* following: Which was afterwards pieced up from Time to Time, 'till the Year 1355, in the Twenty-ninth of King, *Edward*. As soon as the Truce was first settled he took the Sea, with his Queen and the Prince of *Wales*, for *England*; but, meeting with a dreadful Tempest, he thus expostulated: " *St. Mary my blessed Lady, what should be the Meaning of this, that, always in my Passage for France, the Wind and Seas befriend me; but, in my Return for England, I meet with nothing but adverse Storms and destructive Tempests?* At last with much Difficulty, and the Loss of many Vessels, Men, and Horses, he safely landed on the Fourteenth of *October*; and, in *London*, the Mayor and Citizens received him and the Prince in great Triumph, and honourably attended them to the Royal Palace at *Westminster*. And, before the King entered into the Twenty-second Year of his Reign, his Fame had reached all Parts of the known World,

<sup>r</sup> *Froissart*.

<sup>s</sup> *Du Chesne*, p. 663.

<sup>t</sup> *Askmole*, p. 671.

<sup>u</sup> *Walsing.* p. 158. and MS. vet. Ang. in Bibl. C. C. C. Cantab. cap. 226.

World, so that he was justly reputed the <sup>w</sup> most prudent, just, and valiant Monarch in *Christendom*; which induced the Electors of the Empire to choose him Emperor of *Germany*. <sup>x</sup> And they sent to him, from *Cologne* where they assembled, the Marquiss of *Juliers*, an Earl, and two Doctors, to signify to him, that with one Voice they had elected him to the Dignity of the Empire, and to prevail with him to accept of it. Whereupon, the King sent the Earl of *Northampton* into *Germany*, to enquire into the Affairs of the Empire, while the Marquiss of *Juliers* <sup>y</sup> and the other Ambassadors staid in *London*, anxiously expecting the King's Resolution. But, on the Earl's Return, it appeared, that accepting of the Empire was like to hinder him from prosecuting his Right to *France*, and take up a fresh Quarrel with the King of *Bohemia's* Son, whom the Pope espoused for Emperor; and it was <sup>z</sup> manifest at that Time, the Emperors were subject to the Pope of *Rome*, which King *Edward* resolv'd never to be; for these and other Reasons, he told the Ambassadors, *He would not take on him so great a Burthen, 'till he had got the Crown of France, which was due to him, in peaceable Possession.* And in the Spring he <sup>a</sup> sent Sir *Hugh Nevile* and *Ivo de Glynton* to the Princes Electors, with a full Declaration of his Intentions, and a formal Refusal of that imperial Dignity. Whereupon proceeding to another Election, some chose *Frederick* Marquiss of *Misnia*, and others *Gunter* Earl of *Negremont*; but the one being bribed off, and the other dis-

<sup>w</sup> *Knight*. p. 2596. <sup>x</sup> *Assem.* p. 656. and *Stow*, p. 245. and *Knight*. p. 2597 <sup>y</sup> *Knighton*, ib. <sup>z</sup> *Cooper's Hist.* <sup>a</sup> *Asmole*, p. 656.

dispatched by Poison, King *Charles* of *Bohemia*, the Pope's Creature, prevailed, and was Emperor by the Name of *Charles* the Fourth.

During this Time of Peace, the Nobles took great Delight in Jufts and Tournaments; and the Prince of *Wales*, who was held in high Respect for his Worth and Valour, distinguished himself in the Exercise of those *knighly* Sports. But it was not long before he was again called out to Action, by the *French*, who by Treachery design'd to surprize *Calais*; and, as the Prince bore a principal Part in their Defeat, it will be proper to give a short Account of the Affair. On the Surrender of *Calais*, the King gave the Government of that Town to Sir *Emeric* of *Pavia*, a *Lombard*; and this Man the Lord *Geoffry de Charney* (who was at *St. Omers*, and the King of *France's* Lieutenant, to keep the Frontiers in those Parts) corrupted in Time of Truce, for twenty Thousand Crowns of Gold, to deliver to him the Castle. This was discover'd to King *Edward*, according to *Froissart*, by one of the Secretaries of Sir *Emeric*; but the *French* Writers agree that he revealed it himself, tho' he had not only agreed to take their Money, but had bound himself by taking the Sacrament for the Performance; and therefore, *Mezeray* says, that, being some Time after taken by the *French*, he was by them flea'd alive. *Froissart*<sup>c</sup> relates, that, King *Edward* being inform'd of this intended Treachery of the *French*, he immediately sent for *Emeric* the *Lombard*, to come to him, and he accordingly went; for he thought it impossible his private Treason could be discovered. When the  
King

<sup>b</sup> *Asbmole*, p. 669.

<sup>c</sup> *Cap.* 150.



King saw him, he took him into his Closet, and said : *You know well Sir, that I have entrusted to your Charge that Thing, which in this World I love best, next my Wife and Children; that is to say, the Castle of Calais, whereby the Town also is commanded. And yet this Castle have you traiterously sold to the French : Wherefore, what can you say now, why you should not suffer a shameful Death ?* Then the Lombard fell on his Knees and said : “ Ah my  
 “ gracious Master ! I humbly crave your Mercy.  
 “ What you say, I acknowledge, is all true ; but,  
 “ Sir, the Bargain may be easily broken, for, as yet,  
 “ I have not receiv'd one Penny of the Money.”  
 The King, who long had a great Favour for him, thinking he might be of Use in frustrating the Design, said : *Emeric, I give you your Life, and continue you in your Office, in Trust of your Amendment : And I would also have you go on with your Bargain, and get as much Money of my Enemies as you can : But let me have true Information of the Day and Hour appointed for the Delivery of the Castle, and let no Soul know of this our Communication ; and, on this Condition, I forgive you your Trespas.* According to this Agreement, the Lombard returned to Calais, resolving to be true to so indulgent a Master, and to put a Trick upon those, who had thus attempted to debauch his Loyalty.

The Time of the Delivery of the Castle of Calais was fix'd on the last Night of *December*, or the first Morning of the new Year, of which the Lombard, by a Brother of his, sent Notice to King Edward, who was then at <sup>d</sup> *Havering*, at the Bower

<sup>d</sup> *Hollinshed's Chron. p. 944.*

Bower in *Essex*, keeping his *Christmas*. Whereupon he chose privately a select Body of eight Thousand Men of Arms, and one Thousand Archers, and, taking Ship at *Dover*, arrived that Evening at *Calais* so secretly, that none but his Friends knew of it; and immediately dispos'd of his Men in Ambush in the Dungeon, and other Places in the Castle. And then told the Lord *Walter Manny*, *He had a Mind to grace him with the Honour of the Enterprize, for both he and his Son the Prince intended to fight under his Banner.*

The Lord *Geoffry Charney* had furnished himself with a Thousand choice Men of Arms, and others, to the Number of twenty Thousand; and, on the last of *December*, came near *Calais*, about Eight of the Clock at Night, and then halted; and set his Men in Order of Battle. About Twelve, he sent two Esquires to the Postern Gate of the Castle, who, finding Sir *Emeric of Parva* ready there to receive them, demanded of him, if it was Time for the Lord *Charney* to come; and he said: *Yes, high Time.* On this Answer, returning to their Master, he passed *Newland-Bridge*, in Order of Battle; and sent twelve Knights with an Hundred Men of Arms, to take Possession of the Castle; also, by Sir *Edward Renty* their Commander, twenty Thousand Crowns of Gold in a Bag for Sir *Emeric*, who receiv'd it of him at the Postern, saying: *I hope here is the full Sum, tho' I am not at Leisure to count it now:* And thereupon cast it into a Chest, saying to the *French*: *Come on, Messieurs, you shall first*

\* *Mezeray*, p. 31. and *Froissart*, c. 151. † *Mezeray*, p. 32.

*first seize on the Dungeon, and then you are sure to be Masters of the Castle.* On their Approach he drew the Bars aside, and open'd the Gate for their Entrance. Within this Part of the Tower was King *Edward* with the Prince his Son, and two Hundred Men of Arms, who at that Instant sallied out upon the *French* with their Swords and Battle-Axes, crying, *A Manny, a Manny, to the Rescue: What, do the Frenchmen imagine with so few Men to take the Castle of Calais?* On which sudden Surprise, and seeing themselves out-numbered, they yielded themselves Prisoners, and were immediately disarmed, and carried to the same Dungeon. After which, the King and Prince, with the *English*, mounted on Horseback, and issued out of the Castle into the Town, to the Gate that look'd towards *Bologne*. There the Lord *Charney* stood with his Banner, desirous of being the first that should enter; and, the King having ordered the Gate to be open'd, he with the Prince his Son Incognito, under the Banner of the Lord *Manny*, with *Robert Ufford*, Earl of *Suffolk*; *Ralph*, Earl of *Stafford*; the Lord *John Montague*, Brother to *William* Earl of *Salisbury*; the Lord *John Beauchamp*, Brother to *Thomas* Earl of *Warwick*; the Lord *Roger de la Ware*; the Lord *Thomas Berkley*, and the Lord *William Ross* the younger, (who all bore Banners in this Exploit) with their Men, issued forth in Order of Battle, crying: *A Manny, a Manny, to the Rescue.* The Lord *Charney* with his Men were on this in some Confusion, finding the *Lombard* had betray'd them; but, like a wise and valiant General, he said aloud: " Messieurs, if we turn our Backs, we are all  
lost

"lost without Remedy: 'Tis more safe to expect our Enemies with a good Courage, and then we shall obtain the Day." The Front of the *English*, hearing these Words, answer'd: By *St. George, you say well! A Shame on them that turn their Backs first.* Then the *French*, lighting off their Horses, prepar'd to fight on Foot; which King *Edward* seeing, he said to the Lord *Manny*: *Let us also get on Foot, for the Enemy I see will expect us.* And hearing a good Body of the *French* were just sent to *Newland-Bridge*, to make good the Retreat of a considerable Party, left there at first by the Lord *Charney*, the King ordered six Banners of *England*, and three Hundred Archers on Horseback to encounter them; who, finding the Lord *Moreaux de Fiennes*, and the Lord *de Crequi*, and others ready to keep the Bridge, there began a fierce Engagement; and, the *English* piercing through their Ranks, more than six Hundred *French* were slain, drowned, or stifled, being easily beaten away, and chased into the Water on each Hand. This was early in the Morning before Day-break, when, all Things being render'd uncertain, those who are set upon are usually the most fearful. The *French* being beat from the Bridge, those, who had Horses by, mounted and shewed their Backs; and among them the Lord of *Fiennes*, the Lord of *Crequi*, and the Lord *Doudeaurville*. The *English* followed them on the Spur, slaying and taking those who could not recover their Horses.

But at *Bologne Gate* was the main Stress of the Fight, the *French* \* under the Lord *Charney*, and the

D

the

\* *Froissart*, c. 151. fol. 74.



the Lord *Charles* of *Montmorency*, behaving themselves with great Bravery, putting the *English* hard to it; the King himself and the Prince his Son, with the Strength of the Garrison and the Flower of those brought from *England*, were engaged against them. Some will have it <sup>h</sup> that, when the Enemy fled, King *Edward*, eager of Honour, followed only by sixteen Men of Arms and about one Hundred Archers on Horseback, pursued them. And when he saw the Resolution of his Enemies, who, perceiving how few was with him, turned back to renew the Fight, he as resolutely cast away the Scabbard of his Sword; and, placing his Archers on the dry Hills encompassed with Quagmires and Marshes, to preserve them from the Fury of the Horse, he then lifted up the Visor of his Helmet to shew himself to his Men, saying: *Do well, you Archers, play the Men lustily, and know that I am Edward of Windsor.* Being animated by the Example and Presence of their King, as also by Honour and Necessity itself, they stripped up their Sleeves to their Shoulders to have the more Liberty for Action, and that none of them might fail of due Execution. The King, as *Walsingham* writes, did Marvels, raging like a wild Boar, and crying out for Indignation (as his usual Manner was) *Ha St. Edward, Ha St. George*, till at last the Prince of *Wales* came opportunely to his Rescue, and put the *French* to Flight.

But it's hardly credible, that the King, famed for Wisdom and Conduct, would suffer himself to be drawn away so slightly attended. I am rather

<sup>h</sup> *Walsingh. Hist.* p. 159. and *Stow*, p. 249.

ther of Opinion that *Froissart* is more right, who says the King fought on Foot among his Enemies, unknown both to them and most of his Men; and that a strong Knight of *France*, named *Eustace de Ribemont*, encountered him Hand to Hand.

The Lord *Jeffry Charney*,<sup>i</sup> being grievously wounded, was taken, as also his Son; and the Lord *Montmorency* very narrowly escaped with the Lord of *Landas* and others, Sir *Pepin de la Gueret*, Sir *Henry de Bois*, Sir *Walter de<sup>k</sup> Valence*, and Sir *Robert Beauvais*, with many more: So that almost the whole Party which engaged, consisting of three Thousand Men, were cut off or taken.

After this Victory, which was happily compleated on the First Day of *January*, by Ten in the Morning, King *Edward* returned with the Prince to the Castle of *Calais*; and, commanding all the Prisoners to be brought before him, he most courteously told them he would that Night give them all an Entertainment in his Castle of *Calais*; and then the *French*<sup>m</sup> first knew the King had been personally in this Exploit, tho' disguised in common Armour. The Tables were spread in the great Hall against Supper, and a magnificent and royal Feast was provided, and the *French* were there, as the King had ordered; they had all shifted themselves, and were richly cloathed. The King sat at a Table by himself at the upper End of the Hall, the Prince, his Son, and the Lords and Knights of *England* serving at the first Course; but, at the second, they also sat down on each Side of the King; the *French*

D 2

Lords

<sup>i</sup> *Stow*, p. 249.<sup>k</sup> *Fabian's Chron.* p. 226.<sup>m</sup> *Stow*, præd.<sup>n</sup> *Froissart*, c. 152.

Lords and Captains being all at one long Table in the Middle of the Hall. After Supper the King continuèd still in the Hall among his Nobles, and, the *French* having Wine brought them, he went to discourse with them. He had about his Head a rich Circlet of Gold, beset with precious Pearl; and, when he came to the Lord *Jeffry Charney*, he beheld him with some Signs of Displeasure, and said, *Sir Jeffry, of Right I should owe you but small Thanks, since you designed to steal from me, in the Dark, that which I so fairly won by Day, and which cost me so dearly. I am very well satisfied I took you in the Fact, for surely you thought to make a better Bargain, when you attempted to purchase Calais for twenty Thousand Crowns: But God Almighty hath in Mercy assisted me, and you have missed your Aim.* Both Shame and evil Conscience did not suffer him to say a Word, or, his Wounds being fresh, he was not disposed to speak; so the King left him, and went to the Lord *Eustace de Ribemont*, where he made a Stand, and with a friendly Countenance said to him, *Sir Eustace, of all Men living you are the Knight whom I have found most, as well in offending your Enemies, as in defending yourself; and I never in my Life met with that Man, that gave me so much a-doe, Body to Body, as you have done this Day: Wherefore, I adjudge the Prize of Knighthood unto you, by right Sentence, above all the Knights of my Court.* And then the King took off the Chaplet of Pearls he wore on his Head, and, presenting it to him, said, *Sir Eustace, I give you this Chaplet for the best Doer in Arms, at this last Battle, of either Party, whether French or English; and I desire you to wear it this Year at Festivals*  
†
for

for my Sake. I know well, you are a personable Gentleman, young and amorous, and well accepted of among the Ladies : Wherefore, if you will wear it in all publick Balls, and declare unto them that the King of England gave this as a Testimony of your Valour, I will also now release you from Prison, quitting you wholly of your Ransom, and you shall depart To-morrow, if you please. Such was the generous Heart of King Edward, but, how gratefully Sir Eustace expressed himself, is not delivered to us by any of our Historians : They only tell us, he was extremely pleased with his Fortune to fight Hand to Hand with so great a King, and to receive from him such an honourable Acknowledgement ; and, that he not only wore the said Chaplets, while he lived, but, in Memory of so royal a Gift from so mighty a Prince, did ever after bear <sup>n</sup> in his Arms three Chaplets garnished with Pearls.

Thus was this Treason of the French, in Time of Truce, justly thrown on their own Heads ; but so enraged was the French King at the Disappointment, that having taken Sir Emeric de Pavia the Year after about St. Omers (which was also in Time of Truce) ° he was by his Order first degraded of Knighthood by having his Spurs hewed from his Heels, then branded with a hot Iron for a Rogue, and then, his Tongue being cut out in Token of his Perjury, he was hanged by the Neck ; and lastly, he was beheaded, quartered, and dismembered as a Traitor. It is certain King Edward had never any Confidence in his Loyalty ;

D 3

for,

<sup>n</sup> Ferne's Blazon of Gentry, p. 211. ° Mezeray, ad An. 1350, and Stow, p. 249.



for, on that Day he rescued *Calais*, viz. *January* the First, he <sup>p</sup> appointed Sir *John Beauchamp* Captain of *Calais*, and soon after with the Prince safely arrived in *England*.

In 23. *Ed. 3.* at the Institution of the most noble Order of the Garter, the Prince of *Wales* was <sup>a</sup> the first Knight of those illustrious Companions; and, being Times of Peace, I find no further Mention of him, till the Year after, on the following Occasion: In the Beginning of the Summer 1350, 24 *Ed. 3.* <sup>r</sup> some Variance happening between the Fleets of *England* and *Spain*, the *Spaniards*, fomented by *French* Arts, infested the *British* Seas with forty-four large Men of War; and, encountering with ten *English* Merchant Ships laden with Wine from *Gascoigne*, sunk, or took them all, and carried them into the Haven of *Seluse* in *Flanders*: Also, did other Mischief on the Coasts of *England* and *Aquitain*, by firing our Ships at Anchor, robbing and killing our Merchants, &c. King *Edward* was so much concerned at this Breach of Honour in the *Spaniards*, that he sent immediately into *Flanders*, not to allow any Harbour or Assistance to them, and resolved to chastise their Insolences in Person. Whereupon, having furnished a Fleet of fifty good Ships and Pinaces, he went on Board at *Sandwich*, with his eldest Son *Edward*, Prince of *Wales*, then in the twentieth Year of his Age, the Earls of *Lancaster*, *Northampton*, *Warwick*, *Salisbury*, *Arundel*, *Huntington*, *Gloucester*, and other Lords and Knights, with

<sup>p</sup> Rot. Franc. 22. *Ed. 3.* m. 1    <sup>a</sup> *Assmole*, p. 670.    <sup>r</sup> *Math. Villani*, c. 99. *Walsingh.* Hist. p. 160. *Knigton*, p. 2602. *Fabian*, p. 228. *Holliefo.* 945, and *Stow*, p. 250.

with their several Retinues, designed to make Repairs on the *Spaniards*, by attacking their Armada, returning with Wares from *Flanders*. On Monday the Twenty-ninth of *August*, the King meeting with them about *Rye* in *Sussex*, a fierce Engagement immediately began between the two Fleets. The *Spaniards*, in their huge Carracks, overlooking the *English* Vessels, attacked them with a Storm of Cross-bow Shot, Stones, Timber, and Bars of Iron, which wounded several of our Men. But the Archers of *England* pierced their Arbalisters with a further Reach than they could strike again, and so compelled them to appear more rarely on the Decks; obliging also, at the same Time, those who fought on the Hatches, to cover themselves with Planks and Tables; and likewise, fetched down, with their Arrows, such as threw Stones from the Tops of their Ships: And then, after a long and doubtful Fight, the *English* Men of Arms, with great Courage, boarded the *Spanish* Ships, with Swords, Lances, and Battle-Axes in their Hands; slaying, and throwing over-board, all who made Resistance; taking seventeen of their Ships before Night came on, which put an End to the Fight. The next Morning, the *English*, intending to renew the Engagement, found, that twenty-seven *Spanish* Ships had escaped by Favour of the Night; but no less than seventeen (or, as others say, <sup>s</sup> twenty-two) were left to the Discretion of King *Edward*. On our Side, only Sir *John Goldeſborough* was killed (of any Distinction) who was much lamented by the Prince of *Wales*, who had a great Value for him, on Account of his extraordinary

traordinary Qualities, and almost equal Age, and Conformity of Will and Inclination. King *Edward*, to repair his Loss, advanced no less than fourscore young Gentlemen, who performed well in the Fight, to the Honour of Knighthood.

On the King and the Prince's Return, a very remarkable Combat was tried before them. In those Days there was a War between the Soldan of *Babylon* and *Constantine*, King of *Armenia*; who, having to his Assistance the *Cypriotes* and *Rhodians*, endeavoured to repel the *Heathens*, who had invaded his Country. Among the several famous Men, who, with the *Christian* Princes, were engaged in this Holy War, *Hugh*, the valiant King of *Cyprus*, was most notable; and he had with him a Knight named *John de Vesconti*, who was of his Blood, and had a considerable Command in the *Christian* Army; as had also a Knight of *France*, *Thomas de la Marche*, Bastard Brother to *John de Valois* the *French* King. These two being at some Variance, *John de Vesconti* charged the Bastard of *France*, with having taken a Sum of Gold secretly, to betray the *Christian* Army to the *Turks*: The Defendant strenuously denied the Charge, which the Appellant as eagerly urged; and there being no other Proof on either Side, only their single Asseverations, the *Christian* Captains, fearing either to displease the King of *Cyprus*, or the King of *France*, to whom they were allied; or, doubting some Dissention might happen among themselves by taking Part on either Side, made them both swear to stand to their Award. The Judgment was, that they should carry Letters, im-  
porting

porting their Cause fully and clearly, from the said *Christian* Princes, to King *Edward* of *England*; and, to submit themselves to be tried by Combat before him, as the most worthy and honourable Prince in *Christendom*; and, to swear to live in Friendship till that Time.

Accordingly these Knights came into *England* in the Beginning of *September*, and presented their Letters to King *Edward*, in the Names of the Kings of *Armenia* and *Cyprus*, and the rest of the Princes and Captains of the *Christians*, containing the whole Difference between them; and, that they were to determine the Matter by Combat before him, as their Judge. And thereupon Sir *John de Vesconti*, openly before the King, accused Sir *Thomas de la Marche* of the treasonable Intent and Purpose as aforesaid, challenging to prove it upon his Body; and flung down his Gauntlet, which Sir *Thomas* as boldly took up, and accepted the Challenge in Proof of his Innocency. King *Edward*, seriously considering the whole Affair, appointed the Fourteenth of *October*, being the *Monday* after *St. Michael*, to decide their Quarrel in close Field, within the Lists, at his Palace at *Westminster*. On that Day they came armed at all Points on Horseback, the King, the Prince of *Wales*, and the whole Court of *England* being Spectators: On Sound of Trumpet the Combat began; at the Tilt both their Spears broke on each other's Shield, without either of them being moved from their Saddles; wherefore, they both alighted at one Instant, and renewed the Combat on Foot, till, having with equal Valour and Conduct fought a considerable Time, both  
their



their Weapons were rendered useleſs ; and coming to cloſe Grapple, wreſtling for Victory, both fell lock'd together. The Viſors of both their Hel-mets were defended with ſmall diſtant Bars of Steel, thro' which they might ſee and breathe more freely, all the reſt of their Bodies being covered with Armour ; and riſing together, Sir *Thomas de la Marche* got the Advantage of his Antagoniſt, by having ſharp Pricks of Steel, called *Gadlings*, incloſed in the Joints of his right Gauntlet, and therewith ſtruck at the Viſor of Sir *John de Veſconti* (who had no *Gadlings* in his Gauntlets) as often as he could come at him, and grievouſly hurt him in the Face ; ſo that, being unprovided of the like *Gadlings*, he cried out aloud, *He could not help himſelf* : At that, King *Edward* threw down his *Wardour*, and the Maſhal cried *Ho*, and the Combat ceaſed ; the King adjudging the Victory to the *Frenchman*, and the Vanquiſhed to be at his Mercy, according to the Law of Arms. Sir *Thomas de la Marche*, ſatiſfied with ſo plain and honourable a Proof of his Innocency, before ſo great a Preſence, forbore to uſe his Power over his Enemy ; but made a Preſent of him to the Prince of *Wales*, to uſe at his Diſcretion. After which, he dedicated his own Suit of Armour to the *Engliſh* Patron *St. George*, with great Devotion, in the Cathedral Church of *St. Paul* at *London*. As for Sir *John de Veſconti*, the generous Prince of *Wales*, for the Sake of the King of *Cyprus*, gave him his full Liberty, and let him go at his Leiſure.

In 1353, 27 *Ed.* 3. the *Cheſhire* Men <sup>u</sup> having committed ſome great Inſolence or Riot againſt the

<sup>u</sup> *Knighton*, p. 2696, and *Dugdale's Baronage*, vol. 1. p. 161.

the Servants of the Prince of *Wales*, which were Officers under him, as Earl of *Chester* (on what Occasion is not said) the King was much incensed against them, and, resolving to make them submit to the Law or the Sword, sent Sir *Richard de Willoughby* and Sir *William Sharesbull* his Justices Itinerant, to sit in *Eyre* at *Chester*. And, at the same Time, order'd sufficient Forces under the Leading of his Son the Prince of *Wales*, attended by *Henry* Duke of *Lancaster*, and the Earls of *Warwick* and *Stafford*, to go thither to prevent any Violence or Insurrection. But the *Cheeshire* Men, knowing themselves in Fault, compounded with the Prince of *Wales* their Lord, for five Thousand and sixty Marks, to be paid within four Years; and gave such Security as the Prince himself desired, on Condition, that the Justices should no longer continue their Circuit of *Eyre* on them. After which, the Prince on his Return passing thro' the Abbey of *Vale Royal*, and seeing there the Structure of the Fabrick of a Church, began by the good King *Edward* his great Grandfather, he gave, of his princely good Will, five Hundred Marks toward the Promotion of the said pious Work, which was esteemed a Tenth of his whole Perquisites in *Cheeshire*.

The Truce which was agreed on at *Calais*, between *England* and *France*, was spun by several Prorogations, without effecting any Thing of Peace, 'till *An. 29 Ed. 3.* in which Year both Nations provided for War. Thereupon King *Edward* constituted his Son, the Prince of *Wales*, his Lieutenant in the Dukedom of *Aquitain*,<sup>w</sup> and other Places in *France* whither he should happen to march,  
both

<sup>w</sup> Rot. Vasc. 29 E. 3. m. 6.

both for the Reformation of the State of that Dukedom, and other Places in *France*, and the Recovery of his Lands and Right possess'd by the Rebels. And, by another Commission of the same Date, \* he gave him Power to make Alliances with all Persons, of what *Nation*, *Dignity*, or *Condition* soever; as also to retain Men, and pay them Wages and Rewards. A third Commission <sup>y</sup> gave him Power (in the King's Stead and Name) to receive *Homage* and *Fidelity* from the Nobility and others within the said Dukedom, and Realm of *France*.

For his Passage thither, the King assigned \* *Richard de Cortenkale* and *Robert Bauldron* Serjeants at Arms. to arrest, array, and equip all the Ships and Vessels of twenty Tun and upwards, in all Ports and Places from the River of *Thames* unto *Lynn*, as well within Liberties as without; to furnish them with Men and other Neecessaries, and to bring them to *Southampton* by *St. Barnaby's Day* at the furthest; as also, to press Mariners for the Voyage at the King's Wages. And also, by another Commission dated *May Twenty-seven*, <sup>a</sup> *Thomas de Hoggeshaw*, Lieutenant to *John de Beauchamp* Admiral of the Sea Westward, was ordered to carry him over, with Power to hear and determine all Crimes committed on Shipboard, and to punish them according to Maritime Law, and to do all other Things appertaining to the Office of Admiral. About that Time, <sup>b</sup> there was seen a Prodigy in the Air, which was construed to portend Victory to the *English*, there appearing  
two

\* Rot. *Vasc.* 29. E. 3. m. 6.  
*Franc.* 29 E. 3. m. 12.

<sup>a</sup> Ibid.

<sup>y</sup> Ibid. m. 4.

<sup>b</sup> *Knighton*, p. 2603.

<sup>z</sup> Rot.

two great Banners in the Firmament, the one *Gules*, the other *Azure*, seeming to combat, and to rush violently against each other; but, in the End, the Banner *Gules* overcame the *Azure*, and seemed to lay it prostrate on the Ground.

The Earls of *Warwick*, *Oxford*, *Salisbury*, and *Suffolk*<sup>c</sup> were appointed to attend the Prince of *Wales*; and, when the necessary Preparations were made for his Voyage, he set Sail from <sup>a</sup> *Seton* Haven in *Devonshire*, in the Beginning of *October*. Sir *Thomas de la More* and Sir *John Wingfield*, who were in the Prince's Army, having given particular Journals of his Expedition, the one printed in *Stow's Chronicle*, p. 256, and the other in *Hollingshed*, p. 384, 385, I shall give a brief Relation of the most material Passages. The Prince had a fair Gale of Wind which brought him safe into *Bordeaux*, where he was honourably received by the Bishop and Clergy, and accompanied with all the common People on the first *Sunday* in the Month. The next Day he marched out, and, passing by several Towns, came to the City of *Besars* on *Thursday*; and the Day after caus'd Proclamation to be made in his Army, that every one should bear the Arms of *St. George*. On mustering his Forces within two Miles of the Town of *Aurule*, he displayed his Banners, and committed the Vanguard, consisting of three Thousand Men of Arms, to the Earl of *Warwick* High Constable, *Reginald Lord Cobham* Lord Marshal, the Lord *Beauchamp*, and the Lord *Clifford*; the Lord *Richard Stafford*, Sir *John Wingfield*, and seven Barons of *Gascogne*. In the main Body was seven Thousand Men of Arms,

<sup>c</sup> *Ashmole*, p. 672.

<sup>a</sup> *Stow*, p. 256.



Arms, and the Prince himself with a double Antient; the Earl of *Oxford*, the Lord *Bartholomew Burgberse*, the Lord *John Lisle*, the Lord *John Willoughby*, the Lord *Roger la War*, the Lord *Maurice Berkley*, Son to *Thomas Lord Berkley* then very aged, and the Lord *John Bourcher*. And of *Gascoigne*, the Lord *John Rose*, the Elder of *Bordeaux*, the Capital of *Buche*, the Lord *Ckaumont*, and the Lord *Montferrand*, with their Antients. In the Rear was four Thousand Men of Arms, under the Command of the Earl of *Suffolk*, the Earl of *Salisbury*, and the Lord *Nemers*. The Whole consisted, of Men of Arms, Archers, and all who accompanied, of sixty Thousand Men; and, at *Aurule* which surrender'd to him, he rested two Days, and made several Knights. From thence he took the Town and Castle of *Mount-Clere*, and taking up his Quarters there, the *French* set Fire to the Town, which caused the Prince to pitch his Tent in the Field; and, whilst on this Expedition, he refused lying in any Town for some Time.

After ravaging the whole Country of *Languedoc*, and burning many Towns and Castles, the Prince with his victorious Army came before *Carcaffone*, a fair Town, rich and well built. There the Army rested three Days and then burnt it, tho' the Citizens offered two Hundred and fifty Thousand Gold Soufes to save the Place, which the Prince refused, saying: *He came not for Gold, but to take Cities and Towns together with their Inhabitants*. After which, on *Tuesday* the Eighth of *November*, they passed the Water at *Sandey*, and marched between high Hills to the City of *Narbon*, strong and well walled, having in it a great

Cathedral Church, and a Castle belonging to the Bishop; also, a very strong Tower belonging to the Earl of the same Town. It had also a Burrough much bigger and better built than that of *Carcaffone*, with some Storehoufes for Merchandize; and between that and the City was a River called *Ande* coming from *Carcaffone*, and running into the *Mediterranean* Sea. This Burrough was burnt by the Prince's Order, and from thence passing by the Town and Castle of *Ambion*, which they took, as they did many others, burning and destroying most Places they came to; which at last roused the *French* to form a great Army to encounter the *English*, of which the Prince had Information just after he had taken the strong Town of *Carbone*, and that he was not far from them. On which he form'd his Army to give them Battle, and one of his Soldiers starting a Hare, a great Shout was thereupon made, which the Enemy hearing, sent out forty light Horsemen to enquire into the Cause, who coming near the *English* Army, and finding them drawn up, made such Report of their Numbers and Order, that the whole *French* Army immediately fled in great Confusion.

The *French* Forces were under the Command of the Earl of *Armagnac*, Lieutenant to the *French* King in *Languedoc*; *Gaston Phæbus*, Earl of *Foix*; *James* of *Bourbon*, Lord of *Ponthieu*, and Constable of *France*; and the Lord *John Clermont* Marshal of *France*, \* who had with them a more numerous Army than the Prince, and were more powerful in the Field (if their Courage would have permitted a Trial) but durst not, either for

Fear,

\* *Froissart*, cap. 155.

Fear, or (as *Mezeray* † softens it) for Jealousy of one another, so much as once offer to stop his victorious Progress. Whereupon the Prince sent the Lord *Bartholomew Burgherſe*, *John Chandos*, and *James de Audeley*, with some light Horſe to fall on their Rear, who coming up with them, they took thirty-two Knights and Gentlemen, and amongſt them the Earl of *Romene*; alſo, many Carts and Waggons loaded with their Baggage: After which, he took the Caſtle of *Oradry* and burnt it. On *Sunday* the twenty-ſecond of *November*, perceiving the *French* Army on the Side of a Hill near the great Town of *Gamount*, ſixty light Horſemen, with ſome Archers, were ſent to the Right of the Town called *Auremont*; where finding four Hundred Men of Arms of the Conſtable of *France*, they ſlew and took moſt of them. The Prince thereupon with the main Body of his Army quartered at *Auremont*, and the Vanguard at *Colimont*. Early the next Morning he ſtood in Expectation of the Enemy, but finding no Approach of the *French*, he march'd to *Gamount*, and, entering the Town, was told they had fled with great Precipitation at Midnight, on hearing of the Defeat of their Men at *Auremont*. On *Tueſday*, the Army encamp'd in the Fields, and, for Want of Water, the Horſes were forc'd to drink Wine, whereby next Day they were ſo intoxicated, that they march'd with great Difficulty, and ſome of them died. The Day after they got to Water, and, leaving the Town of *Florence* on the Right-hand, reach'd a great Town called *Silard*, and the main Body was quarter'd at *Realmont*, which after  
ſome

† Hiſt. of *France*, p 42.

ome Resistance was taken, and therefore was burnt. On *Thursday* the Army rested, and the next Day, after a long March by walled Towns and strong Castles, quartered at *Serde*. On *Saturday* passed Waters with much Difficulty, and thro' Woods to *Mesn*; and on *Monday* St. *Andrew's* Day, after a tedious March, came to the Town of *Tholouse*, in which were three Castles. On *Tuesday* the Prince marched to the Castle of *Melan*, and on *Wednesday* to *Regia*, where his Horses and Waggons passed the River *Gerond*. There he order'd his Army into Winter Quarters, appointing several Barons to command in the Marches, to keep the Frontiers of *Gascoigne* against the *French*.

The foregoing Account is, from *Thomas de la More*, printed in *Stow*; but Sir *John Wingfield's* Letters containing farther memorable Particulars, and being actually concern'd, are worthy to be inserted, *verbatim*.

*A Copy of Sir John Wingfield's Letter, to a Lord then in England, sent by Sir Richard Stafford, (as may be suppos'd) who returned thither at the End of the said Expedition.*

" My LORD,

AS touching News in these Parts, may it please you to understand, that all the Earls, Barons, Bannerets, Knights, and Esquires, were in Health at the Writing hereof; and my Lord (*the Prince*) hath not lost either Knight or Esquire in this Expedition, except the Lord *John Lisle*, who was slain after a strange Man-

E

" ner,



“ ner, with a \* Quarrel, the third Day after we  
 “ were entered into our Enemies Country : He  
 “ died the Fifteenth of *October*. And please you  
 “ to understand, that my Lord hath rode thro’  
 “ the Country of *Armagnac*, and hath taken ma-  
 “ ny inclosed Towns, and burnt and destroyed  
 “ them, except such as he fortified for himself.  
 “ After this, he marched into the Viscounty of  
 “ *Rovergne*, where he took a good Town called  
 “ *Plaisance*, the chief Place in that Country,  
 “ which he burnt and destroyed with the Country  
 “ round about the same. This done, he went  
 “ into the Country of *Estarrac*, wherein he took  
 “ many Towns, and wasted and ravaged all the  
 “ Country. Then he enter’d the Town of *Co-*  
 “ *mignes*, and took many Towns there, which he  
 “ caused to be destroyed and burnt, together  
 “ with all the Country round about. He also  
 “ took the Town of *St. Bertrand*, the chief in that  
 “ Country ; being as large in Compass as the Ci-  
 “ ty of *Norwich* (in *England*.) After that, he  
 “ entered the County of *Lille*, and took the  
 “ greater Part of the closed Towns therein, caus-  
 “ ing severall of them to be burnt and destroyed  
 “ as he passed. Then going into the Lordship  
 “ of *Tholouse*, we passed the River of *Garrone*,  
 “ and another a League above *Tholouse*, which is  
 “ very great ; for our Enemies had burnt all the  
 “ Bridges, as well on the one Side of the *Tholouse*  
 “ as the other, except those within *Tho-*  
 “ *louse* ; for the River runneth thro’ the Town.  
 “ And within this Town, at the same Time, were  
 “ the Constable of *France*, the Marshal *Clermont*,  
 “ and

\* i. e. a Stone from a Wall, *Ashmole*, p. 63.

“ and the Earl of *Armagnac*, with a great Power of  
 “ Soldiers. *Tholouse* is a City of a large Extent, strong,  
 “ fair, and well walled ; and there was none in our  
 “ Host who perfectly knew the Ford of the River ;  
 “ but yet, by the Grace and Goodness of God we  
 “ found it. So then we marched through the Seigni-  
 “ ory of *Tholouse*, and took many good Towns in-  
 “ closed, before we came to *Carcaffone* ; which we  
 “ also took a Town greater, stronger, and fairer than  
 “ *York*. But as well this as all other Towns in the  
 “ Country (which we took) were burnt, plundered,  
 “ and destroyed. Now after we had marched by ma-  
 “ ny Journies through the Country of *Carcaffone*,  
 “ we came into the Seigniory of *Narbonne*, which  
 “ Town held out against us ; but it was won by  
 “ Force, and the same Town is little less than the  
 “ City of *London* ; being situate upon the *Greekish*  
 “ Sea ( *i. e.* the *Mediterranean* ) which is not above  
 “ two Leagues therefrom. And there is there an Ha-  
 “ ven, or Landing-Place, from whence the River  
 “ goeth up to *Narbonne* : And *Narbonne* is but ele-  
 “ ven Leagues distant from *Montpellier*, eighteen  
 “ from *Aigues-Mortes*, and thirty from *Avignon*.

“ And may it please you to understand, that  
 “ our Holy Father sent Messengers to my Lord,  
 “ who, being not past seven Leagues from him,  
 “ sent a Serjeant at Arms, who was Serjeant-At-  
 “ tendant at the Door of our Holy Father's Cham-  
 “ ber, with Letters to my Lord ; requiring of  
 “ him a safe Conduct to come and declare to his  
 “ Highness their Message from our Holy Father,  
 “ which was to treat of an Accommodation be-  
 “ tween my Lord and his Adversary of *France*.  
 “ But the Serjeant was two Days in the Army,

“ before my Lord would vouchsafe to see him, or  
 “ receive his Letters. The Reason whereof was,  
 “ because he was informed, that the Power of  
 “ *France* was come forth of *Tboloufe* toward *Car-*  
 “ *cassone*; where my Lord was obliged to turn  
 “ back again upon them presently as he did. But  
 “ the third Day, when we expected to have  
 “ met them, they, understanding of our Approach,  
 “ retired before Day, and gat them to the Moun-  
 “ tains, marching hastily toward *Tboloufe*. But  
 “ the Country People, who had been their Guides  
 “ to lead them that Way, were taken by us, as  
 “ they should have passed the Water. At which  
 “ Time, because the Serjeant at Arms was in my  
 “ Custody, I caused him to examine the Guides,  
 “ that were so taken, and because one of the  
 “ Guides had been the Constable’s Guide, and  
 “ his Countryman, he might well see and know  
 “ the Countenance of the *French* on this his Exami-  
 “ nation: And I told the Serjeant, that he might  
 “ the better declare to the Pope, and all those at  
 “ *Avignon*, what he had now heard and seen.  
 “ But as to the Answer which my Lord returned  
 “ to them, who had been sent to treat with him,  
 “ you would be hugely pleased, if you knew  
 “ all the Matter: For he would not suffer them  
 “ by any Means to approach his Person any near-  
 “ er; but he sent them Word by their Serjeant:  
 “ *That, if they came to treat of any Matter, they*  
 “ *should send to the King his Father*; for my Lord  
 “ himself would not do any Thing therein, but  
 “ by Command from my Lord his Father.  
 “ But of my Lord’s turning back to meet his  
 “ Enemies, of his repassing the River *Garrone*,  
 “ and

“ and of his taking Castles and Towns in this Expedition, and of other Things done against his Enemies in Pursuit of them, they were all Deeds right worthy and honourable to be told, as Sir *Richard Stafford* and Sir *William Burton* can more plainly declare, than I can write unto you : For it would be too tedious to commit so much to Writing.

“ Now my Lord rode over the Country eight whole Weeks, whereof he rested not above eleven Days in all those Places whither he came. And know for certain, that, since this War first commenced against the *French King*, he never received such Loss and Mischiefs, as he has in this last Expedition : For the Countries and good Towns, which were laid waste at this Time, supplied the *French King* every Year toward the Maintenance of his War, with more than half his Revenue hath done beside ; except the Change of his Money, which he maketh every Year, and the Profits and Custom, which he taketh of the *Poitevins* ; as I can shew by good Records, which were found in divers Towns in the Collectors Houses. For *Carcaffone*, and *Limoux*, which is as great as *Carcaffone*, and two other Towns in the Coasts of *Carcaffone*, found to the *French King* yearly Wages for one Thousand Men of Arms, and one hundred Thousand old Crowns to maintain the War beside. And know, that, by the Records which we have found, those Towns of *Tholouse* which we have destroyed, together with the Towns in the Country of *Carcaffone*, and the Town of *Narbonne*, with others in



“ *Narbonnois*, did, together with the Sums afore-  
 “ said, find him every Year, to the Aid of his  
 “ War, four hundred Thousand old Crowns  
 “ into his Coffers ; as the Burgeſſes of the great  
 “ Towns, and other People of the Country, who  
 “ are ſuppoſed well able to know, have told us.  
 “ Wherefore, by God’s Aſſiſtance, if my Lord  
 “ had wherewithal to maintain this War, to the  
 “ King his Father’s Profit, and to his own Ho-  
 “ nour, he ſhould greatly enlarge the *Engliſh* Pale,  
 “ and win many fair Places ; for our Enemies are  
 “ wonderfully aſtoniſhed.

“ At the Writing hereof, my Lord hath reſol-  
 “ ved to ſend all the Earls and all the Bannerets to  
 “ quarter in certain Places in the Marches, to be  
 “ ready to make Inroads on the Enemy, and to  
 “ annoy them.

“ My Lord, at this Preſent, I have no other  
 “ News to ſend ; but you may by your Letters  
 “ command me, as yours, to my Ability.

“ My right honourable Lord, God grant you  
 “ a good Life, Joy, and Health, long to conti-  
 “ nue. Dated at *Bourdeaux*, the *Tueſday* before  
 “ *Chriſtmas*.

*His ſecond Letter is directed to Sir Richard Staf-  
 ford, Knight ; who, as was ſaid before, returned  
 to England.*

“ Right dear Sir, and truly loving Friend :

T Ouching News here, after your Departure,  
 you may underſtand, that we have taken,  
 “ and forced to yield, five Towns incloſed ; viz.  
 “ Port

“ *Port St. Mary, Clerac, Tonneins, Bourg,* <sup>h</sup> *Sur*  
 “ *Mer, Chasteau Sacrat, and Brassac:* Also, se-  
 “ *venteen Castles, viz. Coiller, Buzet, Lemnac,*  
 “ *two Castles called Bolognes, which are near one*  
 “ *another; Montaurt, Vireſche, Frechenet, Mon-*  
 “ *tendre, Rochechalais, Montpont, Montignac, Vau-*  
 “ *clare, Cenamont, Leyrac, Plassac, Montravel.*  
 “ And please you to know, that my Lord *John*  
 “ *Chandos, my Lord James Audeley, and your*  
 “ *Men that were with them, and the Gascoigners*  
 “ *that are in their Company, and my Lord John*  
 “ *Botetourt with his Company, and my Lord*  
 “ *Reginald Cobham* took the foresaid Town of  
 “ *Chastel Sacrat* by Assault; and the Bastard of  
 “ *Lisle, who was Captain of the said Town, was*  
 “ *slain in the Assault, being stricken thro’ the*  
 “ *Head with an Arrow. Now, my Lord Regi-*  
 “ *nald is returned back towards Languedoc, and*  
 “ *my Lord Botetourt towards Brassac, with their*  
 “ *Troops: But the Lords John Chandos and*  
 “ *James Audeley remain still with their Troops*  
 “ *in Chastel Sacrat, and have Plenty of Victuals*  
 “ *of all Sorts, to serve them between this and*  
 “ *Midsummer, except only fresh Fish and Cabba-*  
 “ *ges, as they have by Letters advertised us:*  
 “ Wherefore, you need not concern yourself a-  
 “ bout your Men; for there are in that Town  
 “ more than three hundred Spears, three hundred  
 “ Commons, and one hundred and fifty Archers.  
 “ And they have rid before *Agen*, and burnt and  
 “ destroyed all their Mills, and fired, or broken  
 “ down all their Bridges, that lie over the

E 4

Gar-

<sup>h</sup> Ita lego pro *St. Pierre.* vide Maps.  
vide Bar. of *Eng.*

<sup>i</sup> Ita lego pro *Baldwin.*

“ *Garonne*, and have taken a Castle without the  
 “ said Town, and have fortified it. And Mon-  
 “ sieur *John d’Armagnac* and the Seneschal of  
 “ *Agenois*, who were then in the Town of *Agen*,  
 “ would not once put forth their Heads, nor any  
 “ of their People, and yet have they been twice  
 “ before that Town. And Monsieur *Bouciqualt*,  
 “ and Monsieur *Arnold d’Endregban*, and *Grimston*  
 “ *Campbell*, with three hundred Spears, and three  
 “ hundred Soldiers of *Lombardy*, came, and entered  
 “ the Town of *Moissac*, which is in *Quercy*, where  
 “ now they are ; that Place being but a Mile  
 “ from *Chastel Sacrat*, and but a League from  
 “ *Brassac* ; and, you may well suppose, there will  
 “ be good Company to give each other a Taste of  
 “ their Valour. And further please to know,  
 “ that my Lord *Bartholomew (Burwash)* is at *Cog-*  
 “ *nac*, with fixscore Men at Arms of my Lord’s  
 “ House, and fixscore Archers, and the Captal de  
 “ *Buche*, the Lord *Monferrand*, and the Lord  
 “ of *Crotony*, who have with them three hun-  
 “ dred Spears, fixscore Archers, and two hundred  
 “ other Soldiers, besides those in *Taillebourg*, in  
 “ *Tonnay*, and *Rochevoucaut* ; so that all together  
 “ they may well amount to six hundred Spears :  
 “ And, at the Writing hereof, they were underta-  
 “ king a Journey towards *Anjou* and *Poitou*. And  
 “ the Earls of *Suffolk*, *Oxford*, and *Salisbury*, with  
 “ the Lord *Mucidan*, Monsieur *Ellis de Pamiers*,  
 “ and other *Gascoigners*, which are more than  
 “ five hundred Spears effective, two hundred Sol-  
 “ diers, and three hundred Archers, were, at the  
 “ Writing hereof, gone forth against the Parts of  
 “ *Nostre*

“ *Noſtre Dame de Rochemade*, and have been A-  
 “ broad now theſe twelve Days, nor are yet re-  
 “ turned at the Sending of theſe Preſents. My  
 “ Lord *John Chandos*, my Lord *James Audeley*  
 “ and my Lord *John Botetourt*, with their Troops,  
 “ are ſet forth upon a Journey on their Side.  
 “ And my Lord *Reginald Cobham*, and thoſe of  
 “ his Retinue, with the *Gascoigners* of his Com-  
 “ pany, are alſo upon a Journey on their Side.  
 “ The Earl of *Warwick* hath been at *Tonneins*,  
 “ and at *Clerac*, which Towns he took; and, at  
 “ the Writing hereof, was gone towards *Marmand*,  
 “ to deſtroy their Vines, and what elſe he can of  
 “ theirs. My Lord the Prince is now at *Libour-*  
 “ *ne*, and *Monſieur de Pamiers* at *Fronsac*, which is  
 “ but a Quarter of a League from *Libourne*; and  
 “ *Monſieur Bernard de la Bret* is there with him:  
 “ And my Lord looks for News, which he ſhould  
 “ have; and, according to what he hears, he  
 “ will behave himſelf: For, as it ſeems, he ſtands  
 “ ſtrictly upon his Honour.

“ At the Writing hereof, the Earl of *Armag-*  
 “ *nac* was at *Avignon*, and the King of *Aragon* is  
 “ there alſo: But of other Diſcourſes, which you  
 “ know have been in divers Places, I cannot now  
 “ certify you.

“ Right dear Sir, I can recommend nothing to  
 “ you more earneſtly, than, that you remember to  
 “ ſend News yourſelf to my Lord the Prince, as  
 “ ſoon as by any Means you can; and ſo the  
 “ Lord grant you a long and good Life. Dated  
 “ at *Libourne*, 21 *January* 1355-6.

By what has been ſaid, it appears that the  
 Prince



Prince, loaden with Honour and Spoils, <sup>1</sup> returned to *Bordeaux*, where, for some Time, he staid; busying himself in preparing what was needful for the Defence of *Gascoigne*; and adding to, and repairing the Fortifications of *Bordeaux*, and other Castles. How vigilant he was, and how his Orders were executed, appears from Sir *John Wingfield's* last Letter; and, as his Expences were large, he caused to be coined <sup>m</sup> new Pieces of Gold, for the Wages of his Soldiers, according to a Commission from the King his Father.

He began his March from *Bordeaux*, <sup>n</sup> on the Sixth of *July* 1356, 30 *Ed.* 3. with an Army of twelve thousand Men (according to *Mezeray*)<sup>o</sup> whereof three thousand were *English* born. But most Writers agree that his Forces were little above eight Thousand, especially at the Battle of *Poitiers*; and 'tis hardly probable he should lose one Third of his Army, as there happened no remarkable Action before he came thither; I shall therefore follow *Froissart*, who assigns the Number to be two thousand Men of Arms, and six thousand Archers. With this Body of chosen Men (having left the <sup>p</sup> Lord *Bernard de la Bret* his Lieutenant in *Gascoigne*, with sufficient Power for the Defence thereof against the Earl of *Armagnac* who threatened to invade it) he <sup>q</sup> marched thro' *Quercy* and *Auvergne*, where he found great Plenty; but, when he entered any Town well stored with Provisions and other Necessaries, he usually refreshed his Men there two or three Days, and on his De-

<sup>1</sup> *Speed's Chron.* p. 594.  
p. 163.

<sup>m</sup> *Stow*, p. 259.  
<sup>o</sup> *Hist. of France* ad hunc An.

<sup>q</sup> *Froissart*, c. 157.

<sup>n</sup> *Walsingh.* *Hist.*  
<sup>p</sup> *Stow*, p. 259.

parture the Residue was destroyed ; the Head of the Wine Vessels stricken out, Wheat, Barley, and all other Provision, but what they could bear away, consumed, that the Enemy might not subsist. This Course they held till they came to the strong City of *Bourges*, the principal Place in *Berry* ; there they made an Attempt by giving a fierce Assault to one of the Gates, but, tho' many proper Feats of Arms were done, yet no Advantage was won, the Place being so well defended by the Lord of *Conserans* and the Lord *Hutin de Merners*, who commanded in the City : Thence they wheeled off to *Isoudun*, a Castle of great Strength, which was briskly assaulted ; but was so well defended, that, by their Courage, they gained the good Opinion of the Prince, who left it, and took his Way to *Virzon*, a large Town defended by a good Castle, both which they took by Assault ; and finding great Plenty of good Wines, and Provisions of all Sorts, staid there three Days to refresh his Forces.

The *French King* being alarmed with the News of the Prince's Exploits, and how he was marching in the good Country of *Berry*, swore, *He would ride forth and give him Battle, wheresoever he should find him.* And immediately sent a special Summons to all as held of him by Homage or otherwise, straitly enjoining them on Pain of his high Displeasure, *all Excuses laid aside, to meet him at the general Rendezvous in the Marches of Blaisois and Touraine, to the Intent to fight the English.*

These Tidings were brought to the Prince at *Virzon*, and that the *French King* was at *Chartres*,  
on

? *Froissart*, *ibid.*

on the other Side the *Loire*, with a great Army; and that all the Towns and Passages on the said River were strongly guarded, so that it was very dangerous to get into *Anjou*, *Vendesmois*, or *Le Main*. Whereupon, his Council advised him to pass thro' *Touraine*, and so wheel off on the Left-hand into *Poitou*, and by that Way return thro' *Saintogne* to *Bordeaux*. This Course the Prince resolved to follow, and, leaving *Virzon*, he proceeded somewhat on the Left-hand toward *Romorantin*, which was almost at an equal Distance between *Blois* and *Bourges*, sending before him his two Marshals, the Lord *John Chandos* and the Lord *James Audley*, both Knights of the Garter; accompanied with Sir *Robert Knolles* and Sir *Frank Van Hall*, with select Men, to view the Country, and to prevent falling into any Ambush. The French King also, at the same Time, detached one *Griffith Mico*, with two Hundred Horse, to take a View of the *English*, who falling in with our Forces under the Lord *Chandos*, he with Thirty of his Men were taken and all the rest slain, not a Man being left to carry back any Tidings of what became of his Fellows.

In those Parts were also three great Barons appointed by the French King to defend the Country, namely the Lord of *Craon*, the Lord of *Bouchiquaut*, and the Hermit of *Chaumont*. These, with three Hundred Spears, coasted about the *English* Army at a Distance for six Days together, but could take no Advantage, by reason of their marching in close Order. At length perceiving the

\* *Stow*, p. 259.  
ibid.

† Ibid.

‡ *Froissart*, cap. 157. and *Stow*,

the Prince to take the Way of *Romorantin*, they fetch'd a wide Compass, and, getting before him, lay in Ambush near to *Romorantin*, by a straight Passage the *English* was to pass. The same Day, by Leave of the Marshals, there went before the Prince's Army the Lord *Bartholomew Burgbersh*, Sir *Walter Paveley*, Sir *Nele Loring*, and Sir *Sancho Dambreticourt*, Knights of the Garter; with the Lord *Roger de la Warre*, the Lord *Edward Spencer* (then <sup>w</sup> about twenty Years of Age) the Lord *Basset* of *Draiton*, but two Years older; together with the Lord of *Mucidan*, the Lord *Petition Coutras*, *Gascoigners*; Sir *Eustace Dambreticourt*, and Sir *Richard Punchardon*, whom some suppose a *Gascoigner*, but it's evident he was of *Punchardon* in *Devonshire*. These Worthies, having obtained Leave to ride with two Hundred Men of Arms before the Marshals, to take a View of *Romorantin*, rode thro' that narrow Passage where the *French* lay in Ambush, and had no sooner got out of it, when they with great Ardour and Courage made up to them. The <sup>\*</sup> Lords of *England*, hearing the Noise of Horses behind them, looked back and saw their Enemies, and thereupon, facing about in good Order, undauntedly stood to to receive them. The *French* came on very briskly with their Spears couched in their Rests, and ran fiercely on the *English*, who, opening suddenly to the Right and Left, suffer'd them to pass through; and then, closing together, trotted after them, and attacked them. The Skirmish was hot, and for some Time doubtfully maintained, the *French* being three to two; but, on Sight of the  
Van

<sup>w</sup> *Dugdale*, vol. i. p. 195.

<sup>\*</sup> *Froissart*, p. 157.



Van of the Army, they immediately fled towards *Romorantin*; and, the *English* pursuing, one Half of them was either killed or taken Prisoners, and the other, headed by the three Lords, got into the Castle of *Romorantin*.

The Prince of *Wales* \* heard how his Vancurriers were engaged, and marched more hastily towards *Romorantin*; but, on his Arrival there, he found the Town already won, and his Marshals devising how to take the Castle. He presently commanded the Lord *John Chandos* to confer with the Enemy to try their Resolution in that Juncture, who making a Sign at the Gate for a Parley, the Lord *Bouciquaut* and the Hermit of *Cbaumont* came to the Barriers: Lord *John Chandos*, after Salutations, told them: "The Prince of *Wales* used great Clemency to those who submitted to him, and would treat them honourably, if they would deliver their Fortrefs into his Hands and become his Prisoners." The Lord *Bouciquaut* said: "They did not intend to fling themselves in that Condition, but would defend themselves like Men." This being reported to the Prince, he order'd the next Morning an Assault to be made on the Castle in this Manner: The Archers, being ranged along the Dikes, shot their Arrows in one Volley, and so quick, that the Enemy hardly appear'd at the Defences, whilst others swam over the Ditch on Planks and empty Casks joined together with Mattocks and Pick-axes in their Hands, and began to dig and mine the Walls; but the Besieged cast down on them great Stones, Pots of quick Lime, and o-

ther

\* *Fraisart*, cap. 158.

ther offensive Things, which hurt many, and *Raimond Derge du Lache*, a valiant Esquire belonging to the Lord *John Greilly* Capital of *Busche*, was slain. The Assault continued all that Day without Success, and the next Morning was renewed, the Prince himself being personally present, and encouraged his Men. But while the Prince stood on Foot near the Dike, there was slain by him an *English* Esquire named *Jacob Bernard*, which so incensed him, that he <sup>z</sup> took his most solemn Oath, by his Father's Soul, not to leave the Siege, 'till he had the Castle and all within at his Mercy. This occasioned the Assault to be renewed warmer than ever, 'till the Prince saw there was no Probability of prevailing that Way. Therefore he ordered Engines to be raised, which cast combustible Matter inflamed, like Wild-fire, into the Base-Court, so fast and in such Quantities, that at last the whole Court seem'd to be one huge Fire; and taking hold of the Roof of a great Tower, which was covered with Reed, the Flames spread all over the Castle. On which the whole Garrison yielded themselves to his Mercy, and the Prince received the three Lords and their Men as his Prisoners, and left the Castle desolate and ruin'd. This happen'd on the Fourth of *September*, 1356. fifteen Days before the Battle of *Poitiers*.

There were <sup>a</sup> taken, besides the three Lords, the Captain of the Garrison, and two Hundred and forty Men of Arms, the common Soldiers being set at Liberty; and in this Expedition before the Battle

<sup>z</sup> *Froissart*, c. 280. fol. 170.    <sup>a</sup> *Knighton*, p. 2614.

tle of *Poitiers*, were taken <sup>b</sup> more than six thousand Men of Arms in the Countries thro' which the Prince marched, whom he sent Prisoners to *Bourdeaux* to be ransomed.

After the Taking of *Romorantin*, the Prince marched on, as before he designed, thro' *Touraine* and *Anjou*, on this Side the *Loire*, destroying the Country, 'till he came to the Place which was ordained to be remarkable to all Posterity, for one of the most glorious and compleatest Victories that ever was obtained.

The *French King*, having <sup>c</sup> form'd a great Army at *Chartres*, began his March about that Time to *Blois* on the *Loire*, in Quest of the Prince, and, resting there two Days, passed the River over the Bridges of *Orleans*, *Mebun*, *Tours*, and *Samur*, all the other Bridges being broken down to hinder the Prince's Passage. Reaching *Ambroise*, and the Day following *Loches*, he there heard how the Prince of *Wales* was on the Borders of *Touraine*, and thereupon marched to *La Haye en Touraine*, resolving to give him Battle. His Army consisted of twenty thousand Men of Arms, among whom were twenty-six Dukes and Earls, and more than one hundred and twenty Banners, with King *John's* four Sons, *Charles*, Duke of *Normandy* and Dauphin of *Vienna*; *Lewis*, Duke of *Anjou*; *John*, Duke of *Berry*; and *Philip*, who shortly after purchased the Sirname of *Hardy*, for defending his Father, and became in Time Duke of *Burgundy*. Their whole Army is said <sup>d</sup> to consist of fifty thousand

<sup>b</sup> MS. vet. *Anglic.* in Bibl. C. C. C. *Cantab.*

159. <sup>c</sup> *Froissart*, c. 3. in *Hist. of Eng.*

vol. 2. p. 226.

and Horse, and fifty Thousand Foot. *Hollingshed* (*Chron.* p. 389.) tells us the *French King's* Army consisted of sixty Thousand fighting Men; whereof there were above three Thousand Knights; and that the Prince had but eight Thousand, whereof three Thousand were Archers, though *Froissart* in one Place saith six Thousand, and in another four Thousand.

The *French King*, with this great Army, thought himself sure of taking the Prince and all his Forces; and therefore march'd with the utmost Expedition to intercept them, and, having pass'd the River *Vienne*, directed his Course towards *Poitiers*, leaving at *Chauvigny* three great Lords of *France*, the Lord *Ralph de Coucy*, the Earl of *Joigny*, and the Lord *Chauvigny* Marshal of *Burgundy*, with two Hundred and forty Men of Arms. These early the next Morning (being *Saturday*) pass'd the Bridge after their King, then about three Leagues before; and they took their Way among Bushes by the Side of a Wood leading to *Poitiers*. The same Morning the Prince of *Wales* had dislodged from a little Village hard by called *Bonmarcour*, and sending before him, to get Intelligence of the Enemy, sixty Men of Arms all excellently well mounted, under the Leading of Sir *Eustace D'Ambreticourt* (Son of the Lord *D'Ambreticourt* Knight of the Garter) and the Lord *John de St. Guisain*, another Native of *Hainault*; who coming up with the three *French* Lords, and finding themselves not strong enough to attack them, made a feint of flying, knowing the Prince with his Horse was near. Whereupon the *French* pursuing them

F

eagerly

<sup>c</sup> *Froissart* confer cum *Knigh-ton*, p. 2614.



eagerly fell in with the *English* Horse, and all three Lords were taken Prisoners together with one Hundred Men of Arms, as many more being slain, forty only escaping by the Covert of the Wood. This was the first lucky Preludium to that famous Victory obtained by the Prince, two Days after. From these Prisoners he fully understood the Condition of his Enemies, and of his being followed by them so near, that it was hardly possible for him to avoid a Battle. Thereupon he set his Men in close Order, and commanded none to presume to go before the Marshal's Banners; and the same Night encamped in the Fields of *Beauvoir* and *Maupertuis*, within two small Leagues of *Poitiers*, the Lord *John Greilly* Capital of *Busche*, the Lord *Edmund* of *Pamiers*, the Lord *Bartbolomew Burgherse*, and Sir *Eustace D'Ambreticourt*, with two Hundred Men of Arms well mounted, being sent before him to observe the Countenance of the Enemy. These four valiant Knights rode so far that they view'd the *French* King's main Army, and were so undaunted as to attack their Reer, and took several Prisoners; which caused King *John*, just as he was entering into *Poitiers*, to cause his Army to face about, and return into the Field, where it was very late, before they got into Quarters. The *English* Detachment return'd victorious to the Prince, and relating to him their Adventure, and how exceeding numerous the *French* were: *Well then* (said the Prince) *in the Name of God, let us consider, how we may fight them at our best Advantage, for against Number Policy is requisite*, and that Night pitched his Camp

Camp as before-mentioned, being a strong Situation among Vines and Bushes.

On *Sunday Morning* \* the *French King*, desirous of Battle, heard Mass in his Pavillion, took the Communion in both Kinds, and received Absolution together with his four Sons. After which, there came to him his Brother *Philip Duke of Orleans*, *Peter Duke of Bourton*; *Walter de Brenne*, Duke of *Athens* and Constable of *France*; *Charles Earl of Tankerville*, the Earl of *Salebruse*, the Earl of *Dampmartin*, the Earl of *Ventador*, and other Barons of *France*; among them the Lord *Eustace Ribemont*, who had so signalized himself by combating with King *Edward* at *Calais*, and the Lord *Geffery Charney*, &c. whereupon a Council of War was immediately held, when it was unanimously agreed, that the Army should be drawn out in Battle Array, and every Lord display his Banner, and set forward against the Enemy in the Name of God and St. *Dennis*. Accordingly, the Van was led by *Philip Duke of Orleans*, having thirty-six Banners, and twice as many Penons. The main Body was under the Duke of *Normandy*, *Charles* the Dauphin, and his two Brethren, *Lewis Duke of Anjou* and *John Duke of Berry*. The King himself brought up the Reer, having with him his youngest Son *Philip Duke of Tourain*, and afterwards of *Burgundy*, with a great Number of his prime Nobility, and others, consisting of forty Thousand chosen Men, whereof eight Thousand were Men of Arms. And, while the Officers were drawing their Men in Order, the King ordered the Lord *Eustace Ribemont*, the Lord *John of Landas*,

F 2

\* *Froissart*, c. 160. p. 79.

*Landas*, and the Lord *Richard de Beajeu*, with a Party to take a View of the *English*, and consider how many they might amount to, and in what Manner to attack them. And then King *John*, mounted on a large white Courser to be seen of all, came up to the Head of his Army, and with a loud Voice said : <sup>h</sup> *Messieurs*, *When you are at Paris, at Chartres, at Orleans, or Roven, then you threaten these Englishmen terribly, and wish nothing more than to be in Arms against them. Now shall your Desire be granted ; I'll lead you where you shall be sure to find 'em : Let me therefore now see the Effects of that ill Will you bear them, and how well you can revenge all the Displeasures and Damages, which they have done you, for without Doubt we shall not part without Blows.* This was answer'd briskly by such as were within Hearing : *Sir ! in God's Name be it so : We desire nothing else, and would gladly see our Enemies.* Soon after, the Lord *Eustace de Ribemont*, with his Companions, returned to the King, who gave him an Account in this Manner : *Sir, we have viewed the Englishmen, and by our Estimation they are not above two Thousand Men of Arms, four Thousand Archers, and one Thousand five Hundred others ; howbeit, they are encamped in a strong Place. And, as far as I can imagine, they make up but one Battail ; but yet, they are very wisely ordered, and along by the Way they have strongly fortified the Hedges and Bushes ; a Party of their Archers lining the Hedges, so that none can go or ride that Way, but he must lie open to their Shot on the Flank : And yet that Way must we*  
go,

<sup>h</sup> *Froissart*, c. 160. and true Use of Armory, in *Vita Dom. Job. Chandos*, p. 47.

go, if we intend to attack 'em. Into this Lane there is but one Passage neither, whereat, as we judge, about four Horsemen may ride abreast; and at the End of this hedged Lane, where no Man can well pass either on Foot, or Horseback, stands a square Battail of Men of Arms all on Foot, the Archers before them in the Manner of an Herse, so that easily they cannot be discomfited. The King said: Well, what then do you advise, as best for us to do? The Lord Eustace answer'd: Let us all light on Foot, except three Hundred Men of Arms, the most select of all the Host, and best armed and best mounted, who shall first a little break and open the Archers Battail; and then immediately your Men of Arms to strike in after them on Foot, and so to cope with their Men of Arms Hand to Hand. But only let the German Curassiers remain still on Horseback, to comfort the Marshals, if Need shall be. This is the best Advice that I can give: If any other judge any Way better, let him speak. The King approved of this without hearing any Objection, i order'd three Hundred Knights and Esquires Men of Arms, of the most Courage and Conduct of all his Army, and that the German Brigade of Curassiers should continue on Horseback, under their Leaders, the Earls <sup>k</sup> of Nassau, Saltsburgh, and Neydo. He also order'd, that all his Men should put off their Spurs and cut their Spears to five Foot Length, as most commodious for such as had left their Horses.

But, at the Instant they were ready to march against the Prince, the Cardinal of *Perigort* (who with another Cardinal had been sent by the Pope

F 3

to

<sup>i</sup> Froissart, ib. and Mezeray.

<sup>k</sup> Du Chesne.



to be Mediators for a Peace) came hastily to King John, and, kneeling, desired him, for *Jesús Christ's* Sake, to stop one Moment, and hear what he had to say. Which being granted, he addressed himself to the King, "Sir, you have here all the Flower of your Realm against an Handful of *Englishmen* if we compare their Numbers to yours; and surely, if you can get them to yield to your Conditions, it will be more profitable by far, and nothing less honourable to conquer them so cheaply, than to hazard so flourishing an Army, as is here present. Wherefore, Sir, most humbly, and in the Name of God, I require you, that you will grant me Time, before you go forward, to ride yonder to the Prince, and shew him at what Disadvantage you have got him." *I am content you do so* (answer'd the King) *on Condition you make a quick Return back again.* On which the Cardinal immediately mounted, and, riding to the Prince of Wales, found him among his Men on Foot, armed at all Points but his Helmet. Alighting from his Horse the Prince received him courteously, on which the Cardinal made known to him his Message, saying: *O, my fair Son! surely, if you and your Council do but rightly consider the Strength of the French King, you will not deny me Leave to endeavour to compose Matters between you, if I may.* The Prince then in full Vigour (being but Twenty-five Years and three Months old) answer'd him very pathetically: *Father, the Honour of me and my Country saved, I would willingly admit of any reasonable Conditions.* The Cardinal replied: *Sir, you say well, and I shall*

! Froissart, ib. *Math. Villani*, c. 10. ad c. 13.

shall make you Friends if I can; for it would be a great Pity, if so many noble and gallant Spirits, as are now in the Field on both Sides, should be suffer'd to join together in bloody Battle. The Cardinal, doubtful of the Event, rode immediately to King John, to whom he said: "Sir, you need not make any such great Haste to fight with your Enemies, for they cannot fly from you tho' they would, they are in such a Place: Wherefore, dear Sir, I heartily require you to forbear for this Day only, 'till To-morrow at Sunrise, that during this While we may endeavour to compose Matters handsomely." The King was hardly brought to yield to this, several of his Council being utterly against it. But the Cardinal ardently pressed it with such Zeal, and such fair and plausible Reasons, 'till the King was persuaded to agree to a Truce for the Time the Cardinal desired. Thereupon, there was presently pitched for the King a Pavillion of red Silk, richly embroidered with golden Lillies, and Leave was given for all Men to take up their Lodgings, except only the Marshal's Battails. The next Day being Sunday, the Cardinal was wholly employed in riding between the two Armies, in Hopes to reconcile the Parties; but the *French* King thinking of nothing, but having the Prince and all his Men at his Mercy, all his Endeavours were in vain. At first the *French* King said: "He would not agree to lose so great an Advantage, unless he might have four principal *Englishmen* at his Pleasure, and the Prince and all the rest to yield themselves to him to be ransomed." This insolent Demand was, with great Disdain, utterly

rejected by the Prince, who yet offered very largely, “ to restore all that ever he had won, since he  
 “ had marched out of *Bordeaux* that Summer, both  
 “ Towns and Castles, and to acquit all the Prison-  
 “ ers whom he had taken at that Season; and al-  
 “ so to swear, not to bear Arms in Person against  
 “ the *French* for the Space of seven Years after.”  
 But these Offers King *John* and his Council  
 would not accept, and at last stuck close to this  
 peremptory Demand: “ That the Prince and an  
 “ Hundred of his Knights should yield them-  
 “ selves to the King as Prisoners of War, all the  
 “ rest to be at Liberty. Otherwise he would  
 “ use the Advantage he had over them, to the  
 “ utter Destruction of them, the Prince’s Per-  
 “ son only excepted.” To this ignominious and  
 dishonourable Motion, the Prince with a Smile,  
 and a Turn of Indignation, reply’d: *That he hoped*  
*to conquer, but if not, that however he could die;*  
*but could never yield to lose his Honour, which he va-*  
*lued above his Life. That therefore whatever Condi-*  
*tions, tho’ never so secure, might cast the least Re-*  
*flections either on his own Honour, or his Father’s,*  
*or that of the English Nation, he utterly rejected*  
*them as infamous, and worse than Death.*

The good Cardinal of *Perigort* laboured till dark  
 Night on these Errands, and then returned to  
*Poitiers*, intending early the next Morning to re-  
 new his former Diligence. The *French* were at  
 full Ease with Plenty of Provisions, but the *Eng-*  
*lish* were in great Want of all Things, nor could  
 they forage without being attacked by the Enemy;  
 tho’, during all that Day, and the Night follow-  
 ing, they made great Ditches, and laid thick  
 Hedges

Hedges about their Archers, to render them more secure against the *French* Horse.

On the *Monday* Morning early, the Prince of *Wales* being ready armed among his Men, in the same Order of Battle that was agreed on, as were also the *French* on their Part to begin the Charge, they beheld the Cardinal again riding a-pace toward the *French* Army, thinking to prevail once more ; but the *French* were so incensed at the Delays he occasioned, that they menaced him, and stirred up the Soldiers against him, letting him know, that, if he came thither preaching any more, they would use his Eminency not so well as he expected. The Cardinal, finding all his honest Endeavours availed nothing, took leave of the King ; saying, <sup>m</sup> *Ego Pacem diligo, at, quum loquor, illi ad Bellum se parant : id est, I am for Peace ; but, when I speak thereof, they make themselves ready for War.* And so, riding directly to the Prince, he said, Sir, look to yourself as well as you can, for there is nothing else to be expected but Battle : I can find no Sign of a tractable Mind in the *French* King. The Prince to this replied, *It is the Resolution of us, and of all our People, to abide him ; and God defend the Right.* Amen, said the Cardinal, who, adding his Benediction, took his Leave of the Prince, and returned to *Poitiers*. But in his Company were certain Knights and Esqrs. Men of Arms, who stole away privily from their Master, and went to the *French* Army, and there chose the Chastellan of *Amposta* (one of the Cardinal's Retinue) for their Leader, together with the Lord *Robert Duras*

<sup>m</sup> *Psalms* 120, v. ult.



ras the Cardinal's Nephew ; and the rest of them were his Relations, or Domesticks.

The <sup>n</sup> *Black Prince*, seeing the *French King* disdained and slighted him and his Forces, was in full Expectation of an Engagement ; and mounting his Horse (on the Cardinal's leaving him) with an heroick Courage rode thro' every Rank of his Men, and spoke to them in this Manner : " Now, " Gentlemen, what tho' we be an inconsiderable " Company in Respect of our Enemies : Yet let " us not be abased for that : Since Victory consisteth not in the Multitude of People, but in " the Hands of God Almighty, to bestow it after his good Pleasure. If it please him that the " Day be ours, we shall be the most honoured and " renowned People in the World ; and, if the " worst happen, that we die in our just Quarrel, " it is but paying a Debt we all owe to Nature, " something sooner, but much more honourably : And I have the King my Father " and Brethren, and you have also valiant " Friends, Relations, and Countrymen left behind ; these will sufficiently revenge our Blood. " Wherefore, Sirs, for God's Sake I require you all " to be of good Courage, and to do your Devoirs heartily ; for, if it please God and St. George, " you shall see me this Day to perform the Part " of a good Knight, and to play the Man : " *For surely ° England shall never pay for my Ransom : I will either die or conquer.*

Thus the Prince expressed himself, with all the Fire of an exalted Mind ; and his Officers in their several Places, by their chearful Words and Looks,

ex-

<sup>n</sup> *Froisf. c. 162. fol. 81.* ° *Life of Lord Chandos 53. in Bibl. Cat.*

exceedingly animated their Soldiers. And, not above half an Hour before the *French* Army approached, the Earl of *Oxford* and the other principal Leaders of the Archers, with other of his Chiefs both of *England* and *Gascoigne*, surrounding him, he again encouraged them, saying, “ Having already had Experience of your several Courages and Conduct in many imminent Hazards of War, I acknowledge you (O Gentlemen of *England*) in nothing to have degenerated from the noblest of your Ancestors ; and you (our dear Friends of *Gascoigne*) to be as worthily descended from those your valiant and loyal Fathers, who have heretofore truly and gallantly served the King my Father, and his Predecessors, in that his ancient Dukedom. I see the Marks of generous Indignation in your Visage ; I see how highly you resent the Affront, that a King of *France* dare to despise those Courages, to which, as yet, no Labour ever seemed painful, no Army invincible, no Hill inaccessible, no Tower impregnable, no human Power formidable. I see in your Faces, my Lords and Gentlemen, the perfect Resemblance of those undaunted Fathers, whose Courage hath frequently foiled these haughty *Frenchmen*, hath won and wasted the Isle of *Cyprus*, hath tamed the *Syracusians*, *Calabrians*, *Saracens*, and *Palestinians* ; and hath taught *Scotland* to receive our Yoke, and *Ireland* to grow mild and tractable, and *Wales* to accept of our Laws.

“ Even Occasion itself, and Time, and Danger, and Despair have both sharpened the Wits of dull Men, and enhanced the Courages  
“ of

“ of the Fearful : How much more now should  
 “ Honour, the Love of your Country, and the  
 “ Desire of the wealthy Spoil of these *Frenchmen*,  
 “ provoke your noble Minds to surmount them-  
 “ selves, and to follow the laudable Examples of  
 “ your own Fathers.

“ Wherefore, follow your Standards with Reso-  
 “ lution, and obey your chief Leaders, both with  
 “ a willing Mind and unwearied Body ; that, if  
 “ Victory come with Life, we may still continue  
 “ in firm and mutual Friendship : But, if envi-  
 “ ous Fortune (which God forbid) should allot  
 “ that this Day we run the Race of all Flesh,  
 “ and that we end together both Life and La-  
 “ bour, assure yourselves, your Names shall not  
 “ want eternal Renown ; for Thirst whereof,  
 “ we also ourselves, together with these Gentle-  
 “ men our Friends and Companions, are all resol-  
 “ ved to drink of the same Cup with you.  
 “ And we doubt not (thro’ the Grace of God)  
 “ but that unto us it shall be a perpetual Name  
 “ and Glory, to have overcome, this Day, the  
 “ Nobility of *France*. For to be conquered  
 “ (which God forbid to be our Lot) is not to be  
 “ ascribed to the Greatness of Danger, but to the  
 “ Want of Courage to receive or repel that Dan-  
 “ ger.”

After which, perceiving a Hill near him, sur-  
 rounded at the Foot of the Ascent with Hedges  
 and Ditches, on the one Side whereof ran a Pas-  
 ture Field, bounded with many rough and high  
 Bushes, and on the other Vines, the rest be-  
 ing a spacious Plain. And Part of the *French* Ar-  
 my being on the further Side of this Hill, where  
 great

great and low Vallies, and a Piece of marshy Ground being between them and the *English*, he commanded the Lord *John Greilly* Capital of *Busche*, secretly to coast about under Covert of the Mountain with three hundred Men of Arms, and as many Archers on Horseback, and, coming behind the Enemy in the Heat of Action, to strike in on their Backs. The Capital accordingly, having found a narrow Passage, entered the Valley, and ascended the Hill; where, <sup>a</sup> among the Bushes, he hid his Men, taking Advantage of the Place till the Armies should be engaged. All the rest of the Prince's ordering his Forces King *John* knew; but, this not being till just on the Engagement, he was quite ignorant of it: And tho' the *English* stood so close within a small Space of Ground, that, to the *French* Spies, they appeared but one main Body, yet they were either deceived, or the Prince afterwards altered his Measures, and divided his Men into three Brigades, besides that Detachment under the Capital of *Busche*. His Camp was divided from the Plain where the *French* Army lay, with a long Row of Hedges, and an Intrenchment flung up by the *English*, one End whereof reached down to the aforesaid Marsh, and the other to the Hill; on the Side of which stood the Earl of *Warwick* Captain of the Van, and on the other Side of the Hedge, about a Stone-cast from the Lane, stood the Reer, commanded by the Earls of *Salisbury* and *Suffolk*. At the End of the Lane was a large Gap, within which was the Prince of *Wales*, with the main Body on Foot among

<sup>p</sup> *Froissart*, cap. 161.

<sup>q</sup> *Stow*, p. 261.

<sup>r</sup> *Froissart*, ib.



among the Vines, having closed the weaker Part of the Field with the Carriages.

According to the Disposition agreed to by the *French* King, his Marshals, with the three Hundred chosen Horse of Knights and Esqrs. began the Attack on the *English* Archers, and made a gallant and resolute Entrance into the Way, where on each Side the Hedges were thick lined with Bows ; who, when they saw them entered, poured in their Shot on them in the Flank, and wounded many of them, and their Horses ; who, feeling the sharp Arrows sticking in their Bodies, and flying about their Ears, flounced and tumbled on their Masters, and some turned back \* on their Followers ; so that the Confusion was great among them, as was also the Slaughter. However, some of them with much Difficulty passed the Archers, and came up to the Horse of Archers, that stood in the Prince's Front, where they met with a warm Reception ; and being but few in Number, and not seconded, those, who were not slain with the Arrows, were cut in Pieces by a Troop of *English* Men of Arms sent against them. The *German* Curassiers, that were to have sustained them, hung back, and the Lord *Eustace D'Ambreticourt*, being on Horseback in the *English* Front, laid his Spear in his Rest ; and, riding in among them, was so roughly met by the Lord *Lewis van Coucibras*, that both of them were unhorsed ; but the *German*, being wounded in the Shoulder, could not get up so soon as Sir *Eustace*, who, rising quickly, went with his Sword drawn to the Lord *Lewis* as he lay on the Ground, but five other *German* Knights

\* *Stow*, p. 261.

Knights falling on him, with their Spears, bore him to the Earth ; and, the Goodness of his Armour preserving his Body, he was without any Hurt taken Prisoner, and brought to the Earl of *Nassau*, and afterwards was rescued, being found bound fast to a Chair.

In the mean Time, the Lord *James Audeley*, with his four valiant Esqrs. were in the Front of the Battle, doing Wonders in Arms (as our Historians write) till by incredible Prowess he came to the *French* Marshal's Standard, where he fought with the Lord *Arnold d'Endregan*, and the Archers, plying his Brigade on each Flank, put them in the utmost Disorder ; which being perceived by some *English* Men of Arms, they dash'd in furiously among them, and beat them down, killing and taking what Prisoners they pleased ; among which was the Marshal *d'Endregan* himself. But the Lord *James Audeley* and his Esqrs. would not trouble themselves with any Prisoners, minding only to hold together in making their Way thro' their Enemies, 'till, by their extraordinary Valour, they broke thro' the whole Battail (*i. e.* Brigade) causing no small Slaughter where-ever they went, as *Walsingham* writes.

The Lord *John Clermont*, the other *French* Marshal, thinking to enter the Gap at the Lane End, with Intention to attack the Flank of our Van, was met by the Earls of *Salisbury* and *Suffolk*, who led the *English* Reer, and, beholding his Motion, guess'd at his Design, so that they sustain'd the first main Strefs of the Battle ; and so well did they perform with Sword, Spear, and Battle-Ax, that

that the Marshal *Clermont*, who valiantly fought some Time, was at last beaten down, and the *English*, having so many to contend with, would take none to Ransom, so that he was slain with many others. In this Brigade of the Marshals, was *William* Earl of *Douglas* <sup>u</sup> at the Head of three Thousand *Scots*, who for the most Part <sup>w</sup> were slain at this Time, with these Captains of Name, Sir *Andrew Stuart*, Sir *Robert Gourdon*, Sir *Andrew Haliburton*, and Sir *Andrew Vaux*; Earl *Douglas*, being wounded with an Arrow in the Groin, fled out of the Field, fearing to be taken by the *English*; but the Lord *Archibald Douglas*, Son to the Lord *James Douglas*, who died in *Spain*, was taken Prisoner, and let go at a small Ransom. The *English* Archers that lined the Trenches, shooting over the Hedges, did <sup>x</sup> great Execution, and principally caused that Confusion, whereby the Earl of *Salisbury* with the Men of Arms so entirely prevail'd. With this terrible Slaughter of the Marshals Brigades, those who were behind, not being able to advance, were forced back in great Confusion, on their second Battail (or main Body) under the Duke of *Normandy*, the *English* pressing on them before; and at the same Time the Capital of *Busche* was on their Backs, with his three Hundred Archers and as many Men of Arms. When the *English* saw the Banner of *St. George*, and the Capital's Ensign, they were revived with fresh Courage, and the *French* so strangely confounded, that immediately their main Body, led by the Duke of *Normandy* and King *John's* three Sons, began to be

<sup>u</sup> *Hollinshed's Hist. of Scotl.* p. 243.  
*Theatre of Honour.* c 3. p. 80.

<sup>w</sup> *Favine le Parisien*

<sup>x</sup> *Stow*, p. 261.

be shaken. Which is chiefly attributed to the Intrepidity and Force of the *English* Archers, who shot so thick on Front, Flank, and Reer; that the *French* knew not on which Side to guard themselves.

The Lord *John Chandos*, who was fam'd for his Conduct and Valour, had never yet stirred from the Prince's Side; and seeing that the Van of the *French* was wholly discomfited, and their main Body began to be disorder'd and broken, he said to the Prince: "Now, my Lord, take your Horse, and ride forth upon the *French*, the Day is yours; God is now on your Hand; let us march directly to the *French* King's Battail, for there lies all the Strefs of the Matter: I verily believe his high Courage will not suffer him to flinch, so that I doubt not, by the Grace of God and St. *George*, we shall win him, provided he be well fought with. And, Sir, I heard you say, that, this Day, we should see you play the Part of a good Knight." On that the Prince mounted his Horse, commanding all his Men to do the like, and said aloud: *Let us go forth: You shall not see me, this Day, to turn my Back: Advance Banner, in the Name of God and St. George.* Sir *Walter Woodland* his Standard-bearer moved as commanded, and the Men of Arms mounting their Horses, and closing together triumphantly, cried, *St. George Guienne*: And at that Time the Battle wax'd hotter than ever, over the whole Field.

As the Prince was entering among his Enemies, he saw, on his Right-hand under a little Bush, the Lord *Robert Duras* lying dead, with his Banner



by him, and ten or twelve of his Men about him, on which he said to two of his Esquires and three Archers: *Here, Sirs, take up the Body of this Knight upon a Target, and present it from me to the Cardinal of Perigort, and tell him I salute him by that Token.* Which was done as the Prince commanded, who found (as he had been informed) that the Cardinal's Men were in the Field against him. And presently after the Chastellain of *Amposta*, who was the chief Captain of the Cardinal's Men, being taken Prisoner, the Prince gave Command that his Head should be stricken off. But the Lord *Chandos* said, "Sir, be patient for a While, and let us intend now to a greater Matter, for perhaps the Cardinal will so excuse this Affair, as to give you Satisfaction." This pacified the Prince, who presently after came up to the Duke of *Athens* Constable of *France*, where he found the *English* and *French* already warmly engaged, fighting in Companies, and crying, *Mon-joy St. Dennis*, and the *English*, who were in a close Body, returning, *St. George Guienne*. But, on the Prince's coming up, the Duke of *Athens* was presently slain, and all his Men defeated; after which meeting with the *Germans* under the Earls of *Nassau*, *Saltsburgh*, and *Neydo*, they were immediately shatter'd and broken, the Earl of *Nassau* being taken Prisoner, and the other two slain, with many other Knights of their Company, few or none in that Hurry being taken to Ransom. And here the Lord *Eustace D'Ambreticourt* was found tied to a Chair (as before-mentioned) and rescued and remounted by his own Men, and in Revenge did many worthy Feats of Arms.

The Duke of *Normandy* also with the main Body, having the Capital of *Busche* on his Reer, and beholding also the victorious Prince of *Wales* approaching, thought it safest not to abide him, but quitted the Field as soon as he could, with two other of the King's Sons, and more than eight Hundred Spears in their Company who had not struck one Stroke that Day. The King's three Sons took their Way to *Charvigny*, but the Lord *John* of *Landas* and the Lord *Theobald* of *Bodenay*, who were appointed to wait on the Dauphin, took their Leave of him, after they had conducted him a long League from the Place of Battle, intending to return to the Field again. In their Way thither they met with the Duke of *Orleans*, and with him a great Company, who had also left the Field with clear Hands.

On the Dauphin's Departure, there came one to the *French* King and said, "My Lord, the Field is fallen to the *English*, and your eldest Son is withdrawn out of the Battle." At which the King said with an Oath: "That he, for his Part, would not forsake the Field that Day, without a notable Revengé; unless that he were either taken or slain." And thereupon commanded the Standard-bearers to move forward.

The Prince of *Wales* perceiving two great Bodies of armed Men, marching towards his small Company, one, who was near him, was so extremely discouraged, that he could not forbear crying out: <sup>2</sup> *Alas! We poor Wretches are overcome.* The Prince checqu'd his Cowardice with these Words: *Thou liest, thou dastardly Fellow. For thou canst*

G 2

†

not

<sup>1</sup> *Stow*, p. 262.<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

not say, that we can be overcome, as long as I live. The *French* King with his Forces came fiercely on the *English*, consisting of eight Thousand Men of Arms besides Foot; but at that Time, the rest of the *French* being cleared, the *English* Marshals with the Earls of *Warwick*, *Salisbury*, and *Suffolk*, with their wearied Men joined the Prince, having first supplied the exhausted Quivers of their Archers, with Arrows drawn from the Bodies of dead and dying Enemies. And, thus armed with Necessity and Hope from their prosperous Beginnings, a few weary and wounded Men went on boldly to engage with a numerous and fresh Army. The Fight was desperate, and for a While well maintain'd on both Sides, for the *French* King's Presence armed his Men with deeper Resolution. The King and his Son *Philip* happen'd to oppose the *English* Marshals, the Earls of *Warwick*, *Salisbury*, and *Suffolk*, to whom were now joined all the *Gascoigne* Lords, as the Capital of *Buscbe*, the Lord of *Pamiers*, the Lord of *Mucidan*, and the rest aforementioned.

To the *French* King there came back, Time enough, the Lord *John* of *Landas* and the Lord *Bodenay*, who with their Men alighted on Foot, and with great Valour entered into the Thickest of the Battle. On one Hand of the King fought the Duke of *Bourbon*, accompanied with many valiant Knights of *Bourbonnois* and *Picardy*. And not far from them were the *Poictevens*, with the Lord of *Pons*, the Lord of *Partenay*, the Lord of *Dampmartin*, the Lord of *Montalboto*, the Lord of *Surgeres*, the Lord *John de Santerre*, the Lord *Guichard D'Angle*, the Lord of *Argenton*, the Lord of *Lymiers*,

*Lymiers*, the Lord of *Montendre*, the Lord *James* of *Beaujeu*, and the Lord *de Chastel Vilaine*. In another Quarter fought the Earl of *Ventadour*, the Earl of *Montpenser*, the Lord *James* of *Bourbon*, the Lord *John* of *Artois*, and the Lord *James* his Brother, the Lord *Arnold de Cervoies* commonly called the Archpriest, who was clad in the Armour of the young Earl of *Alençon*. There remained also in the Field the Lord *de la Torre*, the Lord of *Chalenton*, the Lord of *Montagre*, the Lord of *Rochefort*, the Lord *de la Charre*, the Lord *Dabone*, the Lord *Delmal*, the Lord *Norvel*, the Lord *Piers Buffiers*, the Lord *William Nesle*, the Lord *Arnold Revel*, the Lord *Geffry de St. Dizien*, the Lord *Guyventon de Chambley*, the Lord *Eustace de Ribemont*, the Lord of *Holey*, the Lord of *Monfalt*, and several others; and some Place here with more Probability the Earl *Douglas* and his *Scots*, who yet suffered as before-mentioned.

On the Part of the *English*, the Prince of *Wales* was no less conspicuous for his Valour than for his Place and Quality, performing both the Duties of an experienced and careful Commander, and also of an approved and valiant Soldier, adventuring, trying, and performing all that might be expected from the most exalted Courage. His Captains likewise behav'd with much Bravery and Resolution, and in particular, the Lord *John Chandos*, for his Conduct and unwearied Valour, merited no small Encomiums. But it's impossible to recount the many noble Exploits that the Nobility of *England* performed. The Earls of *Oxford*, *Salisbury*, and *Suffolk* made themselves exceedingly remarkable,



able, and <sup>b</sup> the Earl of *Warwick* fought so long, and with such Fury, that his Hand was galled with the Exercise of his Sword and Pole-Ax. Among other Prisoners he took was *William de Melun* Archbishop of *Sens*, for whose Ransom he had no less than <sup>c</sup> eight Thousand Pounds. But all the Courage that Day shew'd had been to no Purpose, had it not been seconded by the extraordinary Gallantry of the *English* Archers, who behaved themselves with wonderful Constancy, Alacrity, and Resolution, whereby in a Manner all the *French* Divisions received their first Foil, being by their Arrows so galled and dismayed, that in such Confusion they were easily broke by the Men of Arms. The Lord *James Audeley*, followed by his four Esquires, fought all Day among the thickest Ranks of his Enemies, receiving many Wounds both in the Body and Visage, as long as his Strength and Breath would hold; but when toward the End of the Battle his Esquires perceived, that for Loss of Blood he began to faint, they carried him by main Force out of the Field, and laid him under an Hedge hard by, where they unarmed him, and refreshed him, binding up his Wounds as well as they could.

The *French* King is allowed by all to have performed the Office of a valiant Knight; insomuch, that it is said he had in all Probability gain'd the Victory, if the Fourth Part of his Men had followed his Example. <sup>d</sup> He was on Foot in the Battle defending himself, and offending his Enemies with a weighty Ax of Steel in his Hands, which he

<sup>b</sup> *Dugd. Warw.* p. 317. and *M. S.* in *Bibl. Bodl. Cant.* K. 84.  
<sup>c</sup> *Pat.* 37. E. 3. p. 1. m. 25. <sup>d</sup> *Froissart.* c. 164.

he used with much Praise. It is said<sup>c</sup> that Prince *Philip* his youngest Son also fought at this Time so well by his Father's Side, and in his Defence, that tho' he was at last taken Prisoner with him, yet, for his forward Courage in War, he obtained the Sirname of *Hardy*. He was the youngest of four Sons, whereof the Eldest was then but twenty Years old. Yet it might be, his Resolution and Gallantry gave such Hopes as to obtain the Title of *Hardy* from that complimenting Age, which called *Philip* of *Valois*, the *Fortunate*, and this King *John*, the *Good*, and his Son *Charles*, whom no Truce nor Oaths could bind, the *Wise*. But by another Account, much more probable, tho' not so generally attested, it appears he came by the Sirname of *Hardy* after this Manner: <sup>f</sup> When he was Prisoner in *England*, his Father King *John*, being at King *Edward's* Table at Dinner, this young Prince, among the Nobility of both Nations, was appointed to wait; and, on a young *English* Nobleman's serving King *Edward* before his Father, he hit him a Box on the Ear, saying: *What, dare you serve the King of England first, when the King of France sits at the Table.* The Nobleman drew his Dagger, and offered to strike the Prince, but King *Edward* loudly forbad him, and said to the Royal Youth, *Vous estes Phillippe le Hardi*, i. e. thou art *Philip* the *Hardy*; but to return from whence I have digressed: After a stout Resistance this last Army of the *French* was broken by the extraordinary Courage of the Prince of *Wales*, and a great Slaughter ensued, all the best Men being either taken or slain. *Peter* Duke of

G 4

Bour-

<sup>c</sup> *Paul Æmyl.* p. 287. <sup>f</sup> *James Meyer*, apud *Hollinshead*, p. 976.

*Bourbon*, the Duke of *Athens* Constable of *France*, the Viscount of *Chalons*, the Marshal *Clermont*, the Viscount of *Beaufe*, the Lord *Eustace Ribemont*, the Lord *Guischard de Beaujeu*, the Lord *Reginald de Carrian*, the Lord *William Nesle*, the Lord *de la Torre*, the Lord of *Castle-Guillon*, the Lord of *Argenton*, and others of the highest Quality, to the Number of Fifty, were slain; besides the two Earls of *Germany*, and others before-mentioned, tho' not a few chose to save themselves by Flight. But these Forces headed by the *French King* were so numerous, that several Companies still kept together, and the King and some Lords about him fought to the last very courageously, and disputed the Point so well, as if they alone intended to atone for the Cowardice of those, who by turning their Backs had lost the Day.

But when the *English* and *Gascoigne* Lords, by their uncommon Valour, had beat down the Royal Standard of *France*, and slain the Bearer thereof; and while Numbers, discouraged thereby, fled toward *Poitiers*, they push'd on the Victory so home, that now they won the last Stake also. In the first Breaking of the Press near King *John*, were taken the Lord *James* of *Bourbon* Earl of *Pontbeiu*, the Lord *John* of *Artois* Earl of *Ewe*, and *Charles* of *Artois* his Brother Earl of *Tanker-ville*, all under the Banner of the Lord *John Greilly*, Capital of *Busche* and Knight of the Garter. There were likewise taken the Captain of *Poitiers*, the Seneschal of *St. Omers*, the Lord of *Bodenay*, the Lord of *Ventador*, the Earl of *Vendosme*, the Earl of *Mons*, and the Lord *Arnold Cer-voles*, commonly called the Archpriest, grievously wound-

wounded, and others, Knights, and Esquires. At which Time many, seeing the Slaughter, left the Battle, and were closely pursued by a Party of *English* and *Gascoigners*, even to the Gates of *Poitiers*, where Numbers were slain ; for those who defended the City, seeing the Enemies so near, closed the Gates on their Friends to save themselves. And in the Street before the Gate the *French* being neither able to fly, nor to resist, <sup>s</sup> yielded themselves as far as they could discern an *Englishman*, whereby several Archers had each of them four, five, or six Prisoners. The Lord of *Pons*, a great Baron of *Poitou*, was there beaten down and slain, with many other Lords, Knights, and Esquires.

In the mean Time, those who staid by their King were hard put to it. There were taken about his Person the Earl of *Roche-coüart*, the Viscount of *Narbon*, the Lord *Xaintogne*, the Lord of *Montendre*, the Lord *John Santerre*, reputed one of the valiantest Knights in *France*, but he was so much hurt that he never had his Health after. There was found among the Dead the Lord *Guiscard D'Angle*, who was after recovered of his Wounds, and leaving the *French* Side became a valiant Servant to King *Edward*, and, at the Coronation of his Successor, was created Earl of *Huntington*. But he fought with singular Valour by the *French* King's Side. The Lord of *Pompador* was taken Prisoner by the Lord *Bartholomew Burghersh*, and the Earl of *Dampmartin* was slain by the Lord *Reginald Cobham*. The valiant Lord *Geffry Charney*, who bore the King's Standard Royal, was wounded to Death, and with him it fell

<sup>s</sup> *Froissart*, c. 164.



fell to the Ground. Then every Man pressed hard to take the King, and such as knew him cried out, *Sir, yield yourself, or you are dead.* But Sir *Dennis* of *Morbeque* a Knight of *Artois*, who had left *France* for a Murder he had committed at *St. Omers*, and had serv'd King *Edward* for about five Years, being near the King, got in among those about him, and by main Strength made up to him, and said in good *French*: *Sir, yield your Person.* The King, looking on him, said: *To whom shall I yield; and where is my Cousin the Prince of Wales, if I might see him I would speak with him.* Sir *Dennis* answer'd: *Sir, he is not hereabout; but, if it please you to yield to me, I shall bring you to him.* Why, who are you then, said the King? *Sir,* (said he) *I am Dennis of Morbeque, a Knight of Artois; but I now serve the King of England; because I am banished the Realm of France, and have forfeited all I had there.* On which the King gave him his Right-hand Gauntlet, saying: *Unto you I yield myself.* But this was not satisfactory to several who had made up to the King before Sir *Dennis*, and therefore a great Tumult and Crowding was still about him and his youngest Son *Philip*, who shared in his Father's Fortune; and the King was taken by Force from Sir *Dennis*.

It appears that *John de Pelham* (afterwards knighted) was the first that came up to him, and laid hold of his Belt, but Sir *Roger de la Warr* got his Sword; and in Memory of their Services, and the Honour thus attained, the Descendants<sup>h</sup> of Sir *John de Pelham* constantly used the Buckles of a

Belt

<sup>h</sup> Ex Script. in Stemmate fact. An. 1632. per *John Philpot Somers* Feacial.

Belt as a Badge, and in their Seals : And the Descendants of Sir *Roger de la Warr* had also the Crampet, or Chape of a Sword, for a Badge ; from whom the present Lord *de la Warr* is maternally descended. And, from the said Sir *John de Pelham*, his Grace the Duke of *Newcastle* is lineally descended in the Male-Line. And, as his Ancestors, from that Time, have born the Buckles of a Belt sometimes as a Crest, and in their Seals, his Grace continues it to this Day : All which is evident from the old Deeds of his Grace's Family, which I had the Honour to peruse. The Figure <sup>k</sup> of this Sir *John Pelham* in compleat Armour (over which, on a Surcoat, is his Arms, three Pelicans vulning themselves) was painted in Glas, in the Chapter House at *Canterbury* ; whereby it's probable he was a Benefactor to that Cathedral, or was buried there. It is also a further Proof of his being in the Battle of *Poictiers*, and that he was a Person of Eminence and Integrity, for that *John de Veer*, Earl of *Oxford*, who so greatly distinguish'd himself there, had such an Esteem for him, <sup>i</sup> that by his last Will and Testament, dated at *Bentley* in *Essex*, on *Friday* the Feast of *all Saints*, 33. *Ed.* 3. constituted him one of his Executors. Likewise, for his Prudence, Valour, and Fidelity, *John of Gaunt*, Duke of *Lancaster*, appointed him to attend him in his Wars, <sup>m</sup> as his Esqr. He was knighted before 43. *Ed.* 3. for, on *July* 29, that Year, Sir *John Sutton*, Knt. and *Thomas Turwe* constituted <sup>n</sup> Sir *John Pelham* their Attorney, to

<sup>i</sup> *Leigh's Accidence of Armory*, fol. 51.      <sup>k</sup> Ex Script. præd.  
<sup>l</sup> Ex Regist. vocat *Ilrip.* p. 159. in Offic. Princip. *Cantuar.*      <sup>m</sup> Vis.  
*de Com. Suff.* in Bibl. *Harley*, Not. 65. B. 10. p. 61.      <sup>n</sup> Ex Autog.  
*penes prænob. Tho. Ducem Novi Castri.*

to deliver Seisin of the Mannor of *Laughton*, and Hundred of *Sbiplake*, in the County of *Sussex*, to *Thomas, de Veer*, Earl of *Oxford* and Chamberlain of *England*. Which Mannor of *Laughton*, and Hundred of *Sbiplake*, came by Descent from *Maud*, Wife of *John de Veer*, Earl of *Oxford*; who was one of the Daughters and Coheirs of *Giles*, Lord *Badillermere*,<sup>o</sup> who first by Grant, 12. Nov. 11. Ed. 2. for his good Services, had the Reversion thereof after the Death of *John de Ulvedale*; and the Year following, in Consideration of his good and laudable Services, had a further Grant of the Premises; which are now Part of the Possessions of his Grace the Duke of *Newcastle*, being purchased by Sir *John Pelham*, Knight of the *Bath* (Son of the before-mentioned Sir *John Pelham*) in 2. H. 4. of *Maud*, Wife of the aforesaid *Thomas de Veer*, Earl of *Oxford*.

So material a Circumstance as taking the King of *France* Prisoner, which our Historians ascribe to Sir *Dennis Morbeque*, will, I hope, excuse this Digression; and I shall now proceed to relate, how the *French* King was brought to the Prince of *Wales*. After the Victory, the Prince ordered his Standard to be set on a high Bush, and a Retreat to be sounded; and, in the mean Time, refresh'd himself, with such Lords as were about him, whose Number still encreased as they returned from the Chace. And when his two Marshals came to him, he demanded of them, whether they knew what was become of the *French* King, to which they made this Answer: *Sir, we hear of nothing certain as to that Point, but we verily believe he is either*  
*dead*

<sup>o</sup> Ibid.

dead or taken ; for we are sure he is not gone out of the Field. On which, the Prince said to the Earl of Warawick and the Lord Cobham, *Sirs, I require you to ride forth, and learn what you can as to this Matter ; that, at your Return, we may know the Certainty.* Whereupon they mounted their Horses again, and, departing with an hundred Spears, they rode up a Hill, to have a clear View over the Field ; and then they discerned a Company of Men of Arms, marching very warily, and close together. Among these was the *French King* on Foot in great Peril ; for the *English* and *Gascoigners* had by Force rescued him from Sir *Dennis Morbeque*, and were now his Masters : And some said, *I have taken him* ; nay, said others, *but I, and I, and I have taken him.* And thus the chief Men, and those of most Power, contended about him : Therefore, to avoid the Danger that might ensue, he said, *Pray, Gentlemen, contend not thus about me, but conduct me and my Son civilly to my Cousin, the Prince ; and concern not yourselves who it was that took me : For I am so great a Lord, as to be able to enrich you all, who make any such Pretence.* These Words somewhat pacified them, but as they went along, they could not forbear talking about taking of the King. The aforesaid Lords of *England* coming up, and hearing a Noise and Strife among them, inquired into the Cause : On which, Answer was made, *It is for the French King, who is here taken Prisoner ; and there are more than ten Knights and Esquires, who challenge to themselves the Taking of him.* On which, the two Lords commanded aloud in the Prince's Name, that no Man whatsoever be so hardy, to make  
any



any Noise, or to approach the King's Person, unless they were so ordered. And alighting, Way was opened to them; and, after doing Reverence, &c. to the King, they conducted him and his Son in Safety to the Prince of *Wales*.

The Prince of *Wales*, in this Battle, gained a double Victory; the one by his Sword, and the other by his Courtesy. While the Earl of *Warwick* and the Lord *Cobham* were enquiring after the *French King*, he demanded of the Lords about him, if any of them knew what was become of the Lord *Audeley*; and being told he was grievously wounded, and lay in a Litter hard by, he thus expressed himself: *By my Faith, for his Hurt I am right sorry; go and know if he may be brought thither, or else I will go and see him there as he is.* Then two Knights came to the Lord *Audeley*, and said: *Sir, the Prince desireth greatly to see you, &c.* *Ah, Sir,* (he replied) *I thank the Prince, when he thinketh on so poor a Knight as I am:* Then he called eight of his Servants, and caused them to bear him in his Litter, to the Place where the Prince was. Then the Prince took him in his Arms and kissed him, and made him great Cheer, and said: *Sir James, I ought greatly to honour you, for, by your Valiance, you have this Day atchieved the Grace and Renown of us all; and ye are reputed the most valiant of all other.* *Ah, Sir!* said the Knight, *Ye say as it pleaseth you; I would it were so, and if I have this Day any Thing advanced myself, to serve you, and accomplish the Vow that I made, it ought not to be reputed to my own Prowess.* *Sir James,* (said the Prince) *I, and all ours, take*  
you

*you in this Journey for the best Doer in Arms. And, to the Intent to furnish you the better to pursue the Wars, I retain you for ever to be my Knight, with five Hundred Marks of yearly Revenues, the which I shall assign you of my Heritage in England. Sir, said the Knight, God grant me to deserve the great Goodness that you shew me. And so he took his Leave of the Prince, for he was right feeble, &c. Froissart further relates, <sup>a</sup> that he gave to his four Esquires the five Hundred Marks Revenue, which when the Prince heard of his Gift, he thanked him for so doing, and gave him six Hundred Marks per Annum more.*

Immediately after the Lord *Audeley* had left the Prince, the Earl of *Warwick* and the Lord *Cobham* return'd, and presented the *French King* to him. He received the Captive Monarch with all the Reverence and Respect, as tho' he had visited him in his full Glory, and conquer'd him again by true and princely Courtesy; comforting him by the Examples of like Fortunes in War, and assuring him of all fair Treatment according to his Dignity. He presently caused Wine and Spices to be brought forth for his Refreshment, and served himself, with great Humility. At Night he caused <sup>r</sup> a magnificent Supper to be provided in his Pavillion, for the *French King*, and others who were Prisoners of the highest Quality. He obliged the King to sit in his own Chair of State at the Head of the Table, and his Son *Philip* by him, as also the Lord *James* of *Bourbon*, Earl of *Pontbeiu*; the Lord *John* of *Artois*, Earl of *Ewe*, and the Lord *Charles* of *Artois* his Brother, Earl of *Tan-*  
*kerville*,

<sup>a</sup> p. 84.<sup>r</sup> *Froissart*, cap. 168.

*kerville*, being all of the Blood Royal of *France*: And the Earl of *Estampes*, the Earl of *Graville*, the Lord of *Partenay*, and some few more sat at the King's Table; and other Lords, Knights, and Esquires of *France*, such, as were not wounded, sat at other Tables. And, all Supper Time, the Prince would suffer no Person \* to serve the King but himself, and for all the King could say would not sit down.

He endeavour'd to raise his Spirits by treating him in the most humble and respectful Manner he could think of; and when he still perceived by the King's Countenance, that he was too much cast down, he, with a Spirit and Generosity not parallell'd, made this Address to him. †

*Sir, there is no Cause, that you, who are the most brave and valiant among Christian Kings, should continue thus pensive and troubled: Altho' at this Time your Arms have not been favoured by him, in whose Dispose all Battles are. For still your Generosity is acknowledged, your Dignity preserved, and your Majesty held sacred, and whatsoever else was truly yours remaineth still entire, neither to be violated, nor impaired by Time or any other Force. God Almighty hath ordained, that as all other Things, so the Fortune of War should remain in his Hands alone. Your Progenitors have atchieved many glorious Enterprizes, as well by Sea as by Land: The whole Compass of Europe, all the East, all Realms and Countries both far and near, are filled with the Trophies and Victories of France. The Faith and Grandeur*

\* *Math. Villani. cap. 20. Mezeray, Froissart, &c.* † *Du Chesne, p. 678. Paul Aemyl. p. 287. Hollinsb. Engl. Chron. p. 960. apud quos omnes tota hæc Oratio.*

*Grandeur of the Christian Name, have by your Predecessors and their Subjects, been defended and propagated against the most mighty and puissant Captains of the Infidels. Your Valour and the Reputation of your Arms are celebrated and renowned thro' the whole World: There is no Nation that doth not confess its Obligations to the French, and no People that may not yet expect to be beholding to their Favours.*

*Perhaps, among so many innumerable Triumphs, one or two Battles have succeeded a little otherwise than you would: The usual Instability of Fortune would have it so, which sometimes baffles the Force of Multitudes, and conquers the Opposition of Men, Horse, and Armour. But it lies in the Power of your own Magnanimity to harden your Soul against Adversity, and to keep your Mind still unconquer'd.*

*Nor shall this Day detract any Thing from you or yours; for as for my Part I promise you, that this Realm of France in which we are, and which hath produced and nourished many of my Progenitors, shall find me grateful to Her, and mindful of my Original; and toward your Majesty (if you will permit me to glory in that Title) a most humble and respectful Kinsman.*

*There are many Reasons to preserve Love and Friendship betwixt you and my Father, which I hope will be not a little prevalent: For I know well the most intimate Thoughts and Affections of his Mind; and that you will easily come to a reasonable Agreement with him. And, as for me, may he then refuse to own me for his Son, when I cease to hold you in the same Degree of Reverence, Honour, and Respect, which I owe unto his own Person.*



This uncommon Submission in a Conqueror, a young Prince little more than twenty-five Years of Age, surprized the *French* Lords, who, seeing him so humble in so high a Gale of Prosperity, said softly among themselves, " *That he had spoken nobly, and that, in all Probability, he would prove a most accomplish'd Prince, if God would grant him to live, and to persevere in the same good Fortune.*

King *John* was rous'd at the Prince's Compliments, and, finding <sup>w</sup> he had fallen into the Hands of a most obliging Conqueror, said: <sup>x</sup> *'Tho' it hath been our Chance to fall into an inconsolable Sorrow, yet, for all that (kind Cousin) we think it becomes us to smother our Grievs, as much as we may, since tho' by the Law of Arms, and the Chance of War, we be under the Subjection of another; yet it is under so worthy a Prince as yourself, by whom to be vanquish'd is no Dishonour, especially since we were not, as Cowards or faint-hearted Runnagates, taken in Flight, or lying hid in a Corner; but in the open Field with Sword in Hand, where we were as ready to die, as to live in Defence of Justice.* The <sup>y</sup> Prince replied: *Sir, methinks you for your Part ought rather to rejoice, tho' all Things did not fall out according to your Wish: For, this very Day, you have won the high Renown of Personal Valour above all others that bore Arms on your Side. Sir, I say not this to flatter your Sorrow, or to deride you; for all the Captains on our Side, that saw what every one did, are unanimously agreed by just Sentence to award the Prize and Chaplet of Eminence unto your Majesty's Person.* This all the *English* Lords, who were present

<sup>w</sup> *Froissart*, cap. 163.

<sup>x</sup> *P. Æmyl.* p. 288.

<sup>y</sup> *Stow*, p. 263.

<sup>z</sup> *Froissart*, c. 163. fol. 846.

present with the Prince, sincerely protested on their Honours. And then some *French* Lords, in Civility, speaking of the Lord *James Audeley*, whom they heard to be grievously wounded, King *John* said: <sup>z</sup> *That among all the other valiant Worthies, whom he had seen and heard of that Day on either Part, he did both greatly admire, and more especially approve of the noble and courageous Exploits of that valiant Lord.* And more than this he did not speak all Supper Time, except some short obliging Words, which now and then he utter'd to the Prince, who all the While waited at his Elbow. And this generous Behaviour of our *English* Heroe hath been acknowledged by all the *French* Writers.

This ever memorable Victory was obtained on the Nineteenth of *September*, 1356, beginning <sup>a</sup> about Nine in the Morning, and ended a little after Noon. But it was Night e're the *English* return'd from the Chace. There were slain at that Time (as the *French* as well as the *English* Historians agree) the chief and the most valiant of the Nobility of *France*, <sup>b</sup> among whom were two Dukes, nineteen Earls, five Thousand (or, as some say, six Thousand Men of Arms) those of the meaner Sort not being number'd, tho' <sup>c</sup> some reckon them about eight Thousand more. The Slaughter was much less here than at *Cressy*, the *English* being not a Third so numerous, and the Prince would not too far pursue the Chace, 'till he had

H 2

com-

<sup>z</sup> *Stow*, p. 263.    <sup>a</sup> *Rot. de Tract. Pacis Franc.* 34. E. 3. m.  
<sup>1.</sup> <sup>b</sup> *Barns*, p. 513. *Froissart*, c. 164. *Du Chesne*, *Askmole*, *Fabian*, &c.    <sup>c</sup> *Walsingham*, p. 164. *Froissart*, c. 164. *Pol. Vergil*, p. 381. *Mexeray*, p. 45. *Askmole*, p. 672.

completed the Victory, by which Time all of the common Sort had quitted the Field, and most of the Quality were either slain or taken. The Place of Battle was left free to the *English*, the dead Bodies to rely at the Dispose of the Conquerors, and more than <sup>d</sup> an Hundred warlike Ensigns were brought away in Triumph. When all were return'd from the Chace, they found they had twice as many Prisoners as themselves, whereof, besides the *French* King and his Son, there were seventeen Earls; and Barons Knights and Esquires, to the Number of <sup>e</sup> one Thousand five Hundred, or as others say <sup>f</sup> two Thousand Men of Arms. Therefore, because of the great Charge and Danger of keeping so many, several of them were put immediately to Ransom in the Field; and so courteous were the *English* and *Gascoigners*, that many were let go on their *Faith and Troth*, to return between that and *Christmas* to *Bordeaux*, with their appointed Ransoms, which were very easy, the *English* saying: <sup>g</sup> *They would not set too high a Price upon a Knight or Gentleman, but that he might still be able to live after his Rank, and to follow the Wars in an Equipage agreeable to his Quality.* But they were all enriched, as well by Ransoming, as by the Spoil of the Field, consisting of Gold, Silver, Plate, and Jewels, besides Horses, Armour, and what they found about the Dead, which was costly, the *French* <sup>h</sup> coming in their best Furniture and Apparel, as making sure of the Day. And every Man, who had taken any Captive, had him clear-

<sup>d</sup> *Polid. Vergil*, p. 381. <sup>e</sup> *Paul Æmyl.* p. 287. <sup>f</sup> *Wal-*  
*singham's Hist.* p. 164. <sup>g</sup> *Froissart*, cap. 169. f. 84. <sup>h</sup> *Ib.*  
c. 167.

clearly for himself, either to acquit or ransom him at his Pleasure : Except only the *French* King and his Son, or whoever else was ransom'd for more than ten Thousand Crowns. For, by the Law of Arms, those whose Redemption exceed-  
ed that Sum, belong'd to the King.

The *French* Authors, to palliate the Loss they received, affirm that King *John*, in Contempt of the *English* Forces, resolv'd to make Use only of their Infantry, on which (say they) his Cavalry were so disgusted, that they were backward in performing their Duty. And one \* adds, how there fell among them a dangerous Emulation, who should be among that famous three Hundred, who were to bear the Brunt of the Danger, by breaking thro' the Archers. However, King *John* is justly accused of Rashness in giving the Prince Battle, when his Men wanted Provisions so greatly, that some of them had not of three Days tasted any good Bread ; and he might have enforc'd them to yield by holding them besieged in the Place where they encamp'd, or, by depriving them of that advantageous Post, made sure of a Victory over them.

Early the next Morning after the Battle, while Heralds were sent out to view the Number and Quality of the Dead, the Prince heard Mass publicly in the Field, and caused <sup>m</sup> Thanks to be render'd to Almighty God for so signal a Victory ; and after that, in <sup>n</sup> Sight of all the Captives, both highly commended and amply rewarded his Soldiers. And, after giving his Men some Time to rest and

H 3

to

<sup>i</sup> Selden's *Mare Clausum*, c. 26. p. 171.    <sup>k</sup> Paul. *Æmyl.* p. 286.    <sup>l</sup> Du Chesne, p. 676.    <sup>m</sup> Pol. *Vergil*, p. 381. and Froissart, c. 169.    <sup>n</sup> Pol. *Vergil.* *ibid.*



to pack up, and make all Things ready for their Departure, a March was founded the same Day; and the Prince with his Army took their Way toward *Poitiers*, which he passed by, without making any Attempt on it, being, as one ° says, mindful of his Word to King *John*. He march'd not above four or five Leagues a Day, and always took up his Quarters betimes, and rode in close Order, ready arrayed for Battle; but committed no Hostilities, meeting with no Opposition, the whole Country being terrified, and all the *French* Forces retired into strong Towns.

“ And thus did *Edward* the BLACK-PRINCE  
 “ (now doubly dyed black by the Terrour of his  
 “ Arms) continue his March <sup>p</sup> without the least  
 “ Opposition, thro’ *Poitou* and *Xaintogne*, ’till  
 “ he came to *Blaye*, where he passed over the Ri-  
 “ ver *Garonne*, and so came in Safety and Honour  
 “ to his chief City of *Bordeaux*. It can hardly be  
 “ imagined <sup>a</sup> with what extravagant Joy and Tri-  
 “ umph, and honourable Feastings, and splendid Pa-  
 “ geants, this victorious Prince was received into that  
 “ City, both by the Clergy and Laity, all Sorts of  
 “ People extolling his Praise, and rejoicing in his  
 “ Presence. From hence the Prince <sup>r</sup> wrote Let-  
 “ ters into *England* to the King his Father, giving  
 “ him a full but modest Account of his Success,  
 “ and promising (God willing) the next Spring to  
 “ bring over his royal Prisoner into *England*.  
 “ King *Edward* was wonderfully pleased with this  
 “ extraordinary Success of his Son; but, when the  
 “ News of the Victory was divulged among the  
 “ People,

° *P. Æmyl*, p 283.    <sup>p</sup> *Fraissart*, c. 169.  
 516, 517.    <sup>r</sup> *Pol. Vergil*, p. 381.

<sup>a</sup> *Barnes*, p.

“ People, Men were almost beside themselves for  
 “ Joy, the Conduits ran with Wine, Bonfires  
 “ were continually flaming, Songs and Musick,  
 “ Plays, Feasts, and Wakes were in all Places.”  
 And the King appointed Publick Thanks to be  
 given to God throughout *England*.

Soon after the Prince's Arrival at *Bordeaux*, Cardinal *Taylarand* of *Perigort* applied himself again to the victorious Prince, in order to mediate a Peace between the two Realms. At first it is said the Prince would not admit him to speak to him, bearing in Mind how the Chastellain of *Emposta* and others of his Retinue were found in Arms against him in the Battle of *Poitiers*. But, the Cardinal protesting in *Verbo Sacerdotis*, that he was not consenting in that Action of his Men, the Lord of *Chaumont*, the Lord of *Montferrant*, and the Capital of *Busche* (who were his Kinsmen) interceded in his Behalf, and brought the Prince to be content to hear what the Cardinal had to say for himself. Having gain'd this Point, he excused himself so discreetly, that he recover'd the Prince's good Opinion, and redeemed his Men at reasonable Ransoms: For the Chastellain himself paid but an Hundred Pounds Sterling. It appears that the Prince received the Cardinal with so much Sweetness and Humanity, that he could not but highly commend him in his Letters to the Pope, wherein also he set forth the Prince's Generosity and Moderation to the *French* King. His Holiness therefore sent two Letters to the Prince, exhorting him yet further to shew Clemency to the Conquer'd, and amidst his triumphant Fortune to accommodate

H 4

date

\* *Froissart*, c. 162. f. 185.

date his Mind to Peace, &c. As appears more largely from the Letters themselves, as followeth :

*Our Reverend Brother (says he) Taylarand Bishop of Alby, Nuncio of the Apostolick See, wrote unto us by his Letters, that you confirming and enhancing the Nobility, which you derive from your Stock by your Generosity of Soul, and the Exercise of Virtues, have entertained him with such Honours and such Favours, as became a Son to exhibit to his Father in Christ : And that (which is greater than all these) preparing your Mind equally for all Events, and not being puffed up with any Prosperity of Successes, but always more humble in the Sight of the Lord your God, attributing all unto him, from whom you have received all, you do graciously allow to our dear Son in Christ, John the illustrious King of France (whom the Event of War hath brought into your Prison) that Honour which belongs to so great a Prince. Upon which Account returning unto your Highness our deserved Praises, and hoping undoubtedly that the omnipotent God, who hath Respect unto the Lowly, but knoweth the Proud afar off, will bestow on you more abundantly and freely the Grace of his Benediction, &c. Dat. Ven. V. Non. Octob. Anno Pontif. IV.*

His other Letter is of the same Date :

**I**NNOCENT the Bishop, Servant of the Servants of God, to Edward Prince of Wales, eldest Son of our most dear Son in Christ the illustrious King of England, Greeting and Apostolical Benediction. *Altho, O Son,*

*You*

*You may, as we probably believe, after the Manner of the World, glory in the Felicity of your Successes ; yet we hold undoubtedly, that as one devout toward God, and derived of Parents devout also toward him, you do with Reverence refer the Glory of your Triumphs and the Honour of your Victories to God your Creator, from whom is all Victory and all Triumph : We hold, that in them you consider the Effusion of human Blood : We hold, that you regard the Peril of Souls ; and that therefore you do so much the more humble yourself in the Sight of your God, by how much, as a wise and prudent Person, you may plainly perceive, that for those you ought to return him Thanks ; and for these to beg Pardon of him. For altho' the same God, who bestows his Gifts as he pleases, hath made you glorious with the Titles of Victories and the Pomp of Triumphs, yet he doth detest the Slaughter of his People ; nor would have the Rancour or Hate, the Right or Wrong of Rulers to be compensated with the Destruction of faithful and innocent Subjects. Which we, in serious Meditation weighing with ourselves, nothing doubt, nay perhaps we are certain, that you, by how much you have received more prosperous Things of the Hand of the Lord, are so much the more prompt to Peace, so much the more favourably inclined to Concord, especially since it is usual for powerful Men who follow Goodness, that Prosperity doth rather stir them up daily to Mercy ; that Success doth rather induce them perpetually to Gentleness. For Goodness is never taken Notice of in any one, but only when it is in his Power to be cruel ; the Sweetness of Clemency is rarely known, unless when it might deal severely : Power therefore gives Occasion to Clemency, and*

*a Casue*



*a Cause also to Goodness. This Occasion therefore; and this Cause we require of you, since you are able to express it; and for a Peace, to be by the Help of God reformed between our most dear Son in Christ, John the illustrious King of France (whom the Event of War hath brought into your Prison) and yourself, we confidently approach your Highness, desiring you as affectionately as we can, and more earnestly beseeching you by the Bowels of the Mercies of God, that, rendering a Return of Gratitude to the Lord your God, for those Things which he hath given unto you, you would accommodate your Soul, prepare your Heart, and dispose your Mind to Peace and Concord.*

*For you know, that the great King of Peace, by whom you live and reign, doth command you to love Peace, and refuses to dwell in the Hearts of the Unmerciful. And, lest we should more prolixly enlarge our Epistle, we add unto our Prayers, that those Things which our Reverend Brother Taylarand, Bishop of Alby, and our beloved Son, Nicholas titulo Sancti Vitalis, Priest-Cardinal, Nuncio's of the Apostolick See, or either of them, in their own Persons or in others, shall relate unto you as to this Point, or declare unto you by Letters, you would undoubtedly believe; and by a pious Prosecution fulfil them with the desired Fruits of your Actions. Dat. Aven. V. Non. Octob. Anno Pontificatus nostri IV.*

*The Pope also, by Letter of the same Date to Charles the Emperor, solicited his Mediation between the English and French, telling him the Glory of that great Work was reserved only for him; but, how much he was grieved at the Captivity of King John, the first Part of his Letter shews.*

INNO-

INNOCENT, &c. to his most dear Son in Christ,  
Charles Emperor of the Romans, always Augustus.

WITH such Bitterness (O most dear Son)  
and with a Sting of such vehement Sor-  
row are our Hearts and Bowels wounded at the  
News of the Misfortune of our most dear Son  
in Christ, the illustrious King of *France*, which  
we believe to have come to you before the Re-  
ceipt of these Presents; that our Spirit hath al-  
most failed us, our Vigour is dried up, and in  
a Manner all our Senses are lost. For who that  
is of a sound Mind, who that has but his Sen-  
ses, who that has but a Heart of Flesh, who  
that has any Humanity about him, would not  
burst forth into Tears, would not sigh from  
the Bottom of his Heart, would forbear Grief-  
ing, would refrain Weeping, would cease La-  
menting, &c.

The victorious Prince of *Wales* resided at *Bour-  
deaux* with his Royal Prisoner, all the Winter,  
and until the third Week after *Easter*. He had  
some Trouble in deciding Differences about the  
*French* Prisoners; those he designed to carry with  
him to *England*, and which the *Gascoigners* laid  
Claim to, \* he bought of them; but those taken  
by the *English* he intended not to buy, 'till they  
were brought safe Home. And, of the Prisoners  
bought of the *Gascoigners*, \* were *Philip* Son of  
King *John*, the Earl of *Sanceir*, and the Lord  
*Craon*,

\* *Froissart*, cap. 169.

\* *Pat.* 22. Oct. 33. E. p. 3. m. 14.

*Craon*, whom he afterwards sold to the King for twenty Thousand Pounds. It also appears from our Records, that he <sup>y</sup> purchas'd *James de Bourbon* Earl of *Ponthieu* of *John de Greilly* Capital of *Busche*. For the King, by Precept to his Treasurer and Chamberlains, signifies to them, that *Edward* Prince of *Wales*, having become bound to the said *John de Greilly*, in twenty-five Thousand old Crowns for *James de Bourbon*, &c. taken Prisoner at *Poictiers* and sold to the said Prince. And the King having charg'd himself with the Payment thereof; he commands them to pay what remain'd to be due to the said *John de Greilly*.

There were also heard before him the several Pretensions concerning taking of the *French* King; and notwithstanding Sir *Dennis Morbeque* shew'd the Gauntlet the King gave him, <sup>z</sup> yet an Esquire of *Gascoigne*, named *Bernard de Troutes*, averr'd he had more Reason to lay Claim to that honourable Action, and thereupon challenged him; but the Prince commanded them both, on Pain of his highest Displeasure, not to proceed; saying, there should be no Manner of Decision or Determination, but by the King his Father. However, on the *French* King's espousing Sir *Dennis Morbeque*, the generous Prince of *Wales* caus'd secretly to be delivered into his Hands two Thousand Nobles, to enable him to make an handsome Appearance against the Time he was to be at the Court of *England*. And, when the next Year King *Edward* had determin'd the Cause in his Favour, he gave <sup>a</sup> him five Thousand Crowns of Gold

<sup>y</sup> Rymer's *Fœdera*, Tom. 6. p. 310. <sup>z</sup> Barnes, p. 418. <sup>a</sup> P. *Æmylius*, p. 288.

Gold more, as a Reward for that Service. For (as before is mentioned) all Prisoners, valued at above ten Thousand Crowns, belong'd not to the Person that took him, but to the King, as the famous Mr. *Selden* avers.

*Froissart* informs us, <sup>b</sup> that those Knights, Gentlemen, and others, who had been present at the Battle of *Poictiers*, upon their Return into *England*, were welcomed, treated, and highly caressed by all Men, wherever they came, and in all Respects preferr'd to others of their Rank and Condition. As on the Contrary all the <sup>c</sup> Lords, Knights, and Esquires of *France*, who had fled from the Battle, were so hated, reviled, and pointed at, in all Places, that they forbore to appear in any great Town or publick Place of Resort. So honourable is it to merit a good Name.

So many *French* Noblemen were slain, or made Prisoners, that but few of Repute were left to manage the Affairs of *France*. I therefore hope it won't be thought improper, to give a brief Account, how Affairs were transacted in that Kingdom, after so fatal a Blow. *Charles* the Dauphin, King *John's* eldest Son, was Regent, tho' green and unexpert in publick Business. On the Twentieth of *September* (ten Days after the Battle) he <sup>d</sup> summoned a Parliament of the three Estates to meet him at *Paris*, on the Fifteenth of *October* next ensuing. At which Time the Archbishop of *Roan*, and Chancellor of *France*, " declared the  
" great Misfortune that had lately befallen the  
" Realm by the taking of their King and Head  
" at

<sup>b</sup> Cap. 169. <sup>c</sup> Cap. 170.  
and *Du Chesne*, p. 678.

<sup>d</sup> *Fabian's Eng. Chron.* p. 282



“ at the Battle of *Poitiers*, and exhorting them  
 “ to be aiding and assisting every Man to his Abili-  
 “ ty, toward the Redemption of their Sovereign.”  
 After fifteen Days Consultation, they appointed  
 Fifty of their Number, to inquire into their Grievan-  
 ces ; and the Fifty chose among themselves six Re-  
 presentatives to wait on the Regent, and request of  
 him in their Name, that he would promise to keep  
 secret what they intended to declare to him, which he  
 granted. Then they besought him to discharge all  
 such as they should name to him, and to seize their  
 Goods as forfeited to the King’s Use. On which  
 they named the Archbishop of *Roan*, Chancellor  
 of *France*, Sir *Simon Bucy*, chief President and  
 Counsellor to the King, and some other chief Of-  
 ficers ; and that the King of *Navar* be deliver’d  
 from his Imprisonment, and that he himself would  
 be advised and counselled by such as they should  
 assign unto him, viz. ° twelve Prelates, twelve  
 Knights, and twelve Burgeses, which they had  
 chosen. And, the Regent telling them he would  
 take the Opinion of his Council, after some Mes-  
 sages between them they return’d this final An-  
 swer : *That, except he would reform all Miscarria-*  
*ges and conform himself to their Minds for the pub-*  
*lick Good, they would not give him any Aid.* On  
 this the Regent sent secretly to his Father at *Bour-*  
*deaux* for his Advice, and the King wrote back to  
 him : *That he should not agree to their insolent De-*  
*mands ; for he had rather continue still a Prisoner to*  
*so honourable an Enemy, than to return Home to become*  
*a Slave to his own Subjects.* Thereupon, the Regent,  
 find-

finding he could bring them to no other Conclusion, dissolv'd the Parliament. But when afterward the Regent requir'd an Aid of the City of *Paris*, toward the Maintenance of his Wars, they told him plainly, *They were not obliged to any such Thing, unless they were enjoined by the three Estates, which they desired might be re-assembled.* But this the young Prince would not yield to, tho' much press'd with Difficulties. Whereupon the Citizens, pretending to be in Fear of Tyranny, fortified and repaired their Walls, enlarged their Ditches, and the Street of *St. Anthony* and *St. Paul*, which before belong'd to the Suburbs, was now inclosed within the Walls. Thus was *Paris* from a weak Place made strong, and tho' intended for Defence against their Prince, yet it proved not long after a publick Benefit, by saving them from *King Edward's* Army, who with the Prince of *Wales* came before it as I shall hereafter shew.

But more commendably did those of the Province of *Languedoc*, who being assembled in order to make Provision for the King's Redemption by Authority of the Earl of *Armagnac*, the King's Lieutenant in those Parts. \* They unanimously agreed to provide five Hundred Men of Arms, all Knights, with an Esquire to every one of them; also, a Thousand Soldiers on Horseback, a Thousand *Arbalists*, and two Thousand others, all to have a Year's Pay from the State. And ordained, " That no Man should wear any precious Furrs, or other rich Stuff, and that all Women and Ladies should lay aside the gorgeous Attire of their Heads, and wear neither Pearls, Gold,

" nor

\* *Mezeray*, p. 47.    † *Fabian*, p. 283 and *P. Æmyl.* p. 289.

" nor Silver about their Cloaths or upon their  
 " Girdles, as long as the King should remain  
 " Prisoner : And further to testify, how deeply  
 " they resented the publick Calamity, they gene-  
 " rally abandon'd all Banquets, Entertainments,  
 " Masks, Dances, Plays, and other Diversions,  
 " during his Captivity. Besides all which, they  
 " freely granted a considerable Aid, toward his  
 " Redemption, and made divers wholesome Or-  
 " dinances, both to their own Honour, and the  
 " Profit of the Common-wealth. Which laud-  
 " able Example of theirs *Champaigne* also fol-  
 " lowed." But most of the other Provinces sided  
 " with the Metropolis of *Paris*, whose Pro-  
 " vost, headed by three Thousand Artificers, slew  
 " three of the Dauphin's Counsellors in his Presence,  
 " and were ready to shake off all Regal Authority,  
 " of which the *French* Historians give a long Ac-  
 " count.

Many without Doubt will be of Opinion, that  
 whilst *France* was in so great a Consternation, by  
 the Loss of their King, and his chief Nobility,  
 and whilst being rent in Divisions, under the Go-  
 vernment of a young Prince, King *Edward* missed a  
 fair Opportunity of more effectually making good  
 his Claim to the Crown of that Kingdom : Some  
 may likewise think it not good Policy in the Prince  
 of *Wales's* keeping the *French* King and the other  
 Prisoners, so long at *Bordeaux*, whereby more than  
 a Year was spent in nothing but Pleasure, Feasting,  
 and Entertainments ; whereas, had the Blow been  
 immediately followed, it might have given *France*  
 a compleat Overthrow, and entirely subdued it to  
 the

FH

MVSEVM  
 BRITANNICVM

the Crown of *England*. It was the <sup>b</sup> Twenty-fourth of *April* (near seven Months after the Battle of *Poitiers*) that the Prince set Sail for *England*, being busied as our Historians agree in equipping a Navy, to convey his Prisoners with Safety, a Rumour having been spread that the three Estates, by whom *France* at that Time was govern'd, had Views of rescuing their King on the Seas; but no Ship of theirs appeared on that Account, tho' the Prince was eleven Days in his Passage. He was expected to land with the King in the West of *England*, for whose Reception there *John Dabernon*, Sheriff of *Devonshire*, was commanded to make Provision of Victuals, Carriages, &c. and attend them in all Parts through that Country. And *Walsingham* <sup>i</sup> writes, that they landed at *Plymouth* on the Fifth of *May*; but our other Historians more rightly affirm, that they landed at *Sandwich* on the Fifth of *May*, and, after two Days Stay there to refresh themselves, rode the third Day to *Canterbury*, where they staid some Time, and on the twenty-fourth of *May*, being the *Wednesday* before *Whit-Sunday*, came to *London*.

Sir *Henry Picard* then Lord Mayor had Command from the King, to prepare for their Reception in the most honourable Manner, and in *Southwark* they were met by more than a Thousand of the chief Citizens on Horseback. " King *John*, being cloathed in royal Apparel, was mounted " on a large white Courser in Token of Sovereignty, and to be the more remarkable; the generous Prince of *Wales* riding by his Side on a " little black Hobby, as one that industriously avoided

I

<sup>b</sup> *Hollinsh.* p. 390. *Barnes*, p. 526.

<sup>i</sup> *Hist.* p. 164.



“ voided all Suspicion of Triumph. They  
 “ took their Way over *London-Bridge*, and rode  
 “ directly to *Westminster*, and, in the Streets they  
 “ passed, the Citizens set to publick View their  
 “ Plate, Tapestry, and the like; but especially  
 “ they <sup>k</sup> boasted of their warlike Furniture, and  
 “ exposed that Day, in their Shops, Windows,  
 “ and Balconies, such an incredible Quantity of  
 “ Bows and Arrows, Shields, Helmets, Corselets,  
 “ Breast and Back-Pieces, Coats of Mail, Gaunt-  
 “ lets, Vambraces, Swords, Spears, Battle-Axes,  
 “ Harness for Horses, and other Armour, both  
 “ offensive and defensive, that the like had never  
 “ been seen in Memory of Man.” The Concourse  
 of People <sup>l</sup> from all Parts, to behold this uncommon  
 Sight, was so great, that the Solemnity of the  
 Cavalcade held from Three of the Clock in the  
 Morning ‘till Noon, about which Time the Prince  
 got to *Westminster-Hall*, where he presented to the  
 King his Father, then sitting in great Majesty on  
 a Royal Throne, the Person of King *John* his Pri-  
 soner. That Day King *Edward* treated the *French*  
 King, his Son *Philip*, with the rest of the noble  
 Captives; and ordered for the King an Apartment,  
 in his Court, ‘till the *Savoy* could be prepared for  
 him, which was then a magnificent Structure be-  
 longing to *Henry* Duke of *Lancaster*; but, the first  
 Founder <sup>m</sup> being *Peter* Earl of *Savoy*, it retain’d  
 his Name, as it does to this Day.

The Prince of *Wales* shew’d such a generous  
 Concern for King *John*, that he promis’d him  
 both in his Tent the Night of the Battle, and after-  
 wards

<sup>k</sup> *Knighton*, p. 2615.    <sup>l</sup> *Walsingh.* p. 164. and *Hyp.* p. 124.  
<sup>m</sup> *Pol. Vergil*, p. 382. *Speed*, p. 539.

wards at *Bordeaux*, that Peace and Concord should take Place, as much as in him lay, if by any Means he could prevail on his Father. Accordingly, he first procured a Truce to be made 'till the Feast of St. *John Baptist*, or the Twenty-fourth of June, 1359, in Expectation that a full Peace would be established by that Time. Soon after the Prince's Arrival from *Bordeaux*, viz. <sup>n</sup> on the Nineteenth of June, 1357, a Cardinal, sent by the Pope, came to London, and in Audience of the King told him, that the Prince of *Wales* and King *John* had agreed at *Bordeaux*, that the Duke of *Lancaster* should raise the Siege of *Rennes*, and a Treaty of Peace should be set forward between the two Realms, and therefore desired a Treaty might be set on Foot, and that the Duke of *Lancaster* might be ordered to desist from the Siege; which the King in Honour to his Son complied with, and sent to the Duke, to come to *England*; and the *French* King sent at the same Time to his Subjects, to forbear all Hostilities. This Cardinal <sup>o</sup> was Bishop of St. *Jean de Maurienne* in *Savoy*; whose Letters of safe Conduct, for himself and a Train of thirty Horse, bore date at *Westminster* the Twenty-sixth of May this Year. Also, about the same Time, <sup>p</sup> came *Talayrand* Cardinal of *Perigord*, and *Nicholas* Cardinal of *St. Vitalis*, to assist at a Treaty of Peace, being the two that were with the Prince before the Battle of *Poitiers*. They with the other Cardinal addressed themselves to the King at *Westminster*, as he sat on his Throne; and, having <sup>q</sup> made their Salute in a Kind of Adoration, they delivered their

I 2

Com-

<sup>n</sup> Knighton, p. 2615.  
<sup>q</sup> *Freissart*, c. 173.

<sup>o</sup> *Asmole*, p. 653.

<sup>p</sup> *Ibid.* and

<sup>q</sup> Knighton, *ibid.*

Commission, and offer'd King *Edward* all the Lands his Predecessors held in *France*, that a Peace might be settled. To which King *Edward* answered briefly: *That altho' some of the Lands of his Predecessors had been lost for a Time, yet he doubted not of recovering them again, when it should please God. But that he would have nothing to do with them; unless they came to the Point in Hand, concerning the Crown of France, which he claimed.* They replied, their Commission extended not so far, but they would send to the Pope for further Orders, which they did not receive 'till the Twenty-ninth of *August*. In all the Treaties then in Agitation, the Pope was notoriously partial in the *French* King's Cause, and the Cardinals received a Bull from him, \* enjoining every Bishop in *England* to make a Visitation throughout their several Diocesses, and to pay their Procurations to the Cardinals, which was said to be intended for the Aid of the *French* Interest. At the same Time, the Pope demanded the Annuity of one Thousand Marks, granted by King *John* of *England* to the Court of *Rome*, when he resign'd his Crown. And, the said Sum having been unpaid for the Space of one Hundred and forty Years, the Arrears was also demanded, in Hopes that King *Edward* would sooner comply with the Terms offered. But he had both a more loving Clergy and loyal Barons and roundly told them: \* *He would never pay any Tribute to any Mortal whatsoever, because he held his Kingdom, and would hold it, freely, and without Subjection to any one, but only to God Almighty.* This and other fruitless Negotiations caused a  
Truce

\* *Knighton*, p. 2617.\* *Ibid.*

Truce'till the Twenty-ninth of *June*, 1359, as before-mentioned ; and, coming to no Conclusion on Terms of Peace, King *Edward* with his Son the Prince of *Wales*, and King *John* with the Lord *James* of *Bourbon*, held a friendly Treaty at *Westminster* between themselves only, some Months before the Expiration of the Truce ; when Peace was agreed on between both Kings on these Terms.

*First*, That *Aquitain* should remain entirely to King *Edward* and his Heirs for ever, together with *Gascoigne*, *Poictou*, *Touraine*, *Xangtone*, *Perigort*, *Quercy*, *Limosin*, *Angoulesmois*, *Calais*, *Guisnes*, *Bulonois*, and the Earldom of *Ponthieu*, without any Resort or Homage, or Tribute, even as absolutely as he held his Kingdom of *England*.

*Secondly*, That King *John* should pay, for Ransom of himself, three Millions of Crowns of Gold, and one Million for the Lords of *France*.

In Consideration of all which King *Edward* would give over, and wholly remit all his Right in and to the Dutchy of *Normandy*, *Anjou*, and *Maine* ; and renounce and lay aside the Right which he had to that Crown, and never after take upon him the Stile, Quality, or Title of King of *France*.

This Agreement was signed and sealed by both Kings on the Twenty-fourth of *March* preceding the Truce, and a Copy thereof sent into *France* to the Regent, by the Lord *James* of *Bourbon* and the Lord *Arnold D'Endregban* ; who crossing the Seas went to *Paris*, where they found the Regent and the King of *Navarre*, unto whom they produced



duced King *John's* Letters, who remitted them to the three Estates at that Time assembled. Whereupon with one Voice, the King of *Navarre*, and the Dauphin concurring, they return'd this final Answer to the two Lords: "That the Contents of  
 " the Letters, which they had brought, were so  
 " prejudicial to them, and to their Country, that  
 " they had rather endure far greater Misery, than  
 " they had already done, than ever suffer so considerable a Loss, and Empairment of the Realm  
 " of *France*; and that they could not, either in  
 " Honour or Conscience, desire the Liberty of their  
 " King himself, when it could not be effected  
 " without enslaving their Kingdom."

This being brought to King *John* by the two Lords, he shook his Head, and said; "Ah! Son  
 " *Charles*, Son *Charles*: You are led by the King  
 " of *Navarre*, who is too cunning for you, and  
 " will deceive forty such as you are." And, King *Edward* being present, he said to him: *Sir, the fatal Obstinacy of my infatuated People is providing another Trophy for your victorious Arms: You must again shew them the Effects of War, before they will understand the Advantages of Peace. But thrice unhappy I, who cannot be at Liberty, 'till I see my Subjects once more vanquished; nor can oblige them to their Duty, but by the Arms of my Conqueror.*

King *Edward* was much enraged at this Dealing of the *French*, and swore that when the Truce was expired: "They should see the War in the  
 " bloodiest Shape, that he could dress it in." Surely (said he) *before next Winter be past over, I shall invade the Realm of France with such a Power, and shall tarry there so long, that I will either end the*  
*War*

*War to my Satisfaction, or make Peace to my Pleasure and Honour.* And, to shew that he meant so to do, he sent Word to the Dauphin: "To look  
 " to himself, for when the Truce was out, he  
 " would most certainly give him a Visit at *Paris*,  
 " to see how able he was for a War, which  
 " himself had thus pulled on his own Head."

Thereupon, he sent peremptory Command to his Commissioners of Array in all Counties throughout *England*, for mustering a Royal Army which he design'd to head in Person, and seem'd resolv'd to reduce *France* to his Devotion, or die in the Undertaking. And tho' his Mind was much intent on his Preparations for War, yet, to honour the City of *London*, he caused about the latter End of *May* a solemn Just to be proclaimed to be held there for three Days together; in which Proclamation, *John Loufkin*, Mayor, *John Barnes* and *John Bury*, the Sheriffs, with their Brethren the Aldermen (to the Number of Twenty-one) as Challengers, were to hold the Field against all Comers. But at the Time appointed, in their Name, and in their Stead, the King came privily with his four Sons, *Edward* Prince of *Wales*, *Lionel*, *John*, and *Edmund*, with Nineteen other great Barons of *England*; the King representing the Mayor, the Prince the Senior Sheriff, and Prince *Lionel* the other Sheriff, the Whole being personated by the Royal Family and Nobility of *England*, in Presence of the Kings of *France* and *Scotland*, and an infinite Number of Spectators. The King and his Sons, and the rest of the Chal-

I 4

lengers,

<sup>u</sup> MS. vet *Ang.* in Bibl. C. C. C. *Cantab.* c. 230. *Hollingsb.* p. 963. *Walsingh.* p. 165, &c.

lengers, bearing the City Arms on their Shields and Surcoats, held the Field the whole three Days with great Honour; and, being known but to few, the Citizens, who took them for what they seem'd, were overjoy'd when they understood, the King and his Sons had done them that great Honour as to fight so gallantly under their Cognizance.

The King made great Preparations for the War, none, excepting such and such, being permitted to stay at Home, <sup>w</sup> between the Age of Twenty and Threescore, so that, after many Thousands had been turn'd back, there remain'd <sup>x</sup> at least one hundred Thousand chosen Men; and, to receive them and their Provision, there lay ready, at *Sandwich*, one Thousand one Hundred and twenty-three Sail of Ships. At which Place the King, with the Prince of *Wales* and his other three Sons, went on Board on the Twenty-eighth of *October*, and landed that Evening at *Calais*. On the Fourth of *November* <sup>y</sup> early in the Morning they left that Town, with all the Men and Carriages marching in the best Order ever used by any Army in that Time, being in all one Hundred and twenty Thousand Men. The Carriages, <sup>z</sup> consisting of six Thousand Carts and Waggon, each having four good Horses brought out of *England*, were loaded with Provision for the Army, and many useful Things rarely seen before in any Camp, such as Hand-mills to grind their Corn, moveable Ovens, and Forges to make Shoes for their Horses, &c. These Carriages were committed to the Care of the Prince of *Wales*, who had

<sup>w</sup> *Knights*, p. 2623. and *Walsingham*, p. 166.

<sup>x</sup> *Mezeray*, and *M. Villani*, p. 539, *Froissart*, cap. 207. and *Hollinsh.* p. 964. <sup>z</sup> *Froissart*, cap. 210. and *Hollinsh.* p. 965.

had with him his three Brethren, two Thousand Spears, and four Thousand Archers on Horseback, besides Infantry, Bill-men, and Bow-men, all ranged in Order of Battle. The Army march'd not above four Leagues a Day, for the Ease of their Foot and Carriages, and, in a Plain between *Calais* and the Abbey of *Liques*, they were join'd by the Duke of *Lancaster*, who landed with Forces before the King's Arrival; and also by *Germans* and other Foreigners the King had retained.

As this Army was the greatest that ever passed the Sea from *England*, either before or since that Time, I shall, in Honour to the Memory of the principal Leaders, recite their Names. First, was *Edward III.* King of *England*, *France*, and Lord of *Ireland*, with his four Sons, *Edward of Woodstock*, Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwal*, &c. *Lionel of Antwerp*, Earl of *Ulster*, and afterwards Duke of *Clarence*; *John of Gaunt*, Earl of *Richmond*, after Duke of *Lancaster*, and King of *Castile* and *Leon*; and *Edmund of Langley*, after Earl of *Cambridge* and Duke of *York*. King *Edward's* fifth Son, *Thomas of Woodstock*, was left in *England*; and, tho' not six Years of Age, was constituted by his Father Lieutenant and Lord Warden of the Kingdom, during his Absence in *France*, several of the wisest Prelates and Counsellors being appointed to act under him. The rest of the Leaders were *Henry Plantagenet*, Duke of *Lancaster*, the King's Cousin German; *Roger*, Lord *Mortimer*, Earl of *March* and Constable of *England*; *Thomas Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*; and *Robert Ufford*, Earl of *Suffolk*, Marshals of the Army: *Ralph Stafford*, Earl of *Stafford*; *William Montagu*, Earl of *Salisbury*

†



*lisbury* and King of *Man* ; *Humphry Bobun*, Earl of *Hereford* and *Essex* ; *William Bobun*, his Brother, Earl of *Northampton* ; and *John Vere*, Earl of *Oxford*. Dr. *Synwel*, Bishop of *Lincoln* ; Dr. *Tho. Hatfield*, Bishop of *Durham* ; the Lord *Henry Peircy*, and his eldest Son Sir *Henry*, who was after the first Earl of *Northumberland* of that Name ; the Lord *Ralph Nevil* of *Raby* ; the Lord *Edward Spencer* ; the Lord *John Chandos* ; the Lord *Walter Manny* ; the Lord *Reginald Cobham* ; the Lord *John Grey*, of *Codnore* ; the Lord *John Moubray* ; the Lord *Roger de la Warr* ; the Lord *Thomas Felton* ; the Lord *John Willoughby* ; the Lord *James Audeley* ; the Lord *Ralph Bassett*, of *Drayton* ; the Lord *John Charleton*, the King's Chamberlain ; the Lord *Bartholomew Burghersh* ; the Lord *John Fitz-Walter* ; the Lord *Edmund Pierpoint* ; the Lord *John Botetourt* ; the Lord *William Huntingfield* ; the Lord *Robert Morley* ; the Lord *John Touchet* ; Sir *Richard Pemburge* ; Sir *Nele Loring* ; Sir *Stephen Cossington* ; Sir *Hugh Hastings* ; Sir *William Trussel* ; and many others : Besides the Lords and Gentlemen Strangers ; among whom was Sir *Henry Eam* of *Flanders*, with two hundred Spears in his Retinue ; Sir *Frank Van Hall*, with as many more ; Sir *Reginald Boulant*, with sixty Spears ; and five hundred Germans under the Marquis of *Nuys*.

The Army marched thro' *Artois*, passing by the City of *Arras*, wherein was the Earl of *St. Paul* ; and the Constable of *France* was at *Amiers* ; both Places being garrison'd, as well as other great Towns ; it being generally said, that King *Edward* designed to lay Siege to *Rheims* in *Champagne*, intending,

tending, when he had won that Place, to be appointed there <sup>a</sup> with the holy Oil, and crowned King of *France*. Finding in the Country of *Artois* little Provision, the King entered *Cambreses*, where he met with great Plenty, being not harassed, as holding of the Empire, and not of *France*. There he staid four Days to refresh his Men and Horses, that were somewhat fatigued by the Rain and deep Ways; which being expected, in the Decline of the Year, was born patiently. From *Cambray* the Army marched into *La Tierascbe*, foraging the Country on all Sides; and the Lord *Bartholomew Burghersh*, coming before *St. Quintin*, met with *Sir Baldwin Danequin*, Master of the *French* Crossbows and Commander of the Place, <sup>b</sup> between whom there was a fierce Encounter; but the *English* obtained the Victory, and *Sir Baldwin* was taken Prisoner by the Lord *Burghersh*'s own Hands. With this Success, obtained on the Twenty-sixth of *November*, the Lord *Burghersh* returned to the King, at the Abbey of *Fenney*, where he found good Store of Provision, both for Man and Horse. Thence, the Army removed into *Champaigne*, the King taking his Quarters at *St. Vall*, beyond *Rheims*; the Prince of *Wales* at *St. Thierry*; and the Duke of *Lancaster*, and the great Lords, in other Villages about the City, which the King ordered to be blocked up. Within the Place, <sup>c</sup> was the Lord *John de Craon*, Archbishop of *Rheims*; the Earl of *Porceiu*; the Lord *de la Bonne*; the Lord of *Carency*; the Lord of *Lore*; and divers Knights and Esqrs. with a strong Gar-

<sup>a</sup> *Mezeray*, p. 58.    <sup>b</sup> *Froissart*, c. 208.    <sup>c</sup> *Ibid.* and *Knighlon*, (p. 2621.) vocat. pro *Danequin Bald. Barton*.

Garrison. King *Edward*, many Times, <sup>d</sup> offered them by his Heralds, to exalt their City above all others in *France*, if they consented he should there receive the Crown of *France*: But, when he saw they did not comply, and believing they were ashamed to give up the City without receiving any Loss, he threaten'd them with a long Siege, and the Desolation of their Land, if they refused to surrender. But these Overtures did not avail; for, by common Consent, this was their Answer: "That  
 " they had their lawful King, to whom they in-  
 " tended, whilst they had Breath in their Bodies,  
 " to be true and faithful; and, if he used Force  
 " against them, they designed to defend them-  
 " selves by Force." Nor were their Deeds disagreeable to their Words, for they defended themselves with such Courage, that the City suffered no great Damage, during the whole Siege, which lasted from the Feast of St. *Andrew*, till the Beginning of *Lent*; the King not permitting any Assault to be made, resolving to preserve his Army entire for a greater Purpose.

During the Siege, or rather Blockade, the Army had some Rest, which was necessary in the Heart of Winter; but, little Forage being to be got under ten or twelve Leagues off, several strong Detachments were sent, to ravage and plunder the Country adjacent; whereby there fell many Rencontres. The most remarkable Adventure was that under the Duke of *Lancaster*, accompanied with the Earl of *Richmond* the King's third Son, the Earl of *March*, the Lord *John Chandos*, the Lord *James Audeley*, the Lord *Burghersh*, the Lord

<sup>d</sup> *M. Villani*, c. 67, p. 549.

Lord of *Mucidan*, and Sir *Richard Pountcharden*. Having ranged *Champaigne*,<sup>c</sup> till they came to *Cernoy en Dormois*, a strong Castle, they made a vigorous Assault on it; and, the Lord *Mucidan* being slain, all the Lords swore they would not stir till they had taken the Place. And renewing the Assault, the *Gascoigners* (enraged at the Loss of their Commander) plunged into the Ditches like Madmen, and, mounting the Walls with their Targets over their Heads, forced the Castle, putting all to the Sword, except Sir *John Caples* the Captain, another Knight, with some few Esquires.

Also, on the Twentieth of *December*, the Lord *Burgbergh*, Knight of the Garter, went with a strong Detachment from before *Rheims*, and besieged the Town and Castle of *Cormicy*, belonging to the Archbishop of *Rheims*. The Castle was furnished with a square stone Tower, and Walls of prodigious Thickness, and the Town fenced with a double Ditch and high Walls. However, the Lord *Burgbergh*, with other Knights, as well of his own Retinue as belonging to the Prince of *Wales*, the Earl of *Richmond*, his Brother, and the Duke of *Lancaster*, coming before the Town, with great Intrepidity passed the Ditch, mounted the Walls, and took it the first Night. Immediately after, the Lord *Burgbergh*, knowing the Strength of the Castle, set Pioneers to undermine it, who so effectually performed their Business, that, in sixteen Days, Sir *Henry de Vaulx*, the Captain, with his Garrison, surrendered at Discretion, after

<sup>c</sup> *Froissart*, c. 208. *Knighton*, p. 2621.    <sup>f</sup> *Froissart*, c. 209. and *Knighton*, p. 2622.



after the Lord *Burgherſh* had generouſly ſhewed them the Danger they were in by the Mines.

Whilst King *Edward* lay before *Rheims*, the Dauphin and the three Eſtates of the Kingdom of *France*, ſeeing ſuch an Enemy in their very Bowels, began to be reconciled; and all the Lords aroſe in their Country's Defence: But the Dauphin, warned by the ill Succeſs of his Father, and the great Loſſes of his Grandfather, reſolved to ſtand only on the Deſenſive, and to remove all Manner of Proviſions into ſtrong Places, thereby to diſtreſs the *Engliſh*. This King *Edward* had foreſaw, and (as was ſaid before) beſides the uſual Carriages, had Hand-mills to grind their Corn, Ovens to bake their Bread, &c. and Forges for Shoes for their Horſes<sup>e</sup>. Alſo were brought, in Carts, Boats made artificially of Leather, each able to hold four Men, to fiſh in Rivers, &c. which proved both pleaſant and convenient. The King had alſo, for his Diverſion, thirty Falconers on Horſeback, with Hawks and fixty Couple of Hounds, and as many Greyhounds, beſides thoſe Hawks and Hounds which his Sons and the chief of the Nobility had, ſo that they hunted and hawked at their Pleaſure.

The King, after being <sup>b</sup> ſeven Weeks before *Rheims*, finding an obſtinate Reſiſtance, and that the Aſſaulting it would occaſion the Loſs of many of his Subjects; and, having now greater Deſigns in View, he decamp'd and march'd in the ſame Order of Battle he had continued on his leaving *Calais*, the Duke of *Lancaſter*, with the Earls of *Northampton* and *Salisbury*, having the Com-

<sup>e</sup> *Freiſſart*, c. 210, f. 103.  
<sup>i</sup> *Knighton*, p. 2623.

<sup>b</sup> *Ibid.* and *Du Cheſne*, p. 682.

Command of the Van, or Right Wing, the King himself in the Center with the main Body, and the Prince of *Wales* with his three Brethren in the Reer. In this Order the Army march'd into *Burgundy*, staying at *Avallon* on the River *Cousson*,<sup>k</sup> from *Ash-Wednesday* to *Mid-Lent*. There *Philip* the young Duke of *Burgundy*, at the Request of all his People, sent his Chancellor and some Noblemen to the King, who made a Composition with him to preserve his Country from Plundering, for three Years, and to furnish the King and his Army with Provisions. From *Avallon* the Army pass'd the River *Yonne* at *Coulogne*, and spread almost to *Clamecy*, at the Entry of *Nivernois*, which Country<sup>l</sup> also compounded with the King, as *Burgundy* had done. But, in marching thro' *Gastinois* and *Brie*, the Army laid those Countries waste. And the Prince of *Wales*, passing with his Forces by the Town of *Moret*, on the *Loing* in *Gastinois*,<sup>m</sup> came to a strong Fortrefs named *le Plessis aux Tournelles* near the Forest of *Provence*, and was then an *English* Garrison, but had been beleagured by the *French* for some Time, who had fortified their Camp with a strong Tower, fenced with Ditches. The Prince of *Wales* was resolved to raise this Siege, and, tho' the *French* knew of his Approach, they had such Confidence in their Fortifications, that they would not march away. But, on the fifth Day after the Prince came, their Tower was won, and most of them put to the Sword, only Forty-seven who were the chief among them being taken alive, of whom were the Lord of  
*Bonne-*

<sup>k</sup> *Asbmole*, p. 660, and *Froissart*, c. 110.  
<sup>l</sup> *Fabian*, p. 238.

<sup>m</sup> *Mezeray*, p. 59.

*Bonneville*, the Lord of *Angreville*, Sir *John de Barrois*, and Sir *William du Plessis*.

The King after over-running the Country as he march'd, and taking several Towns and Castles, came with his Army before *Paris* on the last Day of *March*, <sup>a</sup> being the *Tuesday* before *Easter*, and took his <sup>o</sup> Quarters at *Bourg la Reine* within two small Leagues of the City. At Sight of his formidable Army, *Charles* the Dauphin, Regent of *France*, made Offers of a Treaty, which by the Intercession of *Simon de Langres*, Provincial of the *Jacobin* Fryars, and Legate from Pope *Innocent* the VIth, was yielded to by King *Edward*, to be held at *Longemeau* on the *Good Friday* following, the Solemnity of the Day being chose for so *Christianlike* an Undertaking. At the Time and Place, there appeared, for King *Edward*, *Henry Plantagenet* Duke of *Lancaster*; *Thomas Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*; *William Bobun*, Earl of *Northampton*, the Lord *John Chandos*, the Lord *Walter Manny*, and Sir *William Cheyney*. And for the Regent, the Lord *Moreau de Fiennes* Constable of *France*, the Lord *Bouciqualt*, Marshal of *France*, and four others. But after some Debates the Treaty broke off without any Thing concluded on. Wherefore King *Edward*, on *Easter-Tuesday*, removed somewhat nearer to the City of *Paris*, on which the *Friday* following (being the Tenth of *April*) at the earnest Importunity of the said *Simon de Langres*, and of *Andrew de la Roche* Abbot of *Cluigny*, then newly come from the Pope, another Treaty was held; and again they parted, leaving the

<sup>a</sup> E. D. Lit. Dom. Pascha. 5 April.      <sup>o</sup> Froissart, c. 210. M. Villani, c. 85 and 86. p. 759. and Hollingb. p. 293.

the Breach wider than ever. This induced King *Edward* to draw his whole Army before *Paris*, on the *Sunday* following, when he sent the Duke of *Lancaster* with his Heralds, to the Regent (then in the City, with a great Army) to demand Battle of him, <sup>p</sup> and to assure him, that if he lost the Day, he would never after claim or assume any Right or Title to the Crown of *France*. And, while the Duke was on this Errand, the King honour'd <sup>a</sup> no less than four Hundred with the Order of Knighthood, to encourage them to a valiant Behaviour if a Battle should ensue. But the Duke of *Lancaster* soon returned with an Answer, that the Regent declined King *Edward's* Offer: Who thereupon, at the Lord *Manny's* Request, sent him with all the new-made Knights, and such as were thereto appointed, to skirmish at the Barriers, and to burn what they could of the Suburbs, to <sup>r</sup> provoke the *French* to come forth. The Assault was vigorous, and lasted from Morning 'till Noon, the *French* defending their Posts, with Valour becoming their Circumstances; but did not stir from them, the Regent having given peremptory Command, that no Man, on Pain of his Head, should issue out of the Barriers without his Order.

The King therefore seeing no Provocations could bring the Dauphin to a Battle, and that it was impossible to reduce the City with a numerous Army in it, otherwise than by Famine, raised his Camp on the *Monday* after *Easter*, being the Thirteenth of *April*, <sup>s</sup> and began his March towards *Mont-le-berry*; resolving to go thro' *Beauce* and *Le Main*

K

with

<sup>p</sup> *Walsingham*, p. 167.    <sup>a</sup> *Speed*, p. 583.    <sup>r</sup> *Mezeray*, p. 59.  
<sup>s</sup> *Froissart*, c. 211.



with Fire and Sword, 'till he came into *Bretagne*, where having refresh'd his Army, he intended to return to *Paris* before the Harveſt was got in, and ſo to reduce it by Famine. Accordingly, whilſt he was marching by the River *Loire* to go into *Bretagne*, to ſubdue it wholly for the young Earl of *Montford* his Son in Law, to hold it of the Crown of *England*, the *French* Ambaſſadors followed him with other Offers for Peace, and came up with him in *Beauce*, riding toward *Gaillardon*.

The Regent who was ſtill at *Paris*, with his two Brethren and their Uncle the Duke of *Orleans*, had in Council maturely conſider'd of the inſupportable Miſeries of *France*; and that the large Rents and Revenues, both of Church and State, were already either quite loſt, or greatly impaired, by the Ravages of the King of *England*, whereby it was impoſſible for the Realm to ſubſiſt much longer, without ſome conſiderable Reſpiration. Thereupon they added to the other Ambaſſadors *William Aicelin de Montegu* Biſhop of *Terouenne*, by whoſe Direction moſt of the publick Affairs had been lately order'd. " And theſe Ambaſſadors waiting on King *Edward*, as afore-mention'd, deſir'd of him, for the Love of God, to permit them once more to hold a Treaty in order to a Peace.

The King, on this their Submiſſion, granted their Requeſt, expecting larger Offers; and ſo a Treaty was enter'd upon between them and the *Engliſh* Commiſſioners, *Edward* Prince of *Wales*, *Henry* Duke of *Lancaſter*, and others. This Treaty was held " cloſely for ſome Days, yet the King kept

<sup>1</sup> *Froiffart*, c. 211.

<sup>2</sup> *Barnes*, p. 582.

<sup>3</sup> *Froiffart*, *ibid.*

kept on his March, and the *French* Commissioners with him, making the utmost Application for Peace; tho' it's said the King's Demands were <sup>x</sup> so high, that the *French* Commissioners sent every Day Post to the Regent, for an Enlargement of their Powers, with an Account of the Progress they had made; which was canvas'd in the Regent's Council, and their Commissions farther enlarged, and sent to them in Writing, witness'd and sealed by the Regent and his Council.

But when King *Edward* was come near *Chartres*, the Ambassadors still following him with larger Proposals, he is said to reject all their Offers, being then resolved to be crown'd King of *France*, and to live and die in that Estate. *Henry*, who, for his heroick and princely Virtues, was called the good Duke of *Lancaster*, did his utmost to persuade the King to accept of Peace, for the Welfare of his People of *England*; but, while the King was inexorable, at that Instant <sup>y</sup> fell from Heaven such a wonderful Storm and Tempest of Thunder, Lightning, Rain, and Hail, among the *English* Army, that it seem'd as if the whole Fabrick of Nature was falling to Pieces; and was so excessive cold at the same Time, that there perished no less than six Thousand Horses, and near one Thousand Men: And among them was the Lord *Robert Morley*; and the Lord *Guy Beauchamp*, eldest Son to the Earl of *Warwick*, was so wounded that he died thereof on the Twenty-eighth of *April* at the City of *Vendosme* in *Beauce*.

K 2

King

<sup>x</sup> Barnes, p. 582. <sup>y</sup> Froissart, c. 211. Du Chesne, p. 684. Mezeray, p. 59. Walsingh. p. 167. Knighton, p. 2684. Ashmole, p. 660.

King *Edward*, like a pious Christian Prince, look'd on this as a loud Declaration of the Divine Pleasure; and, alighting immediately from his Horse, kneeled on the Ground, and casting his Eyes to the Church of our Lady of *Chartres*, to which he was near, made a solemn Vow to God, *That he would now sincerely and absolutely incline his Mind to a final Peace with France, if he might obtain good Conditions.* And thereupon took up his Lodgings in a Village near *Chartres*, called *Bretigny*, where the *French* Commissioners came the next Day with ample Instructions, and the King was content to accept of their Offers of Peace.

This famous Treaty <sup>z</sup> was managed between *Edward* Prince of *Wales* and *Charles* Regent of *France*, their Proctors and Agents in the Name of both the Kings, these two Princes, and all the Subjects of either Realm. Those, deputed by the Prince on the *English* Part, were Sir *Reginald Cobham*, Sir *Bartholomew Burghersh*, Sir *Frank Van Hall*, Bannerets; Sir *Miles Stapleton*, Sir *Richard la Vache*, Sir *Nele Loring*, Knts. and others of the King's Council. On the *French* Side were deputed by the Dauphin, the Elector of *Beauvais*, *Charles* Lord *Monmorency* Chancellor, *John de Meingre* Marshal of *France*, *Ainart de la Tour* Lord of *Viviers*, *Ralph de Ravenal*, and *Simon de Buchy*, Knts. *Stephen de Paris* and *Peter de la Charite*, Counsellors, with many others of his Council.

At first a Truce was agreed on (the <sup>a</sup> Seventh of *May*) to continue 'till *Michaelmas* following, and thence

<sup>z</sup> *Asbmole*, p. 660. ex *Rot. Cales de Negot. commun.* An. 34 *E.* 3. m. 6. and *Rot. Franc.* 34 *E.* 3. p. 1. m. 11. <sup>a</sup> *Rot. Cales de Neg. Com.* 34 *E.* 3. m. 6.

thence 'till *Michaelmas* an. 35 *Ed.* 3. and the next Day (*viz.* the Eighth of *May*) were the Articles referring to a final Peace agreed to on the Behalf of both Kings, *Henry* Duke of *Lancaster*, *William* Earl of *Northampton*, *Thomas* Earl of *Warwick*, *Ralph* Earl of *Stafford*, *William* Earl of *Salisbury*, *Walter* Lord *Manny*, *Reginald de Cobham*, *John de Beauchamp*, *Guy de Bryan*, *John* Capital of *Buch*, *Bartolomew de Burghersh*, *Franc de Hale*, *William de Grandison*, *John Chandos*, *Nele Loring*, *Richard la Vaches*, *Miles Stapleton*, and *Adam de Hylton*, being Plenipotentiaries for the *English*, and signed the Treaty concluded by the Prince, and *Charles* eldest Son of the King of *France*. This was that famous Treaty of Renunciation of both Kings, so much treated of by all Historians who wrote of those Times (to which their eldest Sons were Parties) wherein the King of *France* renounc'd the Sovereignty of several Territories to King *Edward*; and he in like Manner renounc'd his Title to *France*, and to some Towns and Territories. All which particularly appear from the Copy of this memorable Treaty.

**EDWARD**, eldest Son of the Noble King of *England*, Lord of *Ireland*, and of *Aquitain*, Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwal*, and Earl of *Chester*, to all, who shall see these present Letters, Greeting. We give you to understand that of all the Debates and Discords whatsoever, moved and commenced between our most redoubted Lord and Father, the King of *England*, on the one Part, and our Cousin the King, and

K 3

“ his

<sup>b</sup> Rymer's *Fœdera*, Tom. 6. p. 178.  
*Francie*, An. 34. *Ed.* 3. m. 10.

<sup>c</sup> Rot. de Tractatu Pacis



“ his eldest Son Regent of the Realm of *France*, on  
 “ the other Part, for the Benefit of Peace: It is  
 “ ACCORDED, on the Eighth of *May* in the  
 “ Year of Grace, one Thousand three Hundred  
 “ and Sixty, at *Bretigny* near *Chartres*, in Manner  
 “ and Form following.”

I. *Imprimis*, That the King of *England*, besides what he holdeth in *Guienne* and *Gascoigne*, shall have, for himself and his Heirs for ever, all those Things which follow, to hold them in like Manner, as the King of *France*, or his Son, or any of his Ancestors, Kings of *France*, did hold them; that is to say, what was held in Sovereignty, to be held in Sovereignty, and what in Demain, in Demain, for the Times, and in the Manner hereunder specified. The City, Castle, and Earldom of *Poitiers*, and all the Land and Country of *Poitou*, likewise the Fief of *Thouars*, and the Land of *Belleville*; the City and Castle of *Saïntes*, and all the Land and Country of *Saintogne* on this Side, and on that Side the *Charente*, with the Town and Castle of *Rochelle* and their Appurtenances: The City and Castle of *Agen*, and the Land and Country of *Agenois*. The City and Castle, and the whole Earldom of *Perigoux*, and the Land and Country of *Perigort*: The City and Castle of *Limoges*, and the Land and Country of *Limosin*: The City and Castle of *Cabors*, and the Land and Country of *Caborsin*: The City, Castle, and Country of *Tarbe*: The Land, Country, and Earldom of *Bigorre*: The Earldom, Land, and Country of *Gaure*: The City and Castle of *Angoulesme*, and the Earldom,  
 Land,

Land, and Country of *Angoulesmois*: The City and Castle of *Rodes*, and the Land and Country of *Rouvergne*. And if there are any Lords, as the Earl of *Foix*, the Earl of *Armagnac*, the Earl of *L'Isle*, the Viscount of *Carmain*, the Earl of *Perigort*, the Viscount of *Limoges*, and others, who hold any Lands or Places within the Bounds of the said Places, they shall make Homage to the King of *England*, and all other Services and Duties, due because of their Lands or Places, in like Manner, as they have done in Time passed.

II. *Item*, That the King of *England* shall have all that which the King of *England*, or any of the Kings of *England* anciently held in the Town of *Monstreuil* on the Sea.

III. *Item*, The King of *England* shall have the Earldom of *Ponthieu* all entirely, saving and excepting that, if any Parts of the said County and its Appurtenances have been alienated by the Kings of *England*, which have been to other Persons than to the King of *France*; then the King of *France* shall not be obliged to render them to the King of *England*, &c.

IV. *Item*, That the King of *England* shall have the Castle and Town of *Calais*, the Castle, Town, and Lordship of *Merk*, the Castles, Towns, and Lordships of *Sangate*, *Cologne*, *Hames*, *Wale*, and *Oye*, with the Lands, Woods, Marshes, Rivers, Rents, Lordships, Advowsons of Churches, and all other Appurtenances and Places lying between the Limits and Bounds following. That is to say, to the Border of the River before *Graveling*, and so by the same

River round about *Langle*, and by the River which runs beyond the *Poil*, and by the same River which falls into the great Lake of *Guifnes*, as far as *Tretun*, and thence by the Valley about *Calculi-hill* (i. e. *Chalkhill*) inclosing that Hill, and so to the Sea, with *Sangate* and all its Appurtenances.

V. *Item*, That the King of *England* shall have the Castle, Town, and the whole Earldom of *Guifnes* entirely, with all the Lands, Towns, Castles, Fortresses, Places, Men, Homages, Lordships, Woods, Forests, and Rights thereof as entirely, as the Earl of *Guifnes* last deceased had them in his Time ; and that the Churches and the good People being within the Limitations of the said Earldom of *Guifnes*, of *Calais*, and *Merk*, and of other Places abovesaid, shall obey the King of *England* in like Manner, as they obey'd the King of *France*, or the Earl of *Guifnes* for the Time being. All which Things of *Merk* and *Calais* being contained in this present Article, and the Article next preceding, the King of *England* shall hold in Demaine, except the Heritage of the Churches, which shall remain to the said Churches entirely wheresoever they be ; and so, except the Heritages of other People of the Country of *Merk* and *Calais*, seated without the said Town of *Calais*, unto the Value of an Hundred Pounds *per Annum*, of current Money of that Country and under: Which Inheritances shall remain to them, even to the Value abovesaid and under. But the Habitations and Inheritances, being within the said Town of *Calais*, with their Appurtenances, shall remain

remain to the King of *England* in Demain, to order them after his Pleasure. And also, to the Inhabitants in the County, Town, and Land of *Guisnes*, shall remain all their Demains entirely and fully, and shall return to them again forthwith, save what is said of the Frontiers, Metes, and Bounds, in the last preceding Article.

VI. *Item*, It is accorded, that the said King of *England*, and his Heirs, shall have and hold all the Isles adjacent to the Lands, Countries, and Places abovenamed; together with all other Islands, which the King of *England* holdeth at the present.

VII. *Item*, It is accorded, that the said King of *France*, and his eldest Son the Regent, for them, and for all their Heirs and Successors, as soon as may be; and, at the furthest, by the Feast of St. *Michael* next coming in one Year, without Fraud or Deceit, shall render, yield, and deliver, to the said King of *England*, and to all his Heirs and Successors, and shall convey unto them all the Honours, Obediences, Homages, Allegiances, Vassalages, Fiefs, Services, Recognizances, Rights, mere and mixt Empire, and all Manner of Jurisdictions, high and low, Resorts, Safeguards, Advowsons, Patronages of Churches, and all Manner of Dominions and Superiorities, and all the Right which they have, or may have had, which did appertain, doth appertain, or might appertain, by any Cause, Title, or Colour of Right, to them, to the Kings, and to the Crown of *France*, by Occasion of the Cities, Countries, Castles, Towns, Lands, Countries, Isles, and Places before-named: And, of all their Appurtenances



ces, wheresoever they shall be, and of every of them, without retaining [or holding back] any Thing to them, to their Heirs, or Successors, or to the Kings, or to the Crown of *France*. And also the said King, and his eldest Son, shall command by their Letters Patent, all Archbishops, Bishops, and other Prelates of Holy Church, and also, all Earls, Viscounts, Barons, Nobles, Citizens, and others whatsoever, of the Cities, Counties, Lands, Countries, Isles, and Places abovenamed, that they obey the King of *England*, and his Heirs, at their certain Commandment, in such Sort, as they have obeyed the Kings, and the Crown of *France*. [*\* And by the same, their Letters shall acquit and discharge them in the best Manner that may be, of all Homages, Fealties, Oaths, Obligations, Subjections, and Promises, in any Sort, by any of them, made to the King and Crown of France.*]

VIII. *Item*, It is agreed, that the King of *England* shall have the Cities, Counties, Castles, Lands, Countries, Isles, and Places above-named; withall their Appurtenances and Appendages, wheresoever they shall be, to hold to him, and to his Heirs, and Successors, hereditably, and for ever in Demain, that which the Kings of *France* have had there in Demain; and also, in Fiefs, Services, Sovereignties, or Resorts, that which the Kings of *France* have had there in such Manner; saving, notwithstanding, what was said above in the Article of *Calais* and *Merk*. And if, of the Cities, Counties, Castles, Lands, Countries, Isles, and Places above named, or any of the Sovereignties, Rights, mere  
and

*\* This Clause is added out of King John's Recapitulation of the Articles.*

and mixt Empire, Jurifdictions and Profits whatsoever, which any King of *England* did there hold, or their Appurtenances and Appendages whatsoever, any Alienations, Donations, Obligations, or Charges, have been made by any of the Kings of *France*, which have been for the Time within seventy Years past, by whatsoever Form or Cause it be; that all such Donations, Obligations, or Charges, are now at this Time, and shall be henceforth made void, repealed, abolished, and annihilated; and all Things so given, annihilated, or charged, shall really, and *de facto*, be restored and delivered to the said King of *England*, or to his special Deputies, in the same entire Condition they were to the Kings of *England*, before, or since the said seventy Years, without Fraud or Deceit, so soon as may be; and, at the farthest, by the Feast of St. *Michael* next ensuing, within one Year: To be held by the said King of *England*, and all his Heirs and Successors for ever, by Right of Inheritance in Manner above written. Except what is said before in the Article of *Ponthieu*, which shall remain in Force; and saving and excepting all those Things given and alienated to Churches, which shall remain peaceably in all the Countries here above and undernamed: Provided, that the Rectors of the said Churches shall diligently pray for the said Kings, as for their Founders, wherewith their Consciences are charged.

IX. *Item*, It is agreed, that the King of *England* shall have and hold all the Cities, Towns, Castles, and Countries abovenamed, which antiently the Kings of *England* did not hold, in the same State

State and Manner as the King of *France*, or his Children hold them at present.

X. *Item*, It is agreed, that, if within the Bounds of the said Countries, which did anciently pertain to the Kings of *England*, there shall be any Places, which otherwise belonged not to the Kings of *England*, but were possessed by the King of *France*, at the Day of the Battle of *Poitiers*, which was the Nineteenth Day of *September*, in the Year One Thousand, three Hundred, Fifty-six, they shall be, and remain to the King of *England* and his Heirs, in Manner as before.

XI. *Item*, It is agreed, that the King of *France*, and his eldest Son the Regent, for themselves, and for their Heirs, and all the Kings of *France*, and their Successors for ever, shall, without Deceit, as soon as may be, and, at the furthest, by the Feast of *St. Michael* next ensuing in one Year, render and deliver unto the King of *England*, and to all his Heirs and Successors, and shall convey unto them all the Honours, Regalities, Obediences, Homages, Allegiances, Vassalages, Fiefs, Services, Recognizances, Oaths, Rights, mere and mixt Empire, all Manner of Jurisdictions, high and low, Resorts, Safeguards, Dominions, and Sovereignities, which did pertain, or doth pertain, or might any Ways pertain to the Kings and Crown of *France*, or to any other Person because of the King or Crown of *France*, at any Time, in those Cities, Counties, Castles, Lands, Countries, Isles, and Places abovenamed, or in any of them, and in their Appurtenances and Appendages whatsoever, or in any of the Persons, Vassals, or Subjects whatsoever, whether Princes, Dukes, Earls, Viscounts,  
Arch-

Archbishops, Bishops, and other Prelates of the Church, Barons, Nobles, and others whatsoever, without retaining in them, or reserving any Thing to themselves, their Heirs, or Successors to the Crown of *France*, or to any other Person whatsoever: Whereby they, their Heirs or Successors, or any King of *France*, may challenge or demand any Thing in Time to come of the King of *England*, his Heirs and Successors, or of any of the Vassals and Subjects aforesaid, in Regard of the Countries and Places above-named: So as all the abovenamed Persons, and their Heirs and Successors for ever, shall be Liegemen and Subjects to the King of *England*, and to his Heirs and Successors; and that the King of *England*, his Heirs and Successors, shall have and hold all the Persons, Cities, Counties, Lands, Countries, Isles, Castles, and Places above-named, and all their Appurtenances and Appendages: And the Premises shall remain unto them, fully, freely, and for ever, in their Dominion, Sovereignty, Obeisance, Allegiance, and Subjection, as the Kings of *France*, at any Time, ever had, or held them. And, that the said King of *England*, his Heirs and Successors, shall have, and hold for ever, all the Countries above-named, with their Appurtenances and Appendages, and other Places specified before, with all Franchise and perpetual Liberty, as Sovereign and Liege Lords, as Neighbours to the King and Realm of *France*, without recognizing any Sovereign, or doing any Obedience, Homage, Resort, and Subjection; and without doing, in any Time to come, any Service or Recognizance to the Kings, or to the Crown of *France*, for the Cities,  
 Counties,



Counties, Castles, Lands, Countries, Isles, Places, and Persons above-named, or for any of them.

XII. *Item*, It is agreed, that the King of *France*, and his eldest Son, shall renounce expressly the said Reforts, and Sovereignities, and all the Right which they have, and may have, in all those Things, which, by this Treaty, ought to belong to the King of *England*. And likewise, the King of *England*, and his eldest Son, shall renounce expressly all those Things, which, by this present Treaty, ought not to be delivered to, or abide with the King of *England*; and especially, the Name and Right of the Crown and Kingdom of *France*, and the Homage, Sovereignty, and Demain of the Dukedom of *Normandy*, of the Dukedom of *Tourain*, and of the Counties of *Anjou* and *Maine*; the Sovereignty and Homage of the Dukedom of *Bretagne*, the Sovereignty and Homage of the Country and Earldom of *Flanders*, and all other Demands, which the King of *England* hath made, or could make against the King of *France*, for whatsoever Cause it may be, saving and excepting what, by this present Treaty, ought to remain, or to be rendered to the King of *England* and his Heirs. And the two Kings shall convey, resign, and leave the one to the other, for ever, all the Right that each of them hath, or may have, in all those Things, which, by this present Treaty, ought to remain, or to be rendered to each of them. And the two Kings shall confer and appoint together at *Calais*, concerning the Time and Place, where, and when, the said Renunciations shall be made.

To

XIII. *Item*, To the End that this present Treaty may be the more briefly accomplished, it is agreed, That the King of *England* shall cause the King of *France* to be conveyed to *Calais*, within three Weeks after the Nativity of St. *John Baptist* next coming (all just Impediment ceasing) at the Expence of the King of *England*, excepting the Charges of the Household of the King of *France*.

XIV. *Item*, It is agreed, That the King of *France* shall pay to the King of *England* three Millions of Crowns of Gold (two whereof counter-vail a Noble of the Money of *England*;) and there shall be paid to the said King of *England*, or his Deputies, six hundred Thousand Crowns at *Calais*, within four Months, to be counted after the King of *France* shall arrive at *Calais*: And, within a Year thence next following, shall be paid four hundred Thousand Crowns, such as aforesaid, at the City of *London* in *England*; and from thence, every Year next following, there shall always be paid four hundred Thousand Crowns more, such as aforesaid, in the said City, till the whole three Millions shall be fully paid.

XV. *Item*, It is agreed, that at the Payment of the said Six Hundred Thousand Crowns at *Calais*, and on the Delivery of the Hostages here under-named to the King of *England*, within four Months, accounting after that the King of *France* shall come to *Calais*, as is said, with the Town, Castle, and Fortresses of *Rockelle*, and the Castles, Fortresses, and Towns of the Earldom of *Guisnes*, and all their Appurtenances and Dependencies, the Person of the said King shall be wholly acquitted from

from Prison, and come into his own Power, without any Impeachment ; but he shall not arm himself, nor his People, against the King of *England* ; till the Time that he shall have accomplished what he is obliged unto by this present Treaty. And the Hostages, as well Prisoners taken at the Battle of *Poitiers*, as others, who remain for the King of *France* are as followeth : That is to say, Monsieur *Lewis*, Earl of *Anjou* ; Monsieur *John*, Earl of *Poitiers*, Sons to the King of *France* ; the Duke of *Orleans*, Brother to the said King ; the Duke of *Bourbon*, the Earl of *Blois*, and *Lewis* his Brother, the Earl of *Alençon*, and Monsieur *Peter* of *Alençon*, his Brother ; the Earl of *St. Paul*, the Earl of *Harcourt*, the Earl of *Porcieu*, the Earl of *Valentinois*, the Earl of *Brayne*, the Earl of *Vaudemont*, the Earl of *Forest*, the Viscount of *Beaumont*, the Lord of *Coucy*, the Lord *Garencieres*, the Dauphin of *Auvergne*, the Lord of *Hangeſt*, the Lord of *Monmorency*, Monsieur *William de Craon*, Monsieur *Lewis* of *Harcourt*, and Monsieur *John de Ligny* : And as for the Names of the Prisoners taken at the Battle of *Poitiers*, they are these ; *Philip* of *France*, the Earl of *Eu*, the Earl of *Longeville*, the Earl of *Ponthieu*, the Earl of *Tancarville*, the Earl of *Joigny*, the Earl of *Sancerre*, the Earl of *Dammartin*, the Earl of *Ventadour*, the Earl of *Salebruche*, the Earl of *Auxerre*, the Earl of *Vendosme*, the Lord of *Craon*, the Lord of *Derval*, the Marshal *D'Endregban*, and the Lord of *Aubigny*.

XVI. *Item*, It is agreed, that the said sixteen Prisoners, who are to remain Hostages for the King of *France*, as is said, shall by this Means be discharged

discharged of their Imprisonment without paying any Ransom for the Time past, in Case they have not already agreed on some certain Ransom, by Covenant made before the third Day of *May* last past : And if any of them be out of *England*, and shall not render himself as an Hostage at *Calais*, within the first Month after the said three Weeks following the Feast of *St. John* (all just Impediment ceasing) he shall not at all be discharged his Prison, but shall be constrained by the King of *France* to return into *England*, as Prisoner, or to pay the Penalty promised by him, <sup>d</sup> if he did not return.

XVII. *Item*, It is agreed, that in Lieu of the said Hostages, which shall not come to *Calais*, or which shall die, or depart out of the Power of the King of *England*, without Leave ; the King of *France* is obliged to send others of a like Estate with them, as near as may be, within three Months next after that the Bailiff of *Amiens*, or the Mayor of *St. Omers*, shall be certified hereof by Letters of the said King of *England*.

XVIII. And the <sup>e</sup> King of *France*, at his Departure from *Calais*, may take in his Company Ten of the Hostages, such as the two Kings shall agree upon : And it shall suffice, that, of the fore-said Number of <sup>f</sup> Forty, there shall remain the full Number of Thirty.

L

XIX. *Item*,

<sup>d</sup> *Du Chesne*, And incurred by his Default in not returning. <sup>e</sup> *Du Chesne* hunc Articulum præcedenti adjungit, nos sequimur MSS. supra citata. <sup>f</sup> This shews that in the fifteenth Article, where, in all the Copies, *French, English, and Latin*, 'tis read *Charles of Blois*, or his Brother and the Earl of *Alençon*, or Monsieur *Peter of Alençon* his Brother : In both Places it should be *and for or* (as I have corrected it) or else the Number of the Hostages amounts but to *Thirtye-eight*, and not to *Forty*, as it is here expressly said.



XIX. *Item*, It is agreed, that the King of *France*, within three Months after he shall be gone from *Calais*, shall send unto *Calais*, for Hostages, four Persons of the Town of *Paris*, and two Persons of every other of the Towns, whose Names follow ; that is to say, of *St. Omers*, *Arras*, *Amiens*, *Beauvais*, *Lille*, *Douay*, *Tournay*, *Rheims*, *Chalons*, *Troyes*, *Chartres*, *Thoulouse*, *Lyons*, *Orleans*, *Compeigne*, *Rouen*, *Caen*, *Tours*, and *Bourges*; and that they shall be the most sufficient of the said Towns, for the Accomplishment of this present Treaty.

XX. *Item*, It is agreed, that the King of *France* shall be brought from *England* to *Calais*, and shall stay at *Calais* four Months after his Coming ; but he shall not pay any Thing the first Month, because of his Keeping : But for every other Month following, that he shall stay at *Calais*, thro' Default of himself or of his Subjects, he shall pay for his Keeping six Thousand Ryals, such as are current at this Present in *France*, before his Departure from *Calais* ; and so proportionably for the Time he shall stay there.

XXI. *Item*, It is agreed, that, as soon as may be, within one Year next after that the King of *France* shall depart from *Calais*, the Lord *John* Earl of *Monford* shall have the Earldom of *Monford*, with all the Appurtenances, he doing for the same, Liege Homage to the King of *France*, and all such Duties and Services, which a good and loyal Liege Vassal ought to do to his Liege Lord, because of the said Earldom. And also his other Heritages shall be rendered unto him, which are not of the Dutchy of *Bretagne*, he doing Homage,

Homage, or other Duty therefore, as it appertaineth: And if he will challenge any Thing in any of the Inheritances, which are of the said Dutchy, besides the Country of *Bretagne*, good and speedy Reason shall be done him by the Court of *France*.

XXII. *Item*, Concerning the Question as to the Demaine of the Dutchy of *Bretagne*, which is between the said *John* of *Monford* on the one Party, and *Charles* of *Blois* on the other Party; it is agreed, that the two Kings having called before them, or their Deputies, the principal Parties of *Blois* and *Monford*, shall by themselves, or special Deputies, as soon as may be, inform themselves of the Right of both Parties, and do their best to set them at an Agreement touching what is in Controversy between them. And in Case the said Kings, by themselves or their Deputies, shall not be able to bring them to an Agreement, within one Year next after that the King of *France* shall be arrived at *Calais*, then the Friends of the one Party and of the other shall diligently inform themselves of the Right of the Parties, in Manner above-said, and shall endeavour to bring the said Parties to an Agreement to the best of their Power, and as soon as may be. And if they cannot bring them to an Agreement, within half a Year next following, they shall then report unto the said two Kings, or to their Deputies, all that which they shall have found about the Right of the Parties, and touching the Points of Discord, which shall remain between them both. And then the two Kings by themselves, or their special Deputies, as soon as may be, shall set the said Parties at an

Agreement, or shall declare their final Sentence about the Right of the one Party and of the other, and the same shall be put in Execution by the two Kings. And, in Case they cannot do this within half a Year next following, then the said principal Parties of *Blois* and *Monford* shall do what they shall think best ; and the Friends of the one Part and of the other shall aid either Part, as they please, without any Impeachment from the said Kings, and without any Damage, Blame, or Reproof by either of them at any Time for the Cause aforesaid. And if it so happen, that one of the said Parties will not sufficiently appear before the said Kings, or their Deputies, at the Time which shall be appointed for them : And also in Case that the said Kings, or their Deputies, at the Time which shall be appointed for them : And also in Case that the said Kings, or their Deputies, shall have ordained and declared, that the said Parties should be at Concord, or shall declare their Sentence for the Right of the one Party, and either of the said Parties will not agree unto the same, nor obey the said Declaration ; then both the said Kings shall be against him with all their Power, and aid the other Party, which is content to agree and to obey. But the two Kings shall in no Case, neither in their own proper Persons, nor by others, make, or enterprize War one against the other for the Cause aforesaid : And always the Sovereignty and Homage of the said Dukedom shall remain to the King of *France*.

XXIII. *Item*, That all the Lands, Countries, Towns, Castles, and other Places yielding over to the said Kings, shall be in such Liberties and Franchises,

chises, as they are at this Present : And these Franchises shall be confirmed by the said Lords, the Kings, or by their Successors, and by every of them, so often as they shall be duly required there-to, if they be not contrary to this Agreement.

XXIV. *Item*, That the said King of *France*, so soon as he can, and at the farthest within one Year next after that he shall depart from *Calais*, shall without Deceit render, and cause to be rendered *de facto*, to Monsieur *Philip* of *Navarre*, and to all his publick Adherents, all the Towns, Castles, Forts, Lordships, Rights, Rents, Profits, Jurisdiccions, and Places whatsoever, which the said Monsieur *Philip*, as well in his own Right, as in the Right of his Wife, or which the said Adherents do hold or ought to hold in the Realm of *France*. Neither shall the said King do unto them, at any Time, Reproach, Damage, or Impeachment for any Thing done heretofore ; but shall forgive them all Offences and Misprisions for the Time past, by Occasion of the War. And of this they shall have his Letters good and sufficient, so as the said Monsieur *Philip* and his said Adherents shall return to his Homage, do unto him their Duties, and be unto him good and loyal Vassals.

XXV. *Item*, It is agreed, that the King of *England*, for this Time only, may give, unto whom it shall please him in Heritage, the Lands and Inheritance which sometimes appertained to *Godfrey* of *Harcourt*, to be held of the Duke of *Normandy*, or of any other Lords of whom they shall be holden of Right by the Homages and Services anciently accustomed.



XXVI. *Item*, It is agreed, that no Person or Country, which have been of the Obedience of the one Party, and by this Agreement shall come to the Obedience of the other Party, shall be impeached for any Thing done in Time past.

XXVII. *Item*, It is agreed, that the Lands of the Banished and Adherents of the one Party and of the other, and also of the Churches of the one Kingdom and of the other; and all they, who are disinherited, or expelled from their Lands and Heritages, or are charged with any Pension, Tailage, or Debt, or otherwise grieved in any Manner whatsoever, because of this War, shall be restored intirely to the same Rights and Possessions, which they had before the War began. And that all Manner of Forfeitures, Debts, and Misprisions, done by them, or any of them, in the mean Time, shall be wholly pardoned; and that these Things shall be done as soon as may be, effectually, and, at the farthest, within one Year next after that the King of *France* shall be gone from *Calais*; excepting what was said in the Article of *Calais* and *Merk*, and other Places in the said Article named; excepting also the Viscount of *Fronsac* and Monsieur *John de Galard*, who are not comprised in this Article; but their Goods and Heritages shall remain in the same State, wherein they were before this present Treaty.

XXVIII. *Item*, It is agreed, that the King of *France* shall effectually deliver unto the King of *England*, as soon as may be, and, at the farthest, before the Feast of St. *Michael* the Year next coming after his Departure from *Calais*, all the Cities, Towns, Countries, and other Places abovenamed, which,

which, by this present Treaty, ought to be delivered unto the King of *England*.

XXIX. *Item*, It is agreed, that the Towns, Forts, and whole County of *Ponthieu*, the Towns, Forts, and whole County of *Montrevil*, the City and Castle of *Saincte*, the Castles, Towns, and Forts, and all that which the King holdeth in Demaine, in the Country of *Saintogne*, on this Side, and beyond the *Charente*; the Castle and City of *Angoulesme*, and the Castles, Forts, and Towns which the King of *France* holdeth in Demaine in the Country of *Angoulesmois*, with Letters and Mandates of releasing of Fees being delivered to the King of *England*, or to other especially deputed for him; then the King of *England*, at his own proper Cost and Charges, shall deliver all the Forts taken and possessed by himself, his Subjects, Adherents, and Allies, in the Countries of *France*, *Anjou*, *Touraine*, *Maine*, *Berry*, *Auvergne*, *Burgundy*, *Champaigne*, *Picardy*, and *Normandy*; and in all other Parts, Lands, and Places of the King of *France*, except those of the Dutchy of *Bretagne*, and the Countries and Lands which, by this present Treaty, ought to belong and remain to the King of *England*.

XXX. *Item*, It is agreed, that the King of *France* shall cause to be delivered to the King of *England*, his Heirs or Deputies, all the Towns, Castles, Forts, and other Lands, Countries, and Places above-named, with their Appurtenances, at the proper Costs and Charges of the said King of *France*: And also, that if he shall have any Rebels

L 4

<sup>2</sup> *L'Isle, de la France.*

bels, and such as will not obey, to render, yield up, or restore to the King of *England* any Cities, Towns, Castles, Countries, Places, or Forts, which, by this present Treaty, ought to appertain unto him, then the King of *France* shall be obliged to cause them to be delivered to the King of *England*, at his own Charges: And, in like Manner, the King of *England* shall cause those Forts, which, by this present Treaty, ought to appertain to the King of *France*, to be delivered at his own Charges: The said Kings, and their Subjects with them, shall be obliged mutually to aid one another in this Respect, if they shall be thereto required, at the Wages of the Party so requiring: Which shall be a Floren of *Florence*, *per Diem*, for a Knight, half a Floren for an Esquire, and for others proportionably. And, of the Surplus of double Wages, it is agreed, that, if the Pay aforesaid shall be too little, Respect being had to the Price of Victuals in the Country, it shall be done at the Appointment of four Knights elected thereto; that is to say, of two on the one Party, and two on the other.

XXXI. *Item*, It is agreed, that all the Archbishops, Bishops, and other Prelates of Holy Church shall, in Regard of their Temporalities, be subject to that King of the two, under whom they hold their Temporalities: And, if they have Temporalities under both the Kings, they shall be subject to each of the two Kings, for the Temporalities which they hold of either of them.

XXXII. *Item*, It is agreed, that good Alliance, Friendship, and Confederation shall be made between the Kings of *France* and of *England*, and their

their Realms, in maintaining the Honour and Conscience of the one King and of the other; notwithstanding any Confederations which they have on this Side, or beyond the Sea, with any Persons, whether of *Scotland*, or *Flanders*, or of any other Country whatsoever.

XXXIII. *Item*, It is agreed, that the King of *France* and the Regent his eldest Son, for themselves, and for their Heirs, Kings of *France*, shall, as much as may be done, forsake and altogether depart from the Alliances which they have with the *Scots*, and shall promise, as much as may be, that they, neither they, nor their Heirs, nor the Kings of *France* for the Time being, shall give, or lend to the King of *Scotland*, or to the Subjects thereof, present, or to come, any Aid, Favour, or Comfort, against the said King of *England*, or against his Heirs and Successors, or against his Realm or Subjects, in any Sort: And that they shall not make any Alliances with the said *Scots*, against the said King of *England* and Realm of *England*, in Time to come. And likewise, the King of *England* and his eldest Son, so much as it can, or may be done, shall forsake and depart from all those Alliances which they have with the *Flemings*, and shall promise, that neither they, nor their Heirs, nor the Kings of *England* for the Time being, shall give, or lend to the *Flemings*, present, or to come, any Aid, Favour, or Comfort, against the King of *France*, his Heirs or Successors, or against his Kingdom or Subjects, in any Sort: And that they shall not make any Alliances with the said *Flemings*, against the said King and Realm of *France*, in Time to come.

XXXVI. *Item*,



XXXIV. *Item*, It is agreed, that the Collations and Provisions made by the one Party, and by the other, of Benefices falling void during the War, shall hold good and remain in Force : And that the Fruits, Issues, and Revenues, received and levied of any Benefices and other Temporalities whatsoever, in the said Realms of *France* and *England*, by the one Party, or by the other, during the said Wars, shall be quit-  
ted on both Sides.

XXXV. *Item*, That the Kings aforesaid shall be obliged to cause to be confirmed all the Matters aforesaid by our Holy Father the Pope, and they shall be ratified by Oaths, Sentences, and Censures of the Court of *Rome*, and by all other Tyes in the most binding Manner that may be : And there shall be obtained from the Court of *Rome* Dispensations, Absolutions, and Letters, touching the Accomplishment and Perfection of this present Treaty ; and they shall be delivered to the Parties, at the farthest within three Weeks after the King shall be arrived at *Calais*.

XXXVI. *Item*, That all the Subjects of the said Kings, which will study at the Studies and Universities of the Realms of *France* and of *England*, shall enjoy the Privileges and Liberties of the said Studies and Universities, in like Manner as they might have done before the present Wars, and as they do at present.

XXXVII. *Item*, To the End that the Matters aforesaid, treated and discoursed, may be more stable, firm, and valid, there shall be done and given these Confirmations following ; that is to say, Letters sealed with the Seals of the said  
Kings:

Kings: And the said Kings, and their eldest Sons, and their other Children, and others of the Lineage of the said Kings, and other Noblemen of their Realms, to the Number of Twenty, on either Party, shall swear, that they will observe, and endeavour to maintain as much as concerneth each of them, without Fraud or Deceit, the said Matters treated and agreed on; and accomplish them without ever going to the Contrary, and without impeaching the Performance thereof: And if there be any Persons of the said Realms of *France* and of *England*, who shall rebel, or will not accord to the Premises, the said Kings shall use all their said Power of Body, Goods, and Counsel to reduce the said Rebels to true Obedience, according to the Form and Tenor of the said Treaty. And moreover the said Kings shall submit themselves, their Heirs and Realms, to the Correction of our Holy Father the Pope, that he may constrain by Sentences and Censures of the Church, and other due Ways, him who shall rebel, according as Reason shall require. And, among the Confirmations and Securities aforesaid, the said Kings and their Heirs shall renounce by Oath and by Faith all War and all Procedure of Fact: And if through the Disobedience, Rebellion, and Power of any Subjects of the Realm of *France*, or any just Cause, the King of *France*, or his Heirs, or any of them shall not be able to accomplish all the Premises, the King of *England* and his Heirs, or any of them, shall not be able to accomplish all the Premises, the King of *England* and his Heirs, or any of them, shall not nor ought not to make War against the  
said

said King of *France*, nor his Heirs, nor his Realm; but both together shall endeavour to bring the Rebels to true Obedience, and to accomplish the Premises : And if any of the Realm or Obeisance of the King of *England* will not restore the Castles, Towns, or Forts which they hold in the Realm of *France*, and obey the Treaty aforesaid, or for just Cause cannot accomplish that which he ought to do by this present Treaty, neither the King of *France*, nor his Heirs, nor any for them, shall make any War upon the King of *England* or his Realm, but both together shall put to their Power, to recover the Castles, Forts, and Towns aforesaid, and to be a Means that all Obedience and Accomplishment may be done to the foresaid Treaties : And there shall also be done and given of the one Party and of the other, according to the Nature of the Fact, all Manner of Confirmations and Securities, that they can think on or devise, as well by the Pope, and the College of the Court of *Rome*, as otherwise, perpetually to hold and preserve the Peace, and all other Matters here above recorded.

XXXVIII. *Item*, It is agreed by the present Treaty and Accord, that all other Accords, Treaties, or Conferences, if any have been made or debated in Time past, shall be null and of no Force, and altogether made void ; neither may the Parties at any Time relieve themselves, nor make any Complaint the one against the other, on Occasion of the said Treaties or Accords, if any such hath been as is said.

XXXIX. *Item*, That this present Treaty shall be approved, sworn, and confirmed by the two  
Kings

Kings at *Calais*, when they shall be there in proper Person : And after that the King of *France* shall be gone from *Calais*, and shall be within his own Power, the said King of *France*, within one Month next following his said Departure, shall make Letters Patent confirmatory of the same, and such others as shall seem necessary, and shall send and deliver them at *Calais* to the said King of *England*, or his Deputies in the said Place : And also the said King of *England*, when he receives the said Letters confirmatory, shall deliver back his Letters confirmatory, like unto them, to the King of *France*.

XL. *Item*, It is agreed, that neither of the Kings shall procure, or cause to be procured by himself or others, that any Innovations or Grievances be done by the Church of *Rome*, or others of Holy Church, whosoever they be, against this present Treaty, upon either of the said Kings, their Coadjutors, Adherents, and Allies whatsoever ; nor upon their Lands or Subjects, by Occasion of War, nor for other Cause, nor for Services which the said Coadjutors, Adherents, or Allies have done to the said Kings, or any of them : And if our said Holy Father the Pope, or any other, would do so, the two said Kings shall hinder it to their Power sincerely without Fraud.

XLI. *Item*, Concerning the Hostages which shall be delivered to the King of *England* at *Calais*, and concerning the Manner and Time of their Departure, the two Kings shall determine at *Calais*.

This Treaty was ratified by both the Principals, tho' the *French* Historians say, the Regent yielded there-



thereto through Necessity, seeing the Realm of *France* no longer able to subsist, amidst those Desolations and Ruins brought by the War. However, tho' the Prince of *Wales* and the Regent concluded and ratified it, and a Truce was to continue from that Time to the Feast of St. *Michael* next following, and from thence for a Year; that all Matters might be established in order to a firm and perpetual Peace, and that King *John* might, when at Liberty, also ratify it: Yet in the mean Time, the two eldest Sons of the Kings were solemnly sworn to uphold and maintain the aforesaid Articles of Agreement. And thereupon the Prince of *Wales* ordain'd, on his Part, four Barons of *England*, the Lord *Ralph Stafford*, Earl of *Stafford*; the Lord *Reginald Cobham*, the Lord *Guy Brian*, and the Lord *Roger Beauchamp* of *Bletsoe*, to see the Dauphin make Oath for the Performance. And they were received into *Paris*, as Messengers from Heaven, all the Bells ringing, and all the Streets they passed being spread and tapistred (if we may believe *Du Chesne*)<sup>b</sup> with Cloth of Gold. They went directly to the Palace where the Regent, his Brethren, and their Uncle, with many Lords and Prelates, received them honourably: *Du Chesne* says, that in the great Hall, in Presence of all the People, the *English* Lords made Oath, and swore in the Name of the King their Master, and of his Sons, upon the Holy Eucharist, and upon the Holy Evangelists, to accomplish and hold the said Articles. From the Hall they were conducted to a magnificent Feast, and from thence to the Chapel, where the Regent shew'd them many Jewels  
and

<sup>b</sup> Hist. of *France*, p. 692.

and Relicks, making them a Present of one great Thorn, said to have belong'd to the Crown of our Saviour. After this they return'd, and the Regent on his Part deputed four Nobles of *France*, who immediately went to the Prince of *Wales* at *Louviers* in *Normandy*, and there made for him the same Oath in Presence of the said Prince.

But it's most likely, that these Lords, on each Side, went rather to take the Oath, first of the Dauphin, and then of the Prince of *Wales*, as most other Writers affirm ; the Manner whereof *Walsingham*<sup>i</sup> thus describes : “ That, at *Paris*,  
 “ in the Time of low Mass, when they had thrice  
 “ sang, *O Lamb of God, which takest away the*  
 “ *Sins of the World, Grant us thy Peace, Charles,*  
 “ the Dauphin and Regent of *France*, went up  
 “ to the Altar, and, laying his right Hand on the  
 “ Paten, wherein lay the Holy Eucharist, and his  
 “ left on the Gospel, he took his Oath in these  
 “ Words : *We, Charles, do swear upon the Holy*  
 “ *Body and the Gospels of our Lord, firmly, what*  
 “ *in us lies, to keep this Peace and Concord, thus*  
 “ *formed between the two Kings, and by no Means*  
 “ *to go against the same. So help us, &c.*” And the like Oath was taken by the Prince of *Wales*, in the Church of *Louviers* in *Normandy*. Of both which there were made Letters Patent, that at *Paris* bearing Date on the Tenth Day of *May*, and the other at *Louviers* on the Sixteenth of the said Month *A. D.* 1360. I shall hereafter shew, with what base Diffimulation, *Charles* the Dauphin, when he was King of *France*, broke this  
 sacred

<sup>i</sup> Hist. p. 167. and Hypod. p. 127. Odor. Rainal. ad hunc Annum. *Fabian*, p. 241, &c.

sacred and solemn Oath, which the *French* Historians endeavour to excuse very frivolously.

The *Parisians*,<sup>k</sup> by Leave of the Dauphin, redeemed the Fortresses of *Herelle*, *la Neuville in Haye*, *Pont St. Maixence*, *Lybon*, *Frescheville*, *Deiteville*, *Baslieu le secq*, *Chevreuse*, and *la Ferte sous Joüerre*, for the Price and Sum of Twenty-four Thousand Florens of Gold, of the Coin of King *Philip* of *Valois*, which they paid to the Earl of *Warwick* and the Capital of *Busche*, tho', on the Ratification of the Peace by the two Kings, those Places were to be rendered gratis. But, being in the Neighbourhood of their City, they were not easy, till they were delivered to them.

King *Edward*, having seen the Peace ratified by the Dauphin of *France*, marched from before *Chartres* over the *Seyne*, and by *Abbeville* over the *Soame* to *Calais*, where he gave Order for the embarquing his Men. But the Prince of *Wales*, with his Body of Forces, marched into *Normandy*, being at *Louviers* as was said before; and therefore the King hastened from *Calais* to the Port of *Harfleur* in *Normandy*, where<sup>l</sup> he took Shipping with the Prince for *England*, and landed at *Rye* in *Kent*, on the Eighteenth of *May* in the Evening, and thence the next Day came to *Westminster*.

King *John* being now to return to his Kingdom, the Prince of *Wales* attended him to *Calais*,<sup>m</sup> where he was conducted on the Eighth of *July*; and was so noble to stay with him there till the Twenty-fifth

<sup>k</sup> *Du Chesne*, p. 692.  
Ed. 3. m. 30.

<sup>l</sup> *Assmole*, p. 662. ex Rot. Claus. 34.  
<sup>m</sup> *Hollinshed*, p. 394.

ty-fifth of *October*, the Payment of the Money for his Ransom being delayed till that Time. The Prince <sup>n</sup> had a Commission from the King, with Authority to treat on any Thing that concerned, or was comprised in the said Treaty before-mentioned, either in General or Special: To demand and receive the Hostages, Money, Castles, Cities, and Fortresses, and whatever else was to be delivered to the King by Vertue thereof; with a general Clause, to add and supply the Power granted, if any solemn or substantial Thing should be omitted, through much Business, or otherwise; or were expedient or advantageous to the Premises.

On King *Edward's* Arrival at *Calais*, which was on the Ninth of *October*, both Kings ratified, and confirmed by Oath, the said Treaty, with some few Alterations; <sup>o</sup> and several Instruments, relating to the full Accomplishment of the several Articles thereof, were drawn up and sealed with the Great Seal of both Kings; all bearing Date at *Calais* the Twenty-fourth of *October*, 1360. There also were the Renunciations on either Side, both <sup>p</sup> Absolute, and <sup>q</sup> Conditional, to all the Towns, Castles, Countries, &c. to the Resort and Sovereignty, &c. comprehended in the Articles of Peace, <sup>a</sup> drawn up, sworn to, and sealed at the same Time, but not exchanged, because the King of *France* was as yet in *Calais*, and Prisoner to King *Edward*, and the Towns, &c. not as yet delivered. But it was then nevertheless agreed and promised, that they should be surrendered to the special Deputies on both Sides, by

M

*Midsummer*

<sup>n</sup> Rot. Cales de Negot. Commun. 34 Ed. 3. m. 6. and Rymers's Fœdera, tom. 6. p. 175, to 178. <sup>o</sup> *Assmole*, p. 663. <sup>p</sup> Rot. de Tract. Pacis, Franc. 34 Ed. 3. m. 9. <sup>q</sup> Ibid. m. 7.



*Midsummer* following, if it might be; and the Renunciations sent at the *Assumption* of our Lady next ensuing, to the Church of the *Augustine* Friars at *Bruges*, to be delivered to those deputed to receive them. Or, if they were not surrendered till *Albollantide* after, then the Renunciations were to be delivered in the said Church on St. *Andrew's* Day following; at which Time and Place, both Kings engaged to send thither, and caused to be delivered to the Deputies on both Sides, theirs, and likewise their eldest Sons Renunciations. There was also another Instrument dated at *Calais* the said Twenty-fourth of *October*, 1360<sup>r</sup>, whereby King *Edward* was obliged to deliver up to the *French* King on this Side *Candlemas*, *An. 35. Ed. 3.* several Castles and Fortresses which he held in other Parts of *France*, than in those Provinces surrendered to him by the *French* King; which are all particularly specified in the Record.

Whilst King *John* was at *Calais*, he invited King *Edward* and his Sons to take a Dinner with him, which was fixed for the Twelfth of *October*.<sup>\*</sup> At Dinner-time King *Edward* had the first Seat, and held State; next to him sat the *French* King, thirdly the Prince of *Wales*, and lastly the Duke of *Lancaster*, no other sitting at Table: But, before they rose, the Earl of *Flanders* came to pay a Visit to both Kings. When this royal Entertainment was over, two of the King of *England's* younger Sons, and two of the *French* King's, took Leave of their Fathers, and rode towards *Bologne*; and were met Half-way by the Dauphin, who

<sup>\*</sup> Rot. de Traçt. Pacis Franc. 34 Ed. 3. m. 5.  
594.

<sup>s</sup> Barnes, p.

who conducted them thither. The next Morning, having left the two *English* Princes there, as it were Pledges for his Security, the Dauphin went to *Calais* to wait on his Father, whom he first visited, and then both of them went to King *Edward's* Palace; and the two Kings and their eldest Sons dined together. The next Day the Dauphin took his Leave, and, on his Coming to *Bologne*, King *Edward's* two Sons rode back to *Calais*.

All Matters relating to the Peace being thus firmly established, by strict and solemn Engagements between the two Kings and their Sons, and the *French* Hostages being arrived at *Calais*, and four Hundred Thousand Crowns of Gold being paid, King *Edward* entertained King *John* at a great Supper in the Castle, where the Prince of *Wales* with his Brethren, and the chief Nobility of *England*, served the King bare-headed. The next Morning being the Twenty-fifth of *October*, King *John* with his Retinue left *Calais*, King *Edward* himself conveying him a Mile onwards of his Way; but the generous Prince of *Wales* went with him to *Bologne*, where the Dauphin the Regent received them with great Joy. There was between King *John* and the Prince of *Wales* a most sincere Friendship, which was declared the next Day on taking Leave of each other, with all the endearing Signs of royal Love and Affection that could be expressed.

The Prince, on his Return to *Calais*, embarked with his royal Father and the *French* Hostages on the Last of *October*, and landed at *Dover* early the next Morning. At *Canterbury* they

M 2

made

<sup>1</sup> *Asmole*, p. 564.

<sup>2</sup> *Fabian*, p. 243. and *Barnes*, p. 693.

made their Offerings at the Shrine of *St. Thomas*, and staid till the Ninth of *November* before they came to *London*, at what Time the King <sup>w</sup> gave Command to all his Officers on certain Penalties, that they should bear themselves kind and favourable to the Lords of *France* his Hostages, and to the Burgeses of the good Towns, and all their Company; and, on Occasion, to take their Part, and defend them from all Affronts, Injuries, and Abuses whatsoever.

The King kept his *Christmas* <sup>\*</sup> in great Splendor at *Woodstock* near *Oxford*, with his Sons and most of the Nobility; and, after the Holydays, met his Parliament at *Westminster* on <sup>y</sup> the Twenty-fourth of *January* 1361, to whom he communicated all the Articles, and the whole Process of the Peace with the King of *France*. On the Last of *January*, the Archbishop of *Canterbury* with great Solemnity celebrated the Mass of the Holy Trinity, returning Thanks to Almighty God. After Mass, the King, the Prince of *Wales*, and his Brethren standing up in Presence of the *French* Hostages, Torches being lighted and held over the Eucharist and Missale, all those of the Peers, who had not sworn to keep the Peace, now took their Oath, the Archbishop beginning in this Form: *We, Simon Archbishop of Canterbury, do swear upon the Holy Body of God and his Holy Gospel, firmly, as much as in us lies, to keep the Peace and Concord agreed on between the two Kings of England and France, and to do nothing contrary thereto.*<sup>z</sup> After the same Method King *John* made

<sup>w</sup> *Froissart*, c. 113, ad Finem.  
<sup>y</sup> *Stow*, p. 264.      <sup>z</sup> *Barnes*, p. 608.

<sup>\*</sup> *Walsingh.* p. 170.

made his Son the Dauphin, his Lords and Estates of Parliament, swear to uphold the said Peace to their Power. And both Kings sent their Ambassadors to the Pope, for his Apostolical Sanction and surer Confirmation thereof; which was observed inviolably by King *John* as long as he lived, but his Son *Charles*, tho' so solemnly swore to it, most perfidiously, and with the deepest Dissimulation, broke it.

The most heroick Prince of *Wales*, soften'd with Peace, was now Captive in Love, being smitten with the Charms of *Joan*, Countess of *Kent*, frequently called *The fair Maid of Kent*, for her admirable Beauty. She was Daughter, and at length Heiress, <sup>a</sup> of *Edmund* of *Woodstock*, Earl of *Kent*, second Son of King *Edward* the First. Tho' thus royally descended, she was first married to Sir *Thomas Holland*, and, on his Going beyond the Seas, was contracted to *William Montagu*, Earl of *Salisbury*. Whereupon Sir *Thomas Holland*, by his Petition <sup>b</sup> to Pope *Clement* VI, represented, that the said Earl of *Salisbury* intended to have wedded her, had not a Pre-contract between her and him been formerly made, and carnal Knowledge ensued. Yet nevertheless, the Earl, taking Advantage of his Absence in foreign Parts, made a second Contract with her, and unjustly withheld her. On a full Hearing of the Cause, his Holiness gave Sentence for him; and the Earl of *Salisbury*, acquiescing therein, married another. By Sir *Thomas Holland* (who in her Right was Earl of *Kent*) she had three Sons and a Daughter, and he dying <sup>c</sup> on the Twenty-eighth of *December*, 34 *Ed.* 3. she yet retained so much

M 3

of

<sup>a</sup> Sandf. Gen. Hist. <sup>b</sup> Ex Reg. *Islip*. f. 178. <sup>c</sup> Esc. 35 *Ed.* 3. n. 104.



of her Beauty and Charms, that the Prince of *Wales* fell in Love with her.

She was now in the Thirty-third Year of her Age, and the Prince in the one and Thirtieth of his. He the great Grand-Child of King *Edward* the First, and she Grand-child to the said King, as afore-mentioned. He the Glory of his Sex for military Performances, and all princely Virtues; and she the Flower of her's, for a most surprizing Beauty, sweetened with a sprightly Wit, and honourable Mind. It's said, <sup>a</sup> that, when the Prince first made his Addresses to her, it was in Behalf of one he much favour'd; but that after several Denials, with which he would not be put off, she told him with some Warmth, "*How, when she was under Ward, she had been disposed of by others; but that now being at Years of Discretion, and Mistress of her own Actions, she would not cast herself beneath her Rank; but remembered she was of the Blood Royal of England, and therefore resolved never to marry again, but to a Prince for Quality and Virtue like himself.*" The Prince was a passionate Admirer of every gallant Spirit, and knowing what she said was true, he presently return'd her Compliment in an endearing Manner, and, from that Instant, became a Suiter for himself. Having imparted his Affections to his royal Father, he was pleased with his Thoughts of Marriage; and, they being within the Degrees of Consanguinity, he procured a <sup>c</sup> Dispensation from the Pope, which bears Date at *Avignon* the Seventh of the Ides of *September*, *An. 1361*.

They

<sup>a</sup> *Job. Harding*, c. 185. f. 186.  
P. 333.

<sup>c</sup> *Rymer's Fœdera*, Tom. 6.

They were married with great Splendor and Solemnity, in the Castle of *Windſor*<sup>†</sup>, on the Tenth of *October* following, in the Preſence of the Biſhops of *Wincheſter*, *Lincoln*, and *Salisbury*; the Elect Biſhop of *Worceſter*, the Abbot of *Westminſter*, the Deans of *Litchfield*, *Lincoln*, and of the Chapel Royal; the Treasuſer of *York*, *John* Earl of *Richmond*, and *Edmund de Langley*, Brethren to the Prince; the Earls of *Warwick*, and *Suffolk*; the Queens of *England* and *Scotland*; *Iſabel* the King's Daughter, *Maud* Counteſs of *Hainault*, and others.

The King having ſuch large Territories in *France* (the Sovereignty whereof was confirm'd to him by the Treaty of *Bretigny*) even from the River *Loire* to the *Pirenean* Mountains, and on the other Side toward *Flanders*, of all the Earldom of *Pontbieu* and *Guiſnes*, he had Thoughts of erecting *Aquitain* and the other Provinces into a Kingdom, as will hereafter appear. But, taking into Conſideration the great Services of his dear Son *Edward* Prince of *Wales*, he reſign'd to him *Aquitain*, with the Provinces adjoining, by the Name of *Prince of Aquitain*, by his royal Charter; which ſhews, with many tender Expreſſions, the great Love he had for his Son, and what Countries he granted to him. The Charter bears Date the Nineteenth of *July*, 1362, being the Thirty-fixth Year of King *Edward* the Third; and the ſame Day there was another Charter of Explanation, whereby the King more particularly declared the Senſe of his Reſervation of the Reſort and Sovereignty. The Charter of Creation is incorporated in that of

M 4

Expla-

<sup>†</sup> *Rymer's Fœdera*, Tom. 6. p. 334.

Explanation; the Margin of the <sup>e</sup> Roll being *Pro Edvardo Principe Aquitanie & Wallie*. The Charter of Explanation is *French*, and that of Creation *Latin*, which the Reader may find in Mr. Selden's *Titles of Honour*<sup>n</sup>; but the Whole, in *English*, will I don't doubt, be satisfactory to the Curious.

*The King to all those, who shall see or hear these Letters, Greeting. Whereas this present Day we have given to our right dear eldest Son, Edward Prince of Wales, the Name, Renown, and Title of the Principality of Aquitain, transferring unto his Person, for his Life only, all the Cities, Counties, Castles, Lands, Countries, Towns, Forts, Isles, Provinces, and Places, which we have and ought to have, by Vertue of the Peace last made between us and our right dear Brother the King of France, in the Country of Aquitain; and also those which we have and hold, or ought to have and hold in all Gascoigne, together with the Homages, Allegiances, Honours, Obeisances, Vassalages, Fees, Arrear-fees, Services, Recognisances, Rights, meer and mixt Empire, and Jurisdictions, high, mean, and low, Safeguards, Advowsons and Patronages of Churches, Metropolitan and Cathedral, Abbies, Priories, Monasteries, Hospitals both secular and regular, and of other Benefices of the Church appertaining unto us, by Cause or on Occasion of the Premises; the Duties, Cens, Rents, Confiscations, Emoluments, Profits, Reversions, and all Manner of Rights, and all other Appurtenances and Appendages, as entirely and perfectly as we hold them, or as any of our Progenitors have held*

<sup>e</sup> Rot. Vasc. 36. Ed. 3. M. 18. n. 17.  
487, &c.

<sup>b</sup> Part 2. ch. 3. p.

*beld them in any Time past, to hold under us and our Dominion of Aquitain, by liege Homage, as these and other Things are more largely comprised in our other Letters made to this Purposè, the Tenor whereof followeth.*

“ **E** *EDWARD* by the Grace of God King of  
 “ *England, Lord of Ireland, and of Aquitain,*  
 “ to our most dear eldest Son *Edward*, Prince of  
 “ *Wales*, Greeting. All temporal Dignities, as  
 “ Rays breaking from the Sun, do proceed from  
 “ the Throne royal : So that from hence the Per-  
 “ fection of their first Original may not feel the  
 “ Detriment of Contempt, but rather, being ex-  
 “ alted above Care and Anxiety, may so much  
 “ the more persist securely, and be governed  
 “ and continually protected in Prosperity, by how  
 “ much in Adversity it was sustained by more  
 “ and more excellent Defences. The kingly  
 “ Throne stands firm, when it is environed with  
 “ the Power of many Princes ; and the Subjects  
 “ rejoice more frequently to behold the Person of  
 “ their principal Lord in the lively Pictures of  
 “ their Blood and Lineage ; and count it their  
 “ Happiness, that, since their principal Lord can-  
 “ not be personally present in all Provinces of his  
 “ Dominions, yet they may behold him, who, if  
 “ Nature keeps her right Course, is to be his Heir,  
 “ continually standing by them : From whence  
 “ the Insolence of Transgressors, by the Honour  
 “ and Power of the Right committed unto him,  
 “ may for the Safeguard of the Loyal, be more  
 “ frequently punished, and the laudable and fruit-  
 “ ful Performances of others may be recompen-  
 “ ced



“ ced with the Return of a worthy Retribution.  
 “ We therefore being moved on this Considera-  
 “ tion, O! our most dear Son, and for many o-  
 “ ther reasonable Causes, intending by a liberal  
 “ Recompence to do Honour unto you, who late-  
 “ ly in the Parts of *Aquitain* and *Gascoigne*, while  
 “ there the frequent Storms of War raged, for our  
 “ Sakes, did not refuse the Summer Dust, and the  
 “ Labour of War, but under the Name and Title  
 “ of our Lieutenant have supported the Burthen  
 “ of our Cares, and with your Presence supplied  
 “ our Absence, out of our princely Prerogative do  
 “ convey and grant unto you, by these Presents,  
 “ the Principality of the under-written Lands and  
 “ Provinces of all *Aquitain* and *Gascoigne*, willing  
 “ and granting, that, of all and singular the said  
 “ Places, Lands, and Provinces, in our Name, next  
 “ and immediate under our Throne and Govern-  
 “ ment, you from henceforth be the true Prince,  
 “ and freely, during your natural Life, enjoy the  
 “ Honour, Title, Appellation, and Name of  
 “ Prince of *Aquitain*; even altho’ hereafter these  
 “ Provinces should be erected into the Title and  
 “ Dignity of a Kingdom; and from this Time  
 “ we do especially reserve unto ourselves a Power  
 “ of erecting them into a Kingdom. And that  
 “ the Honour of this Name thus granted may  
 “ prove hereafter, God willing, more advantageous  
 “ unto you, of our meer Bounty and certain  
 “ Knowledge, we give and grant unto you, and  
 “ to your single Person only, convey, in the best  
 “ Right and Manner that we can, the Cities, Cas-  
 “ tles, Towns, Lands, Places, and Provinces under-  
 “ written; and whatsoever Right of Possession  
 “ and

“ and Propriety we have, or any Ways have had,  
 “ or that any of our Progenitors hath any Way  
 “ had heretofore to them or in them (the direct  
 “ Lordship or Superiority thereof being always  
 “ especially to us reserved) to wit, the City and  
 “ Castle, and all the Land and Country of *Poic-*  
 “ *tou*, together with the Fief of *Thouars*, and  
 “ the Land of *Belleville*; the City and Castle,  
 “ and all the Land and Country of *Saintogne* on  
 “ this Side, and on that Side the *Charente*; the  
 “ City and Castle, and all the Land and Country  
 “ of *Agennois*; the City and Castle, and all the  
 “ Land and Country of *Perigort*; the City and  
 “ Castle, and all the Land and Country of *Li-*  
 “ *mosin*; the City and Castle, and all the Land  
 “ and Country of *Quercy*; the City and Castle,  
 “ and all the Land and Country of *Tarbe*; the  
 “ Land, Country, and Earldom of *Bigorre*; the  
 “ Earldom, Land, and Country of *Gaure*; the  
 “ City, Castle, Land, and Country of *Angoules-*  
 “ *mois*; the City, Castle, Land, and Country of  
 “ *Rouvergne*; the City and Castle of *Dax*; and  
 “ the Town and Castle of *St. Sever*; [\* and  
 “ also the City and Castle of *Bordeaux*; and the  
 “ City and Castle of *Baionne*] and all the Cities  
 “ and Castles, Towns, Places, Lands, and the  
 “ whole Country, as well of *Guienne* as of *Gas-*  
 “ *coigne*: To HAVE and to HOLD from us un-  
 “ der liege Homage (the said direct Lordship and  
 “ Sovereignty to us as aforesaid reserved) unto  
 “ yourself

\* These inclosed Words were at first omitted in this Charter; but  
 afterwards inserted in this Place, the Charter being renewed with  
 the same Date, and the Addition only of those Words. *Selden's*  
*Titl. of Honour*, Part 2. ch. 3. p. 492.

“ yourself, as long as you live, all and singular the  
 “ Cities, Castles, Towns, Places, Lands, Coun-  
 “ ties, and Provinces aforesaid, together with all  
 “ the Isles thereto belonging, Homages, Alle-  
 “ giances, Honours, Obeisances, Vassalages, Fees,  
 “ Arrear-Fees, Services, Recognisances, Rights,  
 “ meer and mixt Empire, and with Jurisdictions  
 “ high, mean, and low, Safeguards, Advowsons  
 “ and Patronages of Churches, Metropolitan and  
 “ Cathedral, both secular and regular, and of o-  
 “ ther ecclesiastical Benefices whatsoever to us ap-  
 “ pertaining, by Occasion or Cause of the Pre-  
 “ mises, the Duties, Cens, Rents, Confiscations,  
 “ Emoluments, Profits, Reversions, and all their  
 “ Rights and Purtenances, as entirely and perfect-  
 “ ly as we hold or have held them, or as any of  
 “ our Progenitors had or held them in Time past.  
 “ And, for the stronger Support and Confirmation  
 “ of your Name and Honour, we grant unto you  
 “ especial Authority and Power in the Lands,  
 “ Places, and Rights aforesaid, to give and  
 “ grant unto Persons deserving, either in Fee or  
 “ Demaine for ever, or for a Time, those Lands  
 “ or Places, which of old did not belong to our  
 “ Demaine, as it shall please you and seem best.  
 “ Also to make Coin, and stamp Monies of Gold  
 “ and Silver, or any other ; and to grant unto the  
 “ Masters and Workmen of the Mint Indulgen-  
 “ ces and Privileges, usually to such given ; and  
 “ also to *Amortize* Lands, Places, and Rents, free-  
 “ ly or under Finance, which are given at present  
 “ to *Mortmaine*, or shall be given or left hereafter :  
 “ Also to enoble Persons ignoble ; and Seneschals,  
 “ Judges,

“ Judges, Captains, \* Consuls, Secretaries, pub-  
 “ lick Solicitors, Receivers, and any other Officers  
 “ to create, ordain, and set in every Place of the  
 “ said Provinces; and the said Officers so placed  
 “ and ordained, when and as often as Need shall  
 “ be, to remove and to set others in the Place of  
 “ them so removed : Banished Persons and Crimi-  
 “ nals whatsoever, belonging to the said Provinces,  
 “ present, past, and to come, to their Condition,  
 “ Good-name, and Country, together with their  
 “ Goods moveable and immoveable, to restore and  
 “ call back ; and unto them full Pardon and Re-  
 “ mission of their Offences done, and to be done  
 “ in the foresaid Provinces (altho’ therefore they  
 “ have been condemned to Death, or shall be con-  
 “ demned, and have been of other Provinces) to  
 “ give, grant, and confirm : To any Cities, Castles,  
 “ and Places, Churches and Persons of the Church,  
 “ Monasteries, Colleges, Universities, and single  
 “ Persons, of what Condition soever they be,  
 “ Privileges, Immunities, Franchises, Liberties,  
 “ and Indulgences, perpetual and temporal what-  
 “ soever, to give and to grant : And if of old given  
 “ and granted, together with the Customs and  
 “ Usages (provided they be not contrary to the  
 “ Peace and Accord last made between us and our  
 “ most dear Brother the King of *France*) by our  
 “ Authority to confirm, when and as often as you  
 “ shall be required so to do ; and any other Things  
 “ whatsoever to do and exercise, which the *true*  
 “ *Prince of the said Provinces* might or should do  
 “ for the Welfare and Government of the Inhabi-  
 “ tants

\* In most Cities of *Aquitain*, the chief Governors are stiled Con-  
 suls. *Cotgrave’s French Diction. in Voce Consul.*



“ tants thereof, and for the Quiet of his Subjects.  
 “ All and singular which Premises, we will have  
 “ given, alienated, granted, bestowed, authorized,  
 “ restored, revoked, pardoned, remitted, conceded,  
 “ confirmed, done, acted, and performed by you,  
 “ and your Deputies ; and, from this Time as  
 “ heretofore, they shall have a like perpetual Va-  
 “ lidity, as if by us they were done, acted, and  
 “ performed as aforesaid. And moreover and  
 “ above, and as there shall be Need for their greater  
 “ Validity, from this Time as heretofore, we com-  
 “ mend, allow, and approve, and by the Tenor  
 “ of these Presents confirm them. *Datum sub*  
 “ *magni Sigilli nostri Testimonio in Palatio nostro*  
 “ *Westmonasterii, Die 19 Mensis Julii, Anno Domini*  
 “ *Millesimo, Tercentesimo, Sexagesimo Secundo, &*  
 “ *Regni nostri Tricesimo Sexto.*

“ Now to take away all Doubts and Conten-  
 “ tions, which may arise hereafter about this Mat-  
 “ ter, and to the End that the Affair may be more  
 “ clear, over and above and again we reserve to  
 “ ourselves, and to our Majesty royal, expressly  
 “ and by Tenor of these Presents, the direct Su-  
 “ premacy, and all the Sovereignty and Resort of  
 “ the whole Principality of *Aquitain* and *Gas-*  
 “ *coigne*, and of all the Cities, Counties, Castles,  
 “ Lands, Countries, Towns, Forts, Isles, Pro-  
 “ vinces, and Places, and of all Prelates, Earls,  
 “ Viscounts, Barons, Nobles, and other Subjects  
 “ and Inhabitants of the said Provinces, which  
 “ we have given to our said eldest Son, and con-  
 “ veyed unto his Person by the Tenor of our  
 “ Letters here above incorporated. And we will  
 “ and declare, that the immediate Supremacy,  
 “ the

“ the whole Sovereignty and Resort above-men-  
 “ tion’d, be and remain for ever to us and to our  
 “ said Majesty, to use the said Resorts in Time  
 “ and Place, as we shall think fit, which we will  
 “ not, nor intend to, leave nor convey to our said  
 “ Son, by the Title of a Principality, nor by any  
 “ other Thing whatsoever comprised in our said  
 “ Letters. And for an evident Token and clear  
 “ Demonstration, that our said Son shall hold, and  
 “ ought to hold, under us of our said Majesty,  
 “ and by liege Homage, the which he hath made  
 “ unto us at present, all the said Things and every  
 “ of them ; he shall be obliged to pay unto us  
 “ every Year at our Palace of *Westminster*, on the  
 “ Feast of *Easter*, one Ounce of Gold, whereof  
 “ he hath already given us Possession and Seisin, as  
 “ in Token and Recognition of our supreme Do-  
 “ minion : The which Thing, by the Name of  
 “ Revenue and annual Tribute, we impose on,  
 “ and really *de facto* ordain of certain Knowledge,  
 “ and of our Authority and full Power ; and will  
 “ that he pay it at the Place and Time abovesaid,  
 “ reserving unto ourselves expresse and especial  
 “ Power to diminish or enlarge the said Imposi-  
 “ tion and annual Tribute, or appoint it to be paid  
 “ unto us in other Things at other Times and  
 “ elsewhere, as it shall seem good unto us to do  
 “ for the Time to come, in gracious Considera-  
 “ tion and Regard had to the Estate of our said  
 “ Son, and to the Charges which are convenient  
 “ of Necessity to maintain and support him in the  
 “ Government of the foresaid Countries. *Donne*  
 “ *per Tesmoignance de nostre Grant Seal a nostre*  
 “ *Palays de Westminster, le XIX Jour de Juil, l’An*  
 “ *de*

“ *de Grace Mill. Triscentef. Sexante & Deux, & de  
“ nostre Regne, Trente Sisme.*

On receiving these Charters, the Prince of *Wales* did Homage to the King his Father, who ordered him to prepare his Family according to his Dignity, and then to pass the Seas and enter on his Government; being, by the Acquisition of so great a Principality, rich enough to keep a royal Court. The Remainder of the Year he busied himself in preparing his Retinue for his Departure.

After *Christmas*, the King and Queen, with their Sons and Daughters, went to visit and take their last Leave of the Prince at *Barkamstead*, a Mannor of his in *Hertfordshire*, and staid several Days with him; during which Time, the King had many serious Debates with the Prince on publick Affairs, and also many royal Diversions and Entertainments, as *Froissart*<sup>1</sup> recites, who was then present in the Prince's Court; and relates a Story from a Book by Way of Prophecy, “ That  
“ neither the Prince of *Wales*, nor any of King *Edward*'s Sons, should ever come to the Crown;  
“ but, that the Realm of *England* should, with-  
“ in a While, devolve to the House of *Lancaster*.” Which happened to be true, tho' *Froissart* did not live to see it.

In the Beginning<sup>k</sup> of *February*, the Prince of *Wales* went on Board his Fleet, whereof the Earl of *Warwick* was Admiral, and arrived in four Days at *Rochelle*; where he and his Princess (who accompanied him) were both joyfully received.

On

<sup>1</sup> Cap. 299, fol. penult.    <sup>k</sup> *Dugdale's Bar.* vol. 1. and *Wals.* p. 172.

On the fifth Day after his Arrival, he departed from *Rochel*, with a Princely Train, for the City of *Poitiers*,<sup>1</sup> where, with infinite Respect, the Nobility of those Parts met him. And, where his last Triumph was gained on the *French* King, he first received the Fealties and Homages of those Barons and Knights of *Poitou* and *Sanctogne*, whom he had thereby subjected.

From *Poitiers* he went to *Bourdeaux*, where he kept his Court as splendidly as if he had been King of *France*; and thither the Nobility and Knights of *Gascony* came to wait on him, whom he received most graciously, behaving himself in all Points with such Honour, and with such a noble and generous Deportment, that they promised themselves much Prosperity under his Government. Thither also came to visit him, and to pay him Homage, the Earls of *Foix* and *Armagnac*, Lords of great Power, and near of Blood, but much disgusted with each other. They had for a long Time<sup>m</sup> waged a bloody War, which the King of *France*<sup>n</sup> durst not undertake to compose, for Fear of disoblighing the King of *England*, whose Vassals they were. But the Prince took the Opportunity of their waiting on him<sup>o</sup>, to make a final Peace and Agreement between them; his obliging Carriage and Arguments bringing them to Reason, who before were not inclinable to admit of an Accommodation.

After which, filling up the Places of his Principality, he<sup>p</sup> constituted the Lord *John Chandos* Constable of all *Aquitain*, and the Lord *Guischard*  
N D'Angle

<sup>1</sup> *Froissart*, c. 216, 217.

<sup>m</sup> *Knighton*, p. 2624.

<sup>n</sup> *Mezeray*,

<sup>o</sup> *Froissart*, c. 217.

<sup>p</sup> *Barns*, p. 624.



*D'Angle* his Marshal ; the latter being by Birth a *Frenchman* of *Agenois*, but, by the Tenor of the Peace, a Subject of *England*, as ever after he continued to his great Honour. And into other great Offices were set such Knights of his House as he most favoured ; and all Constableships and Bailiwicks were filled with *English* and *Gascoigners*, such as he was most assured of, or were recommended by their own Virtue, or the Testimony of virtuous Men.

The Prince grew as famous, governing in Peace, as by his heroick Atchievements, insomuch that *Peter* of *Lusignan*, King of *Cyprus* and *Jerusalem*, having been with *John* King of *France*, the Emperor, the King of *England*, and other Potentates, to engage them in a Crusade for the Recovery of *Jerusalem*<sup>a</sup>, said, *He thought he had neither done or seen any Thing of Moment, until he should have seen the Prince of Wales ; and, by the Grace of God, he would go and visit him, and the Lords of Poictiers and Aquitain.* Thereupon he took a Journey to *Angoulesme*, at the Time the Prince held a royal Just of forty Knights, and as many Esquires, in Honour of the Birth of his Son *Edward*, in 1364, 38 *Ed.* 3. The King of *Cyprus* was highly feasted and carested by the Prince, and the Lords of his Court ; and the Lord *Thomas Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*, the Lord *Thomas Roos*, and divers valiant Knights of *England* and *Gascoigne*<sup>r</sup>, no less than three Hundred, besides Archers and others, their Friends and Servants, set out with the King, on Design to aid him in the Wars in the *Holy Land*.

In

<sup>a</sup> *Froissart*, c. 218.<sup>r</sup> *Barns*, p. 636.

In 40 *Ed.* 3. this noble Prince was applied to, by Don *Peter* King of *Castile*, who implored his Protection, being drove out of his Dominions by Don *Henry* his Bastard Brother, whom the Pope had made legitimate, and excommunicated Don *Pedro*. That King sent to him a Knight and two of his Esquires, who delivering his Letters, "Declaring his great Misfortune, Danger, and Poverty, humbly and heartily desired the Prince, for God's Sake, and out of his great Generosity, to help him in this his deplorable Condition, and to provide him some Counsel and Remedy, whereby he would atchieve Grace of God, and Honour of all the World; it being a Thing not to be allowed in *Christendom*, that a Pope, or a King, should disinherit a true and lawful Heir, and, by Force of Tyranny, invest a Bastard with the Right."

The Prince, whose Wisdom was equal with his Courage, presently sent for the Lord *John Chandos* and the Lord *Thomas Felton*, two of the chief of his Council, and at their Entrance smilingly said, *My Lords, you shall hear fresh News out of Spain: The King Don Pedro, our Cousin, makes grievous Complaint of the Bastard Henry, who hath taken from him his Inheritance, and hath thrust him out of his Kingdom; as, no Doubt, you have heard reported by sundry that came from those Parts: And now he instantly requireth us to lend him our Aid and Assistance, as it appeareth here by his Letters: Which reading twice over to them, he said, You two are the chief of my Council, and those on whose Fidelity and Wisdom I more especially rely. Shall I, after the Manner of the World, neglect a Man in Adversity? Or, shall I,*

as *Virtue* requires, lend an helping Hand unto him? Here is *Quiet* attended with *Silence*, or *Infamy*; and there is *Labour* crowned with *Honour* and *Immortality*. As they stood silent, looking upon one another, the Prince continued, *My Lords*, tell me your *Minds* freely and plainly, what is fit to be done in this *Matter*? On which, they both replied, That it would be convenient to send some *Ships of War* to King Don Pedro, to *Corunna* in *Gallicia*; where, according to the *Date* of his *Letters*, and the *Confession* of his *Deputies*, he then was; and that this *Fleet* should take him in, and all be bad, and bring them safe to the *City* of *Bourdeaux*; where the Prince might, more at *Leisure*, understand the *Particulars* of his *Request*; and, by *personal Conference*, remove all *Scruples*, and so, accordingly, take such *Measures* as should seem most agreeable.

The Prince, approving of this Advice, immediately fitted out a *Fleet* of *Twelve Men of War*, and appointed the Lord *Thomas Felton* Admiral, who, having prepared all Things convenient for the *Voyage*, went to *Bayonne*, where the *Fleet* was detained four Days by the *Wind*; and, just as they were hoisting *Sail* on the fifth Day, Don Pedro himself arrived, with his three *Daughters*, a few of his *Men*, and his *Treasure*. He anchored at *Bayonne*, not daring to stay any longer at *Corunna*, fearing Don *Henry*; and, knowing that the Prince of *Wales* must have seen his *Letters*, he chose rather to fling himself into the *Hands* of one, whose *Honour*, he doubted not, would oblige him to defend a *Suppliant*.

Soon after his Arrival, he set forward for *Bourdeaux*, but, on the News of his Approach, the Prince,

Prince, who greatly desired to see him, went and met him at the Town of *Belin*, and from thence conducted him to *Bourdeaux*, shewing the same Respect and Reverence to this exiled Monarch, as if he had been in full Possession of his Kingdom.

Tho' many of the Prince's Counsellors endeavoured to divert him from abetting the Quarrel of this unhappy King, by laying before him, not only the Tranquility of his present Condition, but the many Cruelties Don *Pedro* had committed, whereby he had rendered himself odious to his own Subjects, and was deservedly thrust out of his Kingdom, as an Example of the divine Vengeance, to warn all *Christian* Princes from pursuing the same tyrannical Methods. Yet, the generous Prince, out of a deep Resentment that a Bastard should usurp a Crown from the lawful Heir, and thereby the fundamental Law of Succession be broken, which he look'd upon as an evil Example to the Dignity of Kings, determined to reinstate him in his Throne. And Don *Pedro*, when he perceived, that, in Commiseration of his forlorn Condition, the Prince was inclinable to embrace his Interest, failed not, by all the Methods imaginable, to confirm him in his Resolution. He promised to make him Lord of *Biscay*, and of the Castle of *Urdiales*, and also to make his Son *Edward* King of *Gallicia*, and that he would present unto him, and his Captains, and Soldiers, all his Goods and Riches which he had left behind him in the Realm of *Castile*; daring not to trust them under so small a Guard as his Retinue made: But he said, they were in so sure Keeping, that none knew where they were



but himself. Moreover, he declared publicly and solemnly, before the Prince and his Council, how grateful he would be, and how he would not only be just, but bountiful, in satisfying every Man, on his Restoration.

Thereupon the Prince summon'd all his Barons throughout the Principality of *Aquitain*, to meet at *Bordeaux*, to advise him what was most proper to be done in this great Affair, who, after three Days Consultation, propounded to the Prince to send into *England*, to learn the Pleasure of the King his Father therein. Whereupon he dispatched the Lord *Roger de la Warre* and three other of his Knights on the Message, and adjourn'd the Assembly till their Return. The Knights having delivered their Letters, the King, after Advice with his Council, granted the Prince's Request; and on their Return the Duke of *Lancaster* accompanied them, being desirous of seeing his Brother, and to serve in this Expedition. Upon this a new Day was immediately assign'd for the Lords of *Aquitain* again to meet at *Bordeaux*; where, when the Prince had read his Father's Letters to them, approving of his Undertaking, they unanimously said: *Sir, we shall gladly obey the Command of our Sovereign Lord the King of England, and of your royal Highness, it being our Duty so to do; and therefore we now declare, that in this Expedition we shall readily serve both your Highness and King Don Pedro. But, Sir, we desire to know from whom we are to expect our Wages; for it will be difficult to oblige Men of War to go abroad into a strange Country, without such Kind of Considerations.* Then the Prince turned his Face to  
Don

Don Pedro, and said: *My Lord! O King, you hear what our Subjects say: Pray please to answer them yourself as to this Point: For it is your Concern so to do.* To this Don Pedro replied, *Most dear Cousin, as far as the Gold, Silver, and other Treasure, which I have brought hither with me (and I'll assure you, 'tis not the thirtieth Part of what I've left behind) as far as that will go, I shall now immediately resign that to your Disposal, to be bestowed among our Friends your Subjects. And for what shall remain, if God Almighty send us Success, I shall make full Amends in all Things: Of this, be this honourable Assembly my Witnes.* Sir, said the Prince, *you say well, and, as Circumstances stand, we can expect no more of you. As for the Remainder, I myself will be indebted to these Gentlemen; and pay them as Occasion shall require; all which my Lord, O King, I shall lend unto you, expecting to be repaid upon our good Success in Castile.* Hereupon, Don Pedro renew'd his Promise, to be more than just in all Manner of liberal Retributions, acknowledging, with many Expressions of Gratitude, the extraordinary Favour, Grace, and Courtesy, which the Prince had shewed him.

But, before they entered upon this Expedition, it was necessary to gain the Consent of the King of Navarre, to pass thro' his Country; and it was doubtful, whether they could obtain it, that Monarch having lately contracted a strict Alliance with Don Henry. This occasion'd the Assembly to meet in the City of Bayonne, on the Confines of Navarre; and, the Prince having by his Ambassadors requested that King to come in Person thither, he accordingly came. And with much

Perſuaſion, on Conſideration that Don *Pedro* ſhould reſtore ſeveral Towns he had taken from him, and forthwith pay the Sum of fifty-fix Thouſand Florins of Gold, the King of *Navarre* conſented to permit their Army to paſs thro'. It appears this Sum agreed on was paid by the Prince, for Don *Pedro*, by a Bond dated at *Libourne*, in the Dioceſe of *Bordeaux*, the Twenty-third of *September*, 1366. 40 *Ed.* 3. \* promiſes to repay it at the Feaſt of *St. John* the Baptiſt next, and that his three Daughters remain with the Prince Hoſtages for the ſame. The eldeſt of them died ſoon after; the ſecond, the Lady *Conſtance*, became the ſecond Wife of *John* of *Gaunt*, Duke of *Lancaſter*; and the Lady *Iſabella*, the youngeſt, was married to *Edmund* Earl of *Cambridge*, another of King *Edward's* Sons. We find alſo among other Pledges, King *Pedro* left with the Prince, there was a rich Table deck'd with Gold and precious Stones; which, ſome Years after, paſs'd from the Prince to *Thomas Arundel*, Biſhop of *Ely*; who left it by Will to his Succeſſors for ever.

King *Pedro* likewise by Grant dated at *Libourne* as aforeſaid, for a perpetual Teſtimony of his Gratitude to all Generations; and for a laſting Monument of his own Acknowledgments, for ſuch ſingular Grace and Goodneſs extended to him; as well as for the greateſt Increaſe of Honour he could poſſibly fancy for the Prince of *Aquitain* and *Wales*, and for the Crown of *England*, granted unto King *Edward*, and the Prince his Son, and to their Heirs, and Succeſſors; Kings and Princes of *England* for ever: That, whenever it ſhould  
pleaſe

\* *Rymer's Fæd.* Tom. 6. p. 512. † *Godwin's Cat. of Bps.* p. 275.

please any of them to be in Person in the Wars with any King of *Castile*, against any Enemy of the *Christian* Faith, that the said King and his three eldest Sons should have the chief in the Vanguard, above all other Princes of *Christendom*. And that altho' at such a Time neither of them should be there in Person, yet there should always be provided by the Kings of *Castile*, and their Successors, a Standard of the Arms of *England*, to be borne in the same Place for the Honour of *England*. Also grants that all Persons, Nobles, Travellers, &c. belonging to the Dominions of *England*, *Aquitain*, or *Wales*, shall be free from all Pedage, Fee, Custom, or any other Imposition, &c. or hereafter to be imposed, in their Going, Staying, or Returning by Sea or Land, unless they buy any Thing in the Way of Merchandising; or in Case, whatever should be so bought for Merchandise, if such Persons will make Oath it was not for that Use, the Officers and Receivers of his Revenues shall not compel them to pay. And all Merchants shall not have any Thing exacted of them, above what other Merchants used to pay. A Copy of which Grant is in *Selden's* Titles of Honour, *Part I. c. 8.*

At this Time it was also agreed, that the Prince of *Wales* should have the Castles of *Vermejo*, *Lequitio*, *Bilbao*, and *Biscay*; as also the Castle of *Urdiales*, to hold to himself, and his Heirs and Successors, for ever; and to dispose of them as he should please, being wholly discharged of all Sovereignty and Resort, and as free as the King had held it heretofore. And accordingly we find the Prince, besides his former Titles, used that of Lord of *Biscay*, and of the Castle of *Urdiales*; for  
by



by an Instrument bearing Date the Eighth of *October*, 1370, 44 *Ed.* 3. (whereby he grants unto his Brother, *John* Duke of *Lancaster*, the Castle, Town, and Chastellany of *La Roche sur Yon*) he styles himself *Edward*, eldest Son of the King of *France* and of *England*, Prince of *Aquitain* and of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwal*, Earl of *Chester*, Lord of *Biscay*, and of the Castle of *Urdiales*. All these Things were confirmed by King *Pedro*, under the Great Seal of *Castile*; and both the Originals, and Duplicates thereof, remaining with us in *England* to this Day; which shew also that to the King's Seal his Oath was afterwards added, being solemnly taken before the high Altar in the Church of *Bourdeaux*.

When all we have treated of were ratified, the Prince sent his Herald into *Spain*, to certain Knights of *England* and *Gascoigne*, Subjects to him and his royal Father; that they should immediately take their Leaves of King *Henry*, the Bastard, and repair to him. And, thereupon, they took the first Opportunity of leaving King *Henry* in the most obliging Manner they could think of, without making the least Discovery of the Prince's Intention. Among those who came over to the Prince were Sir *Eustace Dambreticourt*, Sir *Hugh Calverley*, Sir *Walter Hewet*, Sir *John Devereux*, Sir *Matthew Gournay*, Sir *John Nevil*, and others, with their Troops and Retinues, having the Bastard's Passport. When this was known to the Captains of the Companions, who were spread abroad in the Country, they gathered together as speedily as they could, intending to march after them into *France*, thinking, by the other Chiefs Departure,

Departure, that the War was again open between the two Crowns. The principal Leaders of these Companions were Sir *Robert Briquet*, Sir *John Charnels*, Sir *Robert Cheney*, Sir *Ralph Camois*, Sir *Perdiccas* of *Albret*, *Nandon* of *Bergerac*, *Lanny* the little *Mecklin*, the *Bourg de l'Esparre*, *Battiller Esplot*, *Edmund Ortingo*, Captain *Humbry Perot* of *Savoy*, the *Bourg* of *Bartnel*, Sir *Garfes du Chastell*, and others ; who all rode after the *English* Captains, without any Stop or Impediment from King *Henry* ; for as yet he knew not that the Prince of *Wales* had designed to bring back his Brother *Don Pedro* into *Castile*. But, when he was thoroughly acquainted with the Resolution of the Prince of *Wales*, he took at first no great Notice of it ; only complained to Sir *Bertram* of *Clequin*, an eminent *French* Commander (who tarried still with him) in this insulting Manner : “ Sir *Bertram*, “ says he, pray do but observe the pragmatICAL Humour of this boisterous Prince of *Wales* ! I never “ wrong’d him either in Word or Deed in all my “ Life, and yet I am inform’d, that he intends to “ make War upon us, and bring back again that “ *Jew*, who calls himself King of *Spain*, into “ this our Realm by Force of Arms : But perhaps “ he may repent his Bargain ; for, if I beat him, “ I’ll make him pay dearly for it. Now, Sir *Bertram*, let us hear what is your Opinion as to “ these Matters.” Whereupon Sir *Bertram* replied : “ This Prince of *Wales*, whom you speak “ of, is so valiant a Knight, that, if once he sets “ about an Enterprize, he will prosecute it with “ all the Courage and Vigour imaginable, thereby “ to obtain his End, if it be possible. Therefore,

“ Sir,

“ Sir, this is that which I have to say, you should  
 “ cause all the Passages and Streights of your King-  
 “ dom to be well kept, and defended on all Sides,  
 “ so that none may pass or repass without your Li-  
 “ cense. And, Sir, by princely Clemency, Affa-  
 “ bility, and Bounty, preserve yourself in the  
 “ Esteem of your People, lest any of them  
 “ should flinch from you in your Necessity : For  
 “ Nothing is more unstable, or less to be relied  
 “ on, than the fickle Favour of the common  
 “ People. I am sure, as for *France*, you may com-  
 “ mand many gallant Knights from thence ; and  
 “ I doubt not of finding many Friends and Fa-  
 “ vourers of your Cause, both there and in *Bre-*  
 “ *tagne* ; and, Sir, I shall go thither myself for  
 “ that Purpose, and will bring you as many as I  
 “ can. Only remember to preserve yourself in  
 “ the Esteem of your People, and to keep Unity  
 “ and Peace at Home. By my Faith, said King  
 “ *Henry*, you say well, and, while you are pro-  
 “ viding us Friends Abroad, I’ll take Care at  
 “ Home to manage the Residue according to your  
 “ Counsel.”

The News was soon spread thro’ *Spain*, *Arragon*,  
*France*, and other Parts of the World, that the  
 Prince of *Wales* had engaged himself to restore  
 Don *Pedro* to his Kingdom ; and divers and dif-  
 ferent Opinions were given thereupon. Some  
 said, “ How the Prince was so inflamed with the  
 “ Love of Arms, that he cared not for whom  
 “ he undertook a War, whether for a Man of  
 “ Virtue or no, nor whether his Cause was good  
 “ or bad, so there was but Fighting in the Case.”  
 Others said, “ It proceeded from great Presump-  
 “ tion,

" tion, occasioned by his former Successes ; and  
 " that it was rather an Effect of Vanity, than  
 " Judgment." But the *Frenchmen* commonly  
 talked, " That it was meer Envy ; for that the  
 " Prince was in a Manner angry, and repined at  
 " the Honour which Sir *Bertram* of *Clequin* had  
 " obtained, in conquering the Realm of *Castile*,  
 " in the Name of King *Henry*, who was by  
 " him made King of that Country." But, tho'  
*Mezeray* \* the *French* Historian is of this Mind,  
 yet whoever impartially weighs the Matter will con-  
 fess, that Sir *Bertram* of *Clequin*, was no adequate  
 Object for our great Prince's Envy ; nor could any  
 just Estimator much magnify that Action of Sir  
*Bertram's*, who, being assisted by the Pope, the  
 King of *France*, and the King of *Arragon*, had  
 made a Shift to put them to Flight, who had no  
 Power to resist ; and, to put him out of his  
 Throne, whom none of his Subjects would up-  
 hold in it ; and to conquer, where there was no  
 Opposition in the World. Sir *Bertram's* high  
 Worth and Valour afterwards became far more  
 notable, than it was at this Time. But the Va-  
 nity of those *French* Historians ought to be expo-  
 sed, who make the Prince of *Wales* (whose Ho-  
 nour the greatest Monarchs of the Earth might  
 envy) to be jealous of the Glory of so mean a  
 Person, as Sir *Bertram* at that Time was, and  
 one, who, both before and after this, was made a  
 Prisoner by his Arms. But those who had least  
 Prejudice said, as well *French* as others, " That  
 " it was a generous Pity, and a princely Love to  
 " Equity and Justice, that moved Prince *Edward*  
 to

\* p. 76, ad hunc Annum.



“ to abet the Quarrel of an exiled King, and to  
 “ restore him again to his Inheritance ; for it  
 “ was neither lawful, nor reasonable, for a Bastard  
 “ to wear a Crown, and usurp the Name of a  
 “ King from the right Heir.”

Such different Sentiments were entertained by the Knights and Men of Arms, famed for their martial Acts ; and King *Henry* of *Castile*, quicken'd by Sir *Bertram* of *Clequin*, was watchful to frustrate the Designs of his Enemies. He wrote very earnestly to *Pedro* King of *Arragon*, his Confederate and Ally, desiring he would not enter into any Treaty with the Prince of *Aquitain*, or his Allies. And that King, who dearly loved Don *Henry*, and had often experienced King *Pedro's* Cruelty, returned him Letters, with full Assurance, tho' he should lose half his Realm thereby, he would make no Agreement with the Prince to his Prejudice, and would never come to any Accord with Don *Pedro* : Also promised him, to close all the Passages against his Enemies, which he very punctually performed ; whereby those of his Subjects, whom the Prince had sent for out of *Spain*, suffer'd many Hardships before they could get thro' *Arragon*.

The Prince of *Wales* likewise employed all his Thoughts, how he might with Honour perform this Expedition. He had gotten all the Companions of his Side, to the Number of twelve Thousand fighting Men, which, to his great Charge, he maintained, from the Middle of *August*, to the Middle of *February* : And, besides these, he entered into Pay all valiant Men, from whatsoever Parts they came.

†

He

He was now in the Flower of his Manhood, being in the Thirty-sixth Year of his Age, of full Strength of Body, and in perfect Health; of undaunted Courage and Resolution, well temper'd with Experience and Discretion. He often spoke to his Lords and Knights concerning this Enterprize, which he said he was moved to from Principles of Honour and Equity, and out of a compassionate Regard to Don *Pedro's* miserable Change of Fortune. He thought no Subjects had a Right to depose their Sovereign, much less a Bastard Brother. This made him resolv'd to encounter all Difficulties; and it was without Doubt much more hazardous to drive out the Bastard King, who was Master of the Hearts and Affections of all the Nobles, Prelates, and the whole Body of the Realm, than it was to thrust Don *Pedro* out of his Kingdom, who was generally hated. And, the Prince considering that Money was the Nerves of War, he caus'd two Parts in three of all his Plate to be melted down, and coin'd. Also sent to the King his Father, desiring he would bestow on him One Hundred Thousand Franks, the *French* King owed, as a Part of the Remainder of King *John's* Ransom; which accordingly was paid to him. And he had also divers Sums of Money, collected by his Interest among his Friends in *England*, and elsewhere; it being requisite to make great Provision of all Necessaries, before they were to enter into a Kingdom, where the Season of the Year, the Nature of the Soil, and the Care of their Enemies gave little Hopes of finding any Purveyance.

But,

But, whilst the Prince was busied at *Bourdeaux*, in his Preparations for the *Spanish* War, and daily expected the Arrival of his Brother, the Duke of *Lancaster*, the Princess, his Consort, fell in Travail, on the Day of the three Kings of *Colen*, commonly called the *Epiphany*; being the Sixth of *January*, and a *Wednesday*. On which Day, about the Hour of Ten of the Clock in the Morning, the said Princess was delivered of a Son, to the great Joy of the Prince and all his Court. On the *Friday* after, at Noon, he was christened in the Church of St. *Andrew*, in the City of *Bourdeaux*, by *Elias*, Archbishop of that Place; *Richard*, Bishop of *Agen*, in *Agenois*, and *James*, King of *Majorca*, being his Godfathers; tho' some thro' Mistake say, instead of the Bishop, it was *Richard*, King of *Navarre*; when 'tis evident to any strict Enquirer, that *Charles* was the King of *Navarre's* Name at that Time, and long after. King *Don Pedro* was then at *Bayonne*, expecting the Coming of the Prince, so that he could not be concerned at this Solemnity. Tho' others say, that this young Prince had no less than three Kings for his Godfathers; as *Pedro*, King of *Spain*, *Charles*, King of *Navarre*, and *James*, King of *Majorca*; and that they gave rich Gifts unto the Babe. But this is only a far-fetch'd Allusion to the History, commemorated by the Day, and so I shall leave it. The Name of *Richard* was given to the Princely Infant, and he was called, after the Manner of that Age, *Richard of Bourdeaux*, from the Place of his Birth; and, after the Death of his Father and Grandfather, became King of *England*, the second of that Name.

Froissart

*Froissart* relates, \* That, on the Day of this Prince's Birth, as he sat at Dinner in *Bordeaux*, Sir *Richard Pontchardon*, a valiant Knight of *England*, skill'd in Astrological Science, came to him within two Hours after he was born; and said, *Froissart*, write down, and put in Memory, that this Morning my Lady, the Princess, is brought to Bed of a fair Son, on this Twelfth Day; which is the Day of the three Kings: And, tho' he is but second Son of a King's Son, yet he shall be King. Which fell out to be true, for, *Edward* his elder Brother dying at the Age of seven Years, he succeeded his Grandfather King *Edward*, and wore the Crown about Twenty-two Years.

On the Sunday following, being the Tenth of *January*, the Prince of *Wales* left the City of *Bordeaux* with a royal Equipage, having sent the greatest Part of the Army before him; and, on the Close of that Day, came to the City of *Dax*, where he staid, on Intelligence that his Brother the Duke of *Lancaster* was sailed from *England* to meet him: Which Duke landed with his Forces at *Bretagne*, from whence he marched through *Poitou* and *Saintogne*, till he came to *Blaye*, where he passed the *Garonne*, and so went to *Bordeaux*, and from thence to *Dax*, where the two royal Brethren met, embracing each other with the utmost Affection; and, in like Manner, the Officers caressed each other. *Gaston*, Earl of *Foix*, came also there, to pay his Respects to the Prince his Lord, who shewed him much Honour for his Readiness to serve him; but, because of his known Valour and Conduct, as also that he was generally

O

beloved

\* *Froissart*, l. ult. cap. ult. f. 391.



beloved in the Country, he gave him in Charge the Defence of his Dominions in his Absence, desiring him to reside in *Aquitain* till his Return, together with his high Seneschal, the Lord *James Audeley*. This the Earl was well contented with, and, after returning Thanks to the Prince, for the Honour of that Trust, rode to *Bourdeaux*, where the Princess and the Lord *Audeley* were.

The King of *Navarre* had solemnly engaged, to have the Avenues open for the Passage of the Prince's Forces thro' his Country; but, taking no Notice of their Approach, the Prince staid at *Dax* till that Point was settled; it being confidently said, that the King was reconciled to the Bastard *Henry*. And it was so much credited, that Sir *Hugh Calverley*, with his Troops, went up to the Marches of *Navarre*, and took the Town of *Puente de Reyna*, and the City of *Miranda*, in that King's Dominions; which so terrified the Country, and gave such an Alarm to the King himself, that he complained of it to the Prince, who took little Notice thereof; knowing, he had not performed his Promise to him and King *Pedro*. Therefore, instead of answering to his Complaints, he wrote to him, first to clear himself of what was laid to his Charge.

The King of *Navarre* was much displeased thereupon, and sent one of his Lords to the Prince at *Dax*, who behaved so discreetly in excusing the King, his Master, that the Prince smothered his Resentment, and a Meeting was appointed for Accommodation: But the Prince insisted that the King should come to *St. John Pie*  
de

*de Pont*, to confer with his Council; or else send Messengers with sufficient Powers to him at *Dax*.

The King choosing to come to *St. John Pie de Pont*, the Prince sent his Brother, the Duke of *Lancaster*, and the Lord *John Cbandos*, with a small Company of Knights, to confer with him there; when it was agreed, that the King should go with them as far as *Peyrebourade*, a Town standing on the *Gave*, which was nearer to the Prince; who, with King *Pedro*, should meet him there.

The Duke of *Lancaster* and the Lord *John Cbandos*, having brought the King of *Navarre* as far as *Peyrebourade*, left him there, and rode on to the Prince and King *Pedro* at *Dax*, to inform them how they had succeeded; who soon after met the King and the chief of his Council, who waited their Coming. In several Conferences, the last Treaty was both renewed and explained; and a punctual Agreement was made, how much the King of *Navarre* should possess in *Castile*: And King *Pedro* paid to him the promised Sum of Twenty Thousand Franks, and swore perpetual Love and Amity with him.

After which, the King of *Navarre* went to his City of *Pampelona*, and ordered all the Avenues of his Country to be left open and unguarded; and made sufficient Provision for the Prince's Forces thro' his whole Realm, to be had for ready Money.

In *France*, it was confidently reported, that the Prince would not be able to pass that Way at all; for that the King of *Navarre* would break the Neck of this Expedition. But, when

the Substance of the Alliances, made at *Peyrebou-rade*, was known there, Sir *Bertram Clequin* sent out his Summons, and raised all his Friends in *Bretagne* and in *France*; saying, he was sure the Business would not now be decided without a Battle: And presently took his Way, thro' *Ar-ragon*, to King *Henry*; ordering such as he had lifted and enrolled, to follow after him with all Expedition.

The Prince's Army began their March about the End of *February*, in three Divisions. The first commanded by the Duke of *Lancaster* and the Lord *John Chandos*, High-Constable of *Aquitain*; the second by the Prince of *Wales* and King *Pedro*; and the third, by *James* King of *Majorca*. In this Order they passed the *Pirenean* Mountains, not without great Difficulty, proceeding from the Unevenness of the Ways, and the Inclemency of the Season.

After having refresh'd themselves about *Pampelona*, they pursued their Journey, thro' the many Streights and Passages with which that Country abounds, being guided by Sir *Martin Carre*, a Subject of the King of *Navarre*. He himself having been fraudulently surpris'd, whilst the Army lay at *Pampelona* (by a Partisan of Don *Henry's*) as he was riding in his own Dominions, with a few Attendants, to the great Astonishment of the *English*, who believ'd it was with his own Consent, being unwilling to accompany the Prince any further. In these Streights they encountered not only the Badness of the Ways, but were often in Want of Provision, until they came to *Salvatierra*, a Town situated at the Entrance into *Spain*, and in which  
(presuming

(presuming on its Strength) had been collected most Part of the Treasures from the adjacent Places, which induced the Companions to advance against it, with Hopes, in Case of Resistance, of having the Pillage. But the Inhabitants, terrified at the Approach of so great an Army, submitted themselves to King *Pedro*, and, presenting him with the Keys of the Town, obsequiously implored his Pardon; which at the Prince's Persuasion he granted, contrary to his own Inclination, having intended to put them all to the Sword for a Terror to the rest.

Whilst the Prince lay at *Pampelona*, he had detach'd a Party of one hundred and forty Men of Arms, and three hundred select Archers, all well mounted, under the Command of the Lord *Thomas Felton*, to discover the Posture of the Enemy; who, having pass'd the *Ebro* with great Secrecy, encamp'd at *Navarret*, from whence they frequently rode up to the Enemies Camp, to discover their Number and Behaviour; and one Evening ventur'd almost to King *Henry's* Lodgings. Whereupon a great Skirmish ensued, in which they slew some, and retreated with several Prisoners. The next Day they sent an Herald to the Prince then at *Salvatierra*, to inform him of their Success, and of the Strength of the Enemy, and where they encamped. Thereupon he left that Place, and soon after receiving Advice from Sir *Thomas Felton*, that Don *Henry* was advancing to meet him, and seem'd very desirous to come to an Engagement, the Prince said aloud to those about him: *By my Faith, this Bastard Henry is a valiant and courageous Knight; for 'tis a Sign he fears us not, since*



he is coming forward to find us ; and since he doth thus, and we also seek for him, 'tis highly probable we shall soon meet and look one another in the Face. I judge it therefore fit to leave this Place, and to march forward and get to *Victoria*, if possible, before our Enemies.

The next Morning, the Army march'd with such Expedition, that they reach'd *Victoria* the same Day, where the Prince being informed Don *Henry* was not far off, an Alarm was sounded, and the Army set in Order of Battle.

The Prince, to raise an Emulation to Glory, first knighted in the Field King *Pedro* ; and afterwards the same Honour was conferr'd on several valiant and hopeful young Gentlemen. But Don *Henry* being well supplied with Provisions, and hoping to distress the *English*, could not be drawn out of his Camp. Wherefore the Prince, being in a barren Country, dislodged, and took the Way to *Navaret*, passing through the Country of *Alava*, till he came to *Viana*, standing on the River *Ebro*, on the Confines of *Navarre*. There the Prince refresh'd his Army for two Days, and then pass'd the *Ebro*, at the Bridge called *Groign*, among Gardens of Olives, where they were better provided.

King *Henry*, on this Motion of the Prince, dislodged from *St. Miguel*, where he had lain more than a Week, and encamp'd before *Najara*. On which the Prince sent him the following Letter, in Answer to one Don *Henry* sent by a Herald.

“ *EDWARD*

“ *EDWARD*, by the Grace of God, Prince  
 “ of *Wales* and of *Aquitain*; Duke of  
 “ *Cornwal* and Earl of *Chester*; to the Right Ho-  
 “ nourable and Renowned Lord, *Henry* Earl of  
 “ *Trastamara*, who at this Present calls himself  
 “ King of *Castile*. Whereas you have sent unto  
 “ us your Letters by your Herald, wherein are  
 “ contained divers Passages; intimating that you  
 “ would gladly know, why we take to our Friend  
 “ and Lover your Enemy, our Cousin, the King  
 “ Don *Pedro*, and by what Title we make War  
 “ upon you, being enter’d with an Army royal  
 “ into *Castile*: To this we now answer: Know  
 “ you for a Truth, that it is to sustain Right  
 “ and Justice, and to uphold Reason and Equity,  
 “ as it appertaineth to all Kings and Princes to do:  
 “ And also to cultivate and cherish the strict Al-  
 “ liances, which the King of *England*, our dearest  
 “ Father, and King Don *Pedro* have of long  
 “ Time held together. However, because you  
 “ are a renowned and right worthy and valiant  
 “ Knight, we are willing, if we may, to recon-  
 “ cile him and you together, and we shall so per-  
 “ suade our Cousin Don *Pedro*, that he shall yield  
 “ unto you a considerable Part of his Realm of *Ca-*  
 “ *stile*; but, as for the Crown and Inheritance  
 “ royal, that you must renounce for ever: In  
 “ which Case, Sir, you may take Counsel and be  
 “ advised. And, as for our entering into *Castile*, we  
 “ will enter and proceed, as we think best at our own  
 “ Pleasure. Dated at *Groing* the Thirtieth of  
 “ *March*, in the Year of Grace MCCCCLXVII.”

King *Henry* on this Letter prepar'd for Battle, resolving to come to no Composition, or be content with less than a Kingdom.

The Prince of *Wales* began his March from the *Groign*, on *Friday* the second of *April*, and advanced little more than two Leagues, having Advice that the Enemy encamped before the City of *Najara*. Hereupon he order'd his Army should all rise at the first Sound of the Trumpet; at the second be arm'd; and at the third mount their Horses, and follow the Marshals Banners with the Ensign of *St. George*, and not presume to go before the Marshals, unless commanded so to do, on Pain of Death.

The next Day being *Saturday*, the third of *April*, the Prince by Break of Day was ready arm'd in the Field, and presently after march'd to engage Don *Henry* before *Najara*. As both Armies approached, the Prince of *Wales* having his Visor up, <sup>z</sup> and his Hands join'd together, said, *O very God, Jesu Christ; who hast formed and created me, grant by your benign Grace, that I may obtain, this Day, Victory of mine Enemies, as what I do is in a righteous Quarrel to sustain and aid this King, whom they have excluded from his Inheritance: Which gives me the Courage to advance myself against them, thereby to re-establish him in his Realm.* After which laying his right Hand on King *Pedro*, who was next by him; he said, *Sir King, you shall know this Day, whether ever you shall have any Thing of the Kingdom of Castile or not. Therefore advance Banners, in the Name of God and St. George.* And, bringing up his main Battle against the Earl of *San-*  
*celloni*

<sup>z</sup> *Froissart*, cap. 237. fol. 133.

*celloni* and Don Sancho, the Bastard's Brethren, brought such Terror with him, that, on the very first Shock, they fled in great Disorder with three Thousand Spears, whereby the Prince had the Advantage of marching directly against King Henry, who had with him above sixty Thousand Men, Horse and Foot.

Then the Fight began very fiercely, and was long and doubtfully maintained till Noon, when the Prince gained a compleat Victory. The Bastard Henry rallied his Men three several Times, with these Expressions: *My Lords, I am your King : You yourselves have made me so, and have sworn and promised not to fail me, tho' you die for it : For God's Sake, be mindful now of your Oath and Promise, and acquit yourselves loyally unto me : For certainly I will not flinch one Foot, as long as I can see you do your Devoir.* And another Time he would say, *Where are the Courages of those noble Spaniards, who under my Father King Alphonso have given such wonderful Overthrows to the Moors ? Do not now disgrace your former Glories, by turning your Backs at this Time. A little Perseverance will set the Garland on your Heads. Ah ! Ye good People* (would he often say) *you have crowned me your King ; therefore help me now to keep what yourselves have given me, and swore to preserve unto me.* And by these and other such Words he inspired many with an unusual Courage, so that they died in the Field, being ashamed to leave the Place in his Sight.

The Prince of *Wales* was the <sup>a</sup> chief Flower of Chivalry, performing both the Office of a good Soldier

<sup>a</sup> *Froissart.*



Soldier and an accomplish'd General. He was always in the hottest Place of Action, and, wherever the greatest Stress lay, thither he constantly moved, carrying with him Assurance to his Friends, and Terror to his Enemies. When the Fight was ended, he caused his Banner to be rear'd high on a Bush on a Hill, to direct his Men in their Return from the Chace. Thither came, among other Chiefs, King *Pedro*, who, as soon as he saw the Prince, alighted from his Horse, and would have prostrated himself in Gratitude to have thank'd him; but the Prince run hastily to prevent it, and, catching him by the Hand, would not permit him to kneel. On which the King said in the humblest Manner: *Dear and fair Cousin, I ought to give you both many Thanks and Praises for this prosperous Adventure, which I have obtained by your Means. Sir, (said the Prince) Pay your Thanks to God Almighty, and give him all the Praise: For by him alone, and not by me, have you obtained this Victory.* Then the Prince assembled his Council, with whom he held some Debate, and, immediately after with his Lords, went to the Lodgings of King *Henry*, at *Najara*, wherein they found inestimable Riches of Jewels, and Vessels of Gold and Silver: For he came thither in great Pomp and Majesty, but on the Discomfiture fled into *Arragon*; knowing, if he were taken, he should die without Mercy.

The Morning after the Battle, King *Pedro* desired the Prince to deliver to him the Earl of *Sancelloni*, his Bastard Brother, and such other Prisoners who were Natives of *Spain*, that they might suffer Death: But, instead of complying, he requested him to grant a general Pardon to all  
his

his Subjects, except that Arch-Rebel *William Garibz* ; telling him, that thereby he would obtain the Affections of his People, and be more faithfully served on any Emergency. The King, though cruel and implacable, being unwilling to disoblige the Prince, pardoned the Prisoners all Offences, on swearing Homage to him, and promising to become his faithful Subjects for the Future. Thus did this gallant Prince, by his Intercession, save the Lives of these *Spanish* Noblemen, who else, without Doubt, had all been served as Sir *William Garibz*, whose Head was forthwith struck off before the Door of the King's Tent.

Nothing now remained to consummate the Prince's Glory ; he had, by his exalted Prowess, atchieved three such Enterprizes, as any one, singly, was sufficient to have rendered his Fame immortal : First, at the Battle of *Cressy*, where the whole Power of *France* was broken, two Kings slain, and a third put to Flight. Secondly, at the Battle of *Poitiers*, ten Years after ; when, with an inferior Force, he again overthrew the *French*, and took their King Prisoner. Thirdly, now at *Najara*, where, at one Blow, he decided the Fate of a Kingdom : For the *Spaniards*, terrified at this Defeat, voluntarily returned to their Allegiance ; and, with one Consent, accepted Don *Pedro* as their lawful King. But this last Exploit, tho' nothing inferior in Honour to the former, was attended with the most fatal Consequences ; for, during his Stay in Expectation of King *Pedro's* Promises, he fell sick of an incurable Disease, which, about ten Years after, put a Period to his

his Life; tho', not before he had beheld the Loss of almost the whole Principality of *Aquitain*, which was likewise occasioned thro' this Expedition, and his Want of Health; as I shall hereafter relate.

The Prince staid three Weeks with King *Pedro*, at *Burgos* in *Spain*; in which Time, he gave forth his Summons, and determined Judgments concerning Arms, and all Things thereto belonging; and, during that Time, all *Spain* was then reduced into his Hands, and under his Obedience. For, in that City, Prince *Edward* and King *Pedro* held their *Easter* with great Solemnity, to give Time to the *Spaniards* to come in of their own Accord, and to make their Submissions before they were compelled thereto. Accordingly, on *Easter Day*, there came thither the Representatives of the Realms of *Castile* and *Leon*, of *Gallicia*, *Asturia*, *Algarria*, *Biscay*, and other Towns, formerly under the Dominion of King *Pedro*; who all sent in their humble Addresses, and did Homage to King *Pedro*, promising him true Faith and Loyalty for ever.

When the Prince had seen Don *Pedro* generally owned by all his Subjects, and that there were none who rebelled, or held out against him; he then said, " Sir, blessed be God, you are  
 " now again peaceably established King over this  
 " your Realm, without any Rebellion, or Opposi-  
 " tion: And, Sir, I and my Men tarry here  
 " at our great Charge and Expence: Wherefore,  
 " I request you to provide Money to satisfy those,  
 " who have holpen me to re-instate you in  
 " your Throne, as well as to compleat your Pro-  
 " mise

“ mise to which you have sworn, and set your  
 “ Hand and Seal. And, Sir, the sooner this is done,  
 “ the more acceptable it will be to us, and the  
 “ more also to your Advantage. For, you can-  
 “ not be ignorant, that Men of War, if they are  
 “ not paid, will make bold to pay themselves.  
 “ Sir, we call not your Justice in Question, but  
 “ only put you in Mind, that at this Time there  
 “ are many Soldiers of Fortune among us ; and,  
 “ as it will be your Discretion to satisfy them,  
 “ so will it be just and equitable to be punctual  
 “ in your Word to all, who have been assistant  
 “ to you in this Enterprize.”

To this the King answered, “ Fair Cousin, we  
 “ are firmly resolved to hold, keep, and per-  
 “ form, to our Power, what we have sworn  
 “ and sealed to : But, truly, Sir, as for the Pre-  
 “ sent, we have no sufficient Quantity of Money  
 “ ready at Hand : However, now we intend to  
 “ take our Progress towards the Marches of *Seville*,  
 “ where we will make such Provision of Gold  
 “ and Silver, as to be able to satisfy all Men.  
 “ Only, Sir, we desire you to tarry here in *Val-*  
 “ *ladolid*, where you will find a plentiful Coun-  
 “ try, and surely we shall return unto you as  
 “ soon as we may conveniently ; but, at the fur-  
 “ thest, by *Whitfontide*.”

This Answer was nothing disagreeable to the  
 Prince and his Council : And Don *Pedro*, after  
 taking Leave in the most endearing Manner, set  
 out for *Seville*, the chief City of *Andaluzia*, with  
 Design to raise Money to pay off the Men of War  
 as he had covenanted ; and the Prince went and  
 quartered in *Valladolid*, his Lords and Captains be-  
 ing



ing spread abroad in the Country at large, the better to provide Victuals and other Necessaries for themselves and their Horses.

The News of the Prince's Success no sooner arrived in *England*, but great Triumphs were made; particularly in the King's Chamber, and the City of *London*, where the Lord Mayor and Aldermen celebrated the Memory of this Victory, with great Solemnity and triumphal Arches; in like Manner as they were formerly accustomed to do for their Kings, when they had obtained any notable Success against their Enemies. But, in the Realm of *France*, there was quite a different Scene; unfeigned Sorrow sat on every Brow, for the Loss of so many of their bravest Countrymen in the Battle. And the Taking of Sir *Bertram* of *Clequin*, and other *French* Prisoners of Worth and Honour, proved a great Corrosive to the Minds of those who wished well to the Honour and Interest of *France*.

The Prince of *Wales* lay with his Army in and about *Valladolid*, till the Feast of St. *John* Baptist, in *June*, expecting the Return of King *Pedro*, or at least an Answer from him. And then, being worn out of all Patience, advised with his Council, what Course to take; with whom, it was agreed to send Sir *Nele Loring* and two more to *Seville* to King *Pedro*, to demand, *Why he kept not his Appointment?* And thereupon, in his Excuse, he said, "Surely, Gentlemen, we are  
 " infinitely displeased that we cannot exactly  
 " keep the Promise which we have made to our  
 " Cousin the Prince; the Particulars whereof  
 " we have frequently declared to our Subjects in  
 " these

“ these Parts ; but they excuse themselves, and  
 “ protest they are not able to raise such considerable Sums of Money, while the Companions  
 “ are abroad in this Land : By whom, our Officers, whom we sent to the Prince with Money,  
 “ have been twice or thrice robbed of all they had. Wherefore, we desire you to tell our  
 “ Cousin from us, that it is our Request, he  
 “ would withdraw, and convey out of our  
 “ Realm his Men of War; and especially those  
 “ rude Soldiers called Companions ; and leave behind him certain of his Knights, to whom,  
 “ in his Name, we will, most undoubtedly pay  
 “ and deliver such Sums of Money as he hath  
 “ demanded of us, according as we stand engaged unto him.” This Answer, with a Promise of paying a Moiety of the Soldiers Wages, within four Months, and the Remainder within a Year following, was all they could obtain ; and more displeased the Prince than before, since he found by Experience, the King was as unjust and dishonourable, as, by Report, he had been cruel.

The Prince's Men could hardly endure the infectious Air of *Spain* ; and he himself had contracted an ill State of Health, which altogether rendered it impracticable to compel Don *Pedro* to be just. Wherefore his Council advised him to return Home with all Expedition, alledging, “ That  
 “ indeed King *Pedro* had basely disappointed him,  
 “ to his utter Shame and Dishonour ; but that  
 “ since it was in vain any longer to expect any  
 “ Performance of his Promise, and that his Men  
 “ began daily to sicken and die, he had best leave  
 “ the

“ the Tyrant to his own Conscience, and return  
 “ Home before Matters grew worse, to prevent by  
 “ his Presence those Mischiefs which might arise  
 “ from the Attempts of *Henry* the Bastard in his  
 “ Principality.”

It was then known, that this *Henry*, after his Escape into *Arragon*, was advised by that King to apply to the Duke of *Anjou*, the *French* King's Brother; and thereupon going to that Duke, he so far countenanced him, that he gave him the Fortrefs of Castle *Moron*, bordering on *Aquitain*, on which he presently got about three Hundred Men of Arms, and invaded the Prince's Lands.

The Prince having staid at *Valladolid* the best Part of the Summer, and many Hundreds of his Followers being ill, and among them *James* the young King of *Majorca*, he determin'd to take the Advice of his Council; and, being ready to depart, he sent the Lord *John Chandos* and Sir *Hugh Calverley* to the King of *Majorca*, to let him know, he was under a great Concern on hearing he was not able to go with him, and would leave any Troops to conduct him into *Aquitain*, when he thought he was in Health enough to ride. Nay, surely (said the King) *I shall never put the noble Prince to any such unnecessary Trouble; for God alone knows, whether ever I shall be able to ride or no.* This being made known to the Prince, he said, *Well then, be it as it shall please God and him: For Necessity calls us away from this unfortunate Country.*

After he had march'd with his Army to the City of *Agreda*, he rested about a Month there, and in the Vale of *Sona*, between *Arragon* and *Spain*, certain Passages being closed against him,

on

on the Borders of *Arragon*. Whereupon he sent Commissioners to treat with that King, who agreed to open his Country, and permit the Prince and his Army to pass freely, paying for what they should take of his People. When this Agreement was established, the King of *Navarre* came to the Prince, shewing him great Respect and Honour, and readily offer'd free Passage to him and his Forces; but would by no Means permit the *Companions*, saying he had enough of them already. The Prince thereupon order'd them to march thro' *Arragon*, but he chose to go with the rest thro' *Navarre*, as the most commodious Way. At his Arrival at *Bayonne*, he was received with great Joy, and staid there four Days to refresh himself and his Men. At *Bordeaux* he was received in Triumph, being also met by his beautiful Princess, with her eldest Son *Edward*, then about three Years of Age. There he disbanded his Army, declaring his Obligations to the Chiefs, and promising to pay every Man punctually, when he could raise Money; even tho' King *Pedro* fail'd in Payment to him: *He said they should suffer no Loss however, since they had served him so well; and, for his own Part, Honour should be his Reward.* And the *Companions* that went thro' *Arragon*, arriving in his Principality, had also Quarters assigned them, till their Wages were paid.

King *Henry* the Bastard, hearing of the Prince's Return, immediately removed with all his Men into *Arragon*, where he renewed his former Alliances with that King, who promised to aid him to recover his Kingdom. And, the Year after,

P

he



he return'd into *Spain*, with an Army against his Brother King *Pedro*, whom he overthrew in Battle, and, flying into the Castle of *Montrel*, was there closely besieged by him; the Castle was well fortified, but there was scarce Provision in it to serve a Fortnight. King *Pedro* therefore resolved to attempt an Escape, with only twelve Persons in his Company. Accordingly on the Twenty-third of *March*, 1369, about the Time of Midnight they departed in great Silence, and were favour'd by the Darkneſs of the Night<sup>b</sup>. But the Beague of *Vilaine*, who was ever jealous of his Escape, kept a ſtrict Watch, and, hearing ſome Noiſe, alarmed his Men, telling them he heard the Treading of Horſes down the Highway. And thereupon immediately came up to them with his Dagger in his Hand, and, ſeeing one next before King *Pedro*, ſaid: *Who are you?* But, he ruſhing forward with his Horſe from him, he was reſolved not to loſe the next, and, laying hold of the Bridle of King *Pedro's* Horſe, told him he was a dead Man, if he did not ſurrender. Who ſeeing a Company of armed Men before him, and no Poſſibility of eſcaping, ſaid<sup>c</sup>: “ Sir, I am Don *Pedro*, “ King of *Caſtile*; I yield myſelf your Priſoner, “ and commit me and my Company, which con- “ ſiſts of twelve Perſons, into your Hands. Only, “ Sir, I require you, as a Man of Honour, not to “ deliver me into the Hands of the Baſtard my “ Brother, but to ſecure my Life unto me, and I “ will pay you what Ransom you will aſk, for I “ thank God I have enough.” To which the Beague answer'd, as ſome Hiſtorians ſay, *Sir,*  
*I ſhall*

<sup>b</sup> *Odor. Rainal.*<sup>c</sup> *Barnes, p. 728.*

*I shall bring you and your Men into a Place of Safety, and your Brother shall know Nothing of you from me.* And thereupon conveyed him into his own Pavilion, where also Sir *Lewis* of *Carlouet* was lodged with him. Yet others say, <sup>d</sup> that Sir *Bertram* of *Clequin* was the Man who took the King, and that *Don Pedro* offer'd him two hundred Thousand Crowns of Gold to secure his Life. But it's agreed by all, that he had not been in the Tent a full Hour, when King *Henry*, the Earl of *Rochebreton*, and some others came there; and King *Henry* calling aloud: *Where is that Son of a Whore the Jew, who calls himself King of Castile?* King *Pedro* could not contain himself on this Insult, but boldly said, *Nay, thou art a Son of a Whore, and I the Son of King Alphonso.* And, immediately taking *Henry* in his Arms, threw him on a Bench, and, laying his Hand on his Dagger, had certainly slain him, had not the Viscount *Rochebreton* at the Instant catch'd King *Pedro* by the Leg, and turned him on his Back, whereby King *Henry*, recovering himself, drew out a long Knife, and stabbed King *Pedro* in the Body, so that he instantly died.

Thus fell King *Pedro*, and thereby King *Henry* became fully established in the Throne of *Castile*, and his Grandson *Henry*, Son and Heir of *John* King of *Castile*, Son and Heir of this *Henry* the Bastard, by his Taking to Wife the Princess *Catharine*, sole Daughter and Heir of *John* of *Gaunt*, Duke of *Lancaster*, by his second Wife *Constance*, eldest Daughter to the said King *Pedro*, became the true and lawful King of *Castile* and *Leon*, and

<sup>d</sup> *Odor. Rainal.*

from them the present Emperor of *Germany* and the King of *Spain* descend.

With King *Pedro*, ended all Expectations of those Sums of Money he had promis'd the Prince of *Wales*, who (as was said before) had that Honour as to recompense all who had serv'd him; but in order to it, being obliged to load his Subjects with some grievous Taxes, it gave Rise to a Rebellion, which being countenanc'd by the King of *France*, contrary to his Oath, occasion'd the Loss of the greatest Part of the *English* Territories in that Kingdom, as will hereafter appear.

The Prince of *Wales*, after his Return from *Spain*, first put many of the *French* and *Spanish* Nobility to their Ransom, as was the Custom of that Age. But Sir *Bertram* of *Clequin* (the principal Person who restored King *Henry* to his Throne) remain'd Prisoner with the Prince for some Time, till by Chance an Occasion offer'd whereby he obtain'd his Liberty, which neither by his Friends or Money he could before procure. The Prince, who used much Grace and Affability to all his Prisoners, one Day in Discourse with Sir *Bertram* of *Clequin*, said, " Sir *Bertram*, How doth your Spirit brook this " Confinement? Sir, I thank God very well, I " was never at better Ease in all my Life. And it " is reasonable for me to think so, since I am in " the Hands of the most generous Prince living, " and made a Prisoner by the most renowned " Knight in the World." *Who is that*, said the Prince. Sir, (said he) *that is Sir John Chandos*: *That is right*, (replied the Prince) *therefore, you may comfort yourself for being taken, since it is no*  
*Disshonour*

*Dis honour to be conquer'd by a gallant Man; but what Comfort have you now for being detained a Prisoner, when most of your Fellows are put to Ransom? O Sir, (answer'd Sir Bertram) as to that Matter, I have this Comfort, that it is reported in France and Spain, how you stand in such Fear of me, that you dare not let me go; which must needs be a considerable Honour for so mean a Knight as I am.* The Prince knew well to what End these subtle Words tended, and also remembered, that his whole Council agreed in Opinion, that it was dangerous to let him have his Liberty, till King Pedro had paid those Sums of Money he had promis'd, fearing he might again embroil the Affairs of Spain, and put that King out of a Capacity of paying. The Prince, however, was of too great a Spirit to brook this, and therefore resolv'd to ask such a Ransom, as he thought Sir Bertram could not easily raise, and made him this Reply: *Then, Sir, it seems you imagine, that we detain you here, for Doubt of your Prowess and Chivalry. But I would not have you think so, for I swear by St. George, it is no such Matter. Do but pay us for your Ransom an hundred Thousand Franks, and you shall be delivered immediately.* Sir Bertram took the Prince presently at his Word, and said: *Sir, be it so in the Name of God; I'll pay no less a Ransom, and thank you for the Honour of rating me so high.*

The Prince would not recede from what he had said, though his Council would have perswaded him to have revoked his Promise. He said to them, *Gentlemen, since we have agreed thereto, we will by no Means break our Word: And truly it would be a great Shame and Reproach to us, if we*



*should any longer refuse to deliver him, since he is content to pay so considerable a Ransom.*

Sir *Bertram* therefore left no Means unapplied for raising the Money, and by the Assistance of the *French King*, the Bastard of *Spain*, and the Duke of *Anjou* (who entirely loved him) he got together, in a Month, one hundred Thousand Franks, or ten Thousand Pound *Sterling*, on Payment whereof he was released from his Imprisonment; and, raising immediately two Thousand Men in *Provence*, went to serve the Duke of *Anjou*, who had laid Siege to the City of *Tarascon*, belonging to the King of *Majorca*. But soon after he went with those Forces to *Henry* the Bastard, who principally relied on his Conduct, and the Victory obtain'd over King *Pedro* was chiefly owing to him.

The Prince of *Wales*, as I said before, had run himself much in Debt, by his *Spanish* Expedition, and the great Court which he constantly kept, living in as much State as any Prince in the World. His Council therefore advised him, especially the Bishop of *Rodez*, at that Time Chancellor of *Aquitain*, to raise a *Foïage*, or Tax on Chimnies throughout all his Principality. And to that End a Parliament was held at *Nior*<sup>f</sup> to which were summon'd all the Barons of *Gascoigne*, of *Poitlou*, of *Saintogne*, and of divers other Parts, to whom the Bishop of *Rodez* declared in Presence of the Prince, how this *Foïage* was to be raised, to enable the Prince their Lord to pay such Sums of Money as he owed, on Account of his *Spanish* Expedition; and that the Prince did not intend to continue it longer, than the Space of five Years.

It

<sup>f</sup> *Foïff. c. 251.*

It was calculated, <sup>2</sup> that, at one Frank for every Chimney, it would raise a Supply of twelve hundred Thousand Franks, *per Annum*. But altho' to this Ordinance the *Poitevins* readily agreed, as did also the Representatives of *Saintogne*, *Limosin*, *Rovergne*, and *Rochelle*; yet divers others of the Marches of *Gascoigne* refused to concur with them; as the Earl of *Armagnac*, the Lord of *Albret* his Nephew, the Lord of *Conde*, the Lord of *Pincornet*, the Lord of *Comignes*, and divers other Barons, who said, *How heretofore, when they serv'd the French King, they were not then grieved or oppressed with any Subsidies or Innovations; and no more would they now, if they could help it, for that their Lands and Seigniories were free and exempt from all such Duties; and so the Prince had sworn to keep and maintain them.* But, to get off with more Ease from the Parliament, they said they would take further Advice, and return again by such a Day, as well Prelates and Abbots as Barons, Knights, and others. This Answer was not agreeable to the Prince and his Council, but they had his Consent to adjourn, and a Command from him to return to *Niort* by the Day assigned.

The Lords and Barons of *Gascoigne*, being got to their several Habitations, had several Meetings, and came to a Resolution among themselves, not to return to the Parliament, nor to suffer the *Fouage* to be raised in their Lands. And the Earl of *Armagnac*, the Lord of *Albret*, and many of the Barons and Knights of those Parts went into *France*, and set forth their Grievances in the *French King's* Chamber, in Presence of the

<sup>2</sup> *Du Chesne*, p. 699.

King and his Peers ; adding, that, in their Case, their whole Resort and Appeal ought to be to the King of *France*, as their only sovereign Lord. But the *French* King knowing, that by solemn Treaties (which he had sworn to observe) he had renounced all Resort and Sovereignty, answered them with Dissimulation in these Words : *Surely, Gentlemen, the Jurisdiction of our Inheritance, and of our Crown of France, we will always observe and augment to our Power : But we have sworn to keep sundry Articles contained in the Peace of Bretigny, all which I cannot yet perfectly remember : Wherefore, we shall inspect and consider the Tenor of the Letters, and, as much as in us lies, we will do you Right, and shall be glad to reconcile you with the Prince our dear Nephew : For, perhaps, he is not well advised, thus to deprive either you or your Vassals of their Customs and Franchises.* With this Answer they contented themselves, resolving not to return to their own Country, or to the Prince's Parliament.

The Prince was exceedingly displeased at their Rebellion, and, to shew his Disdain of them, proceeded with an high Hand in raising the *Foüage* in their Seignories, every Fire being to pay a Frank, and the Rich to have answered for the Poor. Those of the lower Marches, <sup>h</sup> as of *Bourdelois, Sanctogne, Poictou, and Rochellois*, readily agreed to pay, being nearer to the Prince's Court ; and were generally accounted more firm and loyal to him, than those of Parts remote. But those of *Gascoigne* made many Remonstrances against it, in the several Parliaments held by the Prince

<sup>h</sup> *Froissart*, c. 242, f. 146.

Prince at *Niort*, *Angoulesme*, *Poitiers*, *Bordeaux*, and *Bergerac*, declaring that their Resort and Appeal had been ever in the Chamber of *France*. At this Mention of Resort, the Prince was extremely offended, and argued against it; telling them, *That the French King had quitted for himself, and his Heirs for ever, all Resorts and Jurisdictions whatsoever, when he resigned those Lands entirely and absolutely to the King of England; as is plainly apparent from the Tenor of the Charter of the Peace, wherein those Matters are so clearly explained, that there is not the least Clause of any one Article, where there is any Reserve for the French King, in Time of Peace.* These Words of the Prince were sent to those Lords of *Gascoigne* who refused to come to the Parliament; for, from those who were present, he had little or no Opposition. Those Lords answered again by their Letters, "That it was not in the Power of the *French King* to acquit them of their Resort to his Court; for the Prelates and Barons of the Cities and good Towns of *Gascoigne* would never have suffered it; nor ever will they, if it were to do again, though the Realm of *France* should remain in perpetual War thereby."

The said Lords of *Gascoigne* were resolved to abide the last Extremity, rather than give up their pretended Franchises, and being out of the Reach of the Prince at *Paris*, as the Earl of *Armagnac*, the Lord of *Albret*, the Earl of *Perigort*, the Earl of *Comignes*, the Viscount of *Carmaine*, the Lords of *Conde*, *De la Barde*, and *Pinconnet*, they made loud Complaints to the King,

†

" How



“ How the Prince, of meer Pride and Presump-  
 “ tion, would tread them under his Feet, and  
 “ raise new and unheard of Taxes in their  
 “ Lands; which they said they would never  
 “ suffer, considering their Resort was to the  
 “ Chamber of *France*. Wherefore they hum-  
 “ bly desired, that the Prince might be sum-  
 “ moned to make his Appearance in the Parlia-  
 “ ment Chamber, before the Peers of *France*;  
 “ there to answer, concerning those Grievances  
 “ which he had begun to exercise amongst  
 “ them.”

The *French* King was sensible, that, if he sum-  
 moned the Prince, an open War would ensue;  
 wherefore, before he condescended to their Request,  
 he thought it good Policy, first to try the Hearts of  
 the People, and to use all Arts to get over his  
 Brother, the Duke of *Berry*, who, with others,  
 were still Hostages in *England* for the Observation  
 of the Peace. Accordingly, <sup>i</sup> Prince *John*, Duke  
 of *Berry*, having received a private Hint, obtained  
 Leave of King *Edward* to return into *France*, to  
 recreate himself among his Friends and Relations,  
 for the Space of one Year: And the Lord *Guy*  
 of *Luxembourg*, Earl of *St. Pol*, by much Sub-  
 tlety, got into *France* without Leave. This Earl  
 was an implacable Enemy to the *English* Nation,  
 and could not bear to hear a good Word of them;  
 so that, on his Return, he continually urged King  
*Charles* to take the *Gascoigne* Lords into his Pro-  
 tection; hoping a War would ensue, if the Prince  
 of *Wales* should be summoned. And to this  
 Opinion of the Earl of *St. Pol* agreed several of  
 the

<sup>i</sup> *Froissart*, c. 244.

the chief Prelates, Earls, Barons, and Knights of *France*; who said to their King, "Sir, it is most  
 " evident, that the King of *England* and his  
 " Son the Prince have not duly kept the Peace,  
 " but have taken Towns and Castles, and do  
 " still hold them, to the infinite Damage of this  
 " your Realm; and they ransom and pillage your  
 " People, because the Money, for the King your  
 " Father's Redemption, is yet in Part unpaid.  
 " Wherefore, Sir, you and your Subjects have  
 " good Right and just Cause to break the Peace,  
 " and make War against *England*; and to en-  
 " deavour to take out of their Hands all that  
 " they hold, on this Side the Water." And fre-  
 " quently the *Gascoigne* Lords would say to the  
 " King, "Most dear Sir, we are obliged to have  
 " Resort to your Court, wherefore, we all hum-  
 " bly require, that you will please to do us Right  
 " and Law; and, as you are the most just  
 " Prince in the World, let us have Justice against  
 " the great Extortions, Grievances, and Oppres-  
 " sions, that the Prince of *Wales* and his Men  
 " have, and would put upon us. For, Sir, if  
 " you refuse to do thus much for us, we must  
 " then seek some other Remedy elsewhere, and  
 " shall be obliged to yield and submit ourselves  
 " to the Jurisdiction of such a Lord, as shall  
 " see we have Reason done us: Whereby, you  
 " will lose your Sovereignty over us for ever."

The *French* King answered these Complainants  
 very courteously, saying, "Surely, Gentlemen,  
 " for Want of Love and good Counsel, you shall  
 " not need to make your Resort to any other  
 " Court, but only to ours: But yet, in a Mat-  
 ter

“ter of this Consequence, we ought to move  
 “with much Caution and Deliberation.” And  
 thus he kept them still with him at *Paris*, for al-  
 most a Year, paying for all their Expences, and  
 gave them many rich Gifts and Jewels. And  
 he set Persons secretly to enquire of them, as  
 it were out of their own Curiosity, *What they*  
*would really do, if the Peace was once broken?*  
*Whether they would in all Events stand by France?*  
 To which they always replied, “That, if the  
 “War were once open, the *French King* should  
 “not need to trouble himself about any such  
 “Thing; for that, when once they were own-  
 “ed by the King of *France*, they would, like  
 “good Subjects, live and die in his Quarrel.”

Besides all these Conferences, before he would  
 enter on a Breach of the Peace, he also tampered  
 secretly with many others that were then under  
 the *English* Dominion; particularly, the Burges-  
 ses of *Abbeville*, a strong City of *Ponthieu* in *Picardy*,  
 whether or no they would admit of the *French*  
 Government, which they readily consented to.  
 And for these tricking Arts he was so famed,  
 that the *French* gave him the Name of *Charles*  
*le Sage*, or the *Wise*.

Thus the *French King*, \* being urged by many  
 of his own Subjects, and solicited by the rebellious  
 Lords, did at last suffer Letters of Citation to be  
 framed, to summon the Prince of *Aquitain* to  
 make his personal Appearance forthwith before  
 him in his Chamber of Peers, to answer to the  
 Complaints there to be made against him; which  
 was principally devised by the Earl of *Armagnac*  
 and

\* Froissart, c. 243, Du Chesne, and Du Serres.

and other of the *Gascoigne* Lords. And, when the Letters of Summons had been corrected by the greatest Hands in *France*, *Bernard Pelot*, who was Judge-Criminal of *Tbolouse*, and a Knight of *Beaussé*, named *Sir John Chapponeau*, were chosen to deliver it to the Prince: Which two with their Servants, in all Places where they came, declared they were Messengers from the *French* King, and thereupon had the better Welcome. The next Morning after they came to *Bourdeaux*, they went to the Abbey of *St. Andrew's*, where the Prince kept his Court, who, when he heard that Messengers from the *French* King arrived, order'd they should be brought to him. And, coming into his Presence, they kneeled to pay their Reverence, and so deliver'd to him their Credentials, which after the Prince had read, he said, *Gentlemen, you are welcome, let us now know the Business you are charged with unto us.* On which the Judge said, *Right dear Sir, here is another Letter, which being deliver'd unto us at Paris, by our Lord the French King, we promised on our Allegiance to publish openly in your Presence; for Sir, it concerns your Person nearly.* At which the Prince seem'd somewhat surpriz'd, but said: *Speak on, Sirs, what you have to say: Good Tidings we would be glad to hear.* On which the Judge took out the Citation, and read it aloud, this<sup>1</sup> being the Tenor thereof.

“ *CHARLES*, by the Grace of God, King  
 “ of *France*, to our Nephew the Prince of  
 “ *Wales*, and of *Aquitain*, Greeting. Whereas  
 “ divers

<sup>1</sup> *Froiss.* c. 243. f. 147. & *Du Chesne*, l. 15. p. 699. D.



“ divers Prelates, Barons, Knights, Universities,  
 “ and Colleges of the Marshes and Limitations of  
 “ the Country of *Gascoigne*, dwelling and inhabi-  
 “ ting on the Borders of our Realm, with several  
 “ others of the Country and Dutchy of *Aquitain*,  
 “ have withdrawn themselves unto us in our  
 “ Court, to have Right of certain Grievances and  
 “ undue Molestations, which you, by weak Coun-  
 “ sel and slight Information, have purposed to do  
 “ unto them; and at which Thing we are sur-  
 “ priz’d with Wonder: To obviate, therefore, and  
 “ remedy the said Matters, we are so strictly en-  
 “ gaged unto them, that by our Majesty Royal  
 “ and Sovereignty: We command you to come  
 “ to our City of *Paris* in proper Person, and there  
 “ to shew and present yourself before us in our  
 “ Chamber of Peers, to hear Right concerning the  
 “ said Complaints and Grievs moved by you, to  
 “ do upon your People, who claim to have and  
 “ to hear Resort in our Court: And that herein  
 “ there be no Fail, but that it be done, as speedily  
 “ as you can after Sight of these Letters. In  
 “ Witness whereof we have set our Seal to these  
 “ Presents. Given at *Paris* the Twenty-fifth  
 “ Day of the Month of *January* [1369].”

On this Breach of Faith in the *French* King,  
 the Prince was fir’d with Anger and Disdain, and,  
 having paus’d a little, he told them: *Gentlemen,*  
*we will gladly go to Paris to our Uncle, since he hath*  
*thus handsomely invited us; but I’ll assure you, that*  
*it shall be with Helmet on our Head, and sixty Thou-*  
*sand Men in our Company.* At this the two *French-*  
*men*, seiz’d with Fear, kneeled, and said, *Ab!*  
*thrice dear Sir, for God’s Sake refrain your Anger,*  
*and*

and take not this Summons in such evil Part, neither be displeased at us : Sir, we are but Servants, sent by our Lord the French King, whom we are bound to obey, as your Subjects in like Manner ought to obey you. And as it was our Duty to obey his Commands, so, Sir, whatsoever you shall please to give us in Charge to say, we will fully declare it unto the King our Lord and Master. Nay, (said the Prince) Sirs, I am not displeased with you, but with them that have sent you hither : And the King your Master is led by weak Counsel and simple Information, thus to offer to combine himself with our Subjects, or to make himself a Judge, where he hath Nothing to do by any Manner of Right or Title. For it shall be evidently shewed, that in the rendering up, and putting the King my Father into Possession of the Dutchy of Aquitain, both his Father and he, for them and their Heirs for ever, utterly disclaimed and quitted all Manner of Resort and Jurisdiction ; so that those, who have occasion'd this Summons to be made against me, have no other Resort of Right, but in the Court of England, before the King my dear Father ; and, before it shall be otherwise, I assure you it shall cost the Lives of one hundred Thousand Men. And he had no sooner said this, but he went from them into another Room. The Frenchmen continuing there in Fear, he sent some of his Servants to tell them : Gentlemen, you may e'en go about your Business, when you please : You have duly performed your Errand : But you are to look for no other Answer, than what you have heard. With that the Judge and the Knight went to their Inn, and after Dinner took Horse with their Servants, and from Bourdeaux went their Way thro' Tholouse-ward, designing

designing to relate to the Duke of *Anjou* what they had seen and heard.

The Insolence of the Summons sat heavy on the Prince's Mind, and discourfing of it to the Lords and others of his Council, they advised him to hang the two Messengers ; but his generous Spirit could not be brought to consent to that. Yet when they told him they were gone without any other License than what was given by Word of Mouth, and how they took their Way toward *Tholouse*, he shook his Head and said : *Sure it is not convenient that they should thus easily get off, and go and make their Jangling to the Duke of Anjou, who is but a small Friend of ours, and will laugh heartily, that they have thus summon'd us in our own House. I believe, all Things consider'd, they are rather Messengers from my own Subjects, as the Earl of Armagnac, the Lord of Albret, the Earls of Perigort, Comignes, and Carmaine, than from the French King. Wherefore, because of the signal Affront that hath been put upon us, we wish they were overtaken and clapped up in Prison.* All his Council were well pleased with what the Prince had said, but replied, *Sir, we fear you have been too slow, as to this Resolve.*

However, the Seneschal of *Agenois* was commanded to take with him a valiant and worthy *English* Knight of *Lancashire*, Sir *William Molineux*, made Knight Banneret at the Battle of *Najara* in *Spain* (Ancestor to the present Lord Viscount *Molineux*) and ride Post after the *French* Messengers, and stop them till further Order. Accordingly they overtook them in *Agenois*, and on seizing them said not a Word of the Prince's Command,  
but

but how their Host, where they last lay, complained of them for an Horse, which he said they had changed. The Judge and the Knight began to excuse themselves, but they told them they must go back to the City of *Agen*, and there they were imprison'd. Their Servants were suffer'd to pursue their Way, who, passing thro' *Tboulon*, told the Duke of *Anjou* all that had happen'd; who was not sorry for it, knowing it would occasion Hatred and Dissension, which would bring Things to Extremity, and, with all the Caution and Diffimulation imaginable, he prepar'd for War.

The *French King*, when he heard the Prince had threatened him, *How he would go to Paris to his Uncle, but that should be with his Helmet on his Head, and sixty Thousand Men in his Company*, took great Indignation at it, and covertly made vast Preparation for a War, for he well knew the King of *England's* Power. The Lords of *Gascoigne* daily importuned him, and he was also press'd by many of his own Council, who complained to him of the Extortions of the *English*, and told him King *Edward* was in his declining Age, and his Son the Prince sick of an incurable Disease.

The Prince of *Wales*, who had always his Eyes on that Quarter, saw and knew all their close Train of subtle Devices, and sent<sup>m</sup> in good Time Letters to his Father in *England*, praying him *not to give too much Credit to any smooth Words or fair Overtures of the French King, for he saw evidently, that he intended Nothing but a Breach of the Peace,*  
and
Q

<sup>m</sup> *Walsingham's Hist.* p. 177. n. 43.



*and only had not yet begun the War for Want of a fit Opportunity.*

Notwithstanding this, King *Edward* could not be brought to think, (as yet) that *Charles*, <sup>n</sup> who was no Man of his Hands, durst ever presume to defy him, who had obtained so many Victories over him and his Ancestors ; and he also believ'd, that the late Peace had been so solemnly confirm'd, as to be inviolable with all those, who had not quite abandon'd all Sense both of Honour and Religion. But especially he was perswaded by many of his Council, that the Prince was prejudic'd, and impatient of Peace ; and therefore had too freely tax'd the *French* King's Honour, because he desired Nothing more than War, and an Opportunity of entering on Action. That King also with great Artifice dissembled his Intentions, made frequent Remonstrances and Overtures, for continuing their present good Correspondence for ever, and to cut off all Occasions of Complaints, Jealousies, and Misconstructions for the Future. It being his Design to use these cautious Methods, till he was ripe for Action, and by Degrees get the rest of his Hostages their Liberty. And he too well succeeded, for some of them, under divers Pretences, got Leave to visit their Friends, and had not the Honour to return ; and others, contrary to all Honour, made their Escapes.

The Prince of *Wales* well apprised that the *French* King would violate the Peace, when he had brought all Things ripe for a War, was resolv'd ° to march to *Paris* at the Head of a great Army the next Summer, and sent to all the *English* Captains

†

<sup>n</sup> *Mezerey*, p. 80.

° *Froiss.* c. 245.

Captains and *Gascoigners*, whom he knew his Friends, to be ready to come to his Service; and also to those Captains of the Companions; who came out of *Spain*, and were now about the River *Loire*. He gave these latter Notice to leave those Parts, because he expected very shortly to find Work for them. But it was soon after, his great Soul began to bend beneath his own Weight, having a mortal War within him, a fatal Distemper, which some say <sup>p</sup> was brought upon him by Charms and Incantations; others, that he contracted it first in *Spain*, either by Infection of that Air, or from some lingering Poison. But, however, by this Time he was so reduced, that it was painful to him to ride on Horseback; which much dismayed his Men, and inspir'd his Enemies with greater Courage.

The *French King*, fully inform'd of his Distemper, the Physicians of *France* boldly pronouncing that the Prince was sick of an incurable Dropsy, gave Leave (before he entered into War himself) to the Prince's rebel Subjects, the Earl of *Armagnac*, the Lord of *Albret*, the Earl of *Comignes*, the Earl of *Perigort*, the Viscount of *Carmaine*, and others, to revenge the Affront (as it was given out) of the seizing the two Messengers sent with the *French King's* Summons, who were arrested by the Seneschal of *Agenois* and Sir *William Molineux*, as before-mentioned. These Earls, coming into their own Country, laid an Ambush of three Hundred Spears, to take Sir *Thomas Wake*, Seneschal of *Rovergne*, who they heard was to ride to *Rodez*, the chief City of that Province, to strengthen the

Q. 2

<sup>p</sup> *Du Chesne ex Walsingh. sed nil tale apud Wals.*

the Garrison there with sixty Spears, and two Hundred Archers. And, Sir *Thomas* falling into the Ambush near *Molieres*, his Men were in such Surprise, not expecting the Enemy, that most of them were slain or taken. But *Du Chesne*<sup>a</sup> reports untruly, that he and all his Men were cut to Pieces; for *Froissart*, a better Historian<sup>r</sup>, relates, that many of Sir *Thomas*'s People were taken to Ransom, and he himself by the Goodness of his Horse escaped to the Castle of *Montauban*.

The Prince of *Wales* was then at *Angoulesme*, and, when he heard his Seneschal of *Rouvergne* was defeated by his rebel Subjects, he vow'd it should be dearly revenged on them, and their Lands and People. And, immediately sending for Sir *John Chandos*, he ordered him, with certain Troops of Men of Arms and Archers, to re-inforce the Garrison of *Montauban*, and encounter the *Gascoigners* and *Frenchmen*, who daily increased and over-ran his Lands. At his Coming, Sir *Thomas Wake* left *Montauban*, and went as before he had designed to *Rodez*, and victuall'd and new-fortified the City and Castle; and after that the strong City and Castle of *Milland* on the *Jarne*, in the Marshes of *Montpellier*, in *Languedoc*; and in all Places that wanted he re-inforc'd with Archers and Men of Arms.

In the mean Time the Lord *John Chandos* lay at *Montauban*, to keep the Marches and Frontiers against the Earl of *Armagnac* and those who combined with him, who, by the Aid of the *French*, made Head again st him, though the Lord *Chandos* had several great Lords and experienc'd Chiefs

†

<sup>a</sup> *Du Chesne*, p. 700.<sup>r</sup> *Froissart*, c. 246.

Chiefs under him, as the Lord *John de Greilly*, Capital of *Busche*, Sir *John* and Sir *Henry* of *Pamiers*, *Lewis* Earl of *Harcourt*, the Lord of *Partenay*, the Lord of *Pons*, the Lord of *Pinant*, the Lord of *Taniboton*, Sir *Richard* of *Pontchardon*, and others. But the subtle Duke of *Anjou*, who lay at *Tbolouse*, secretly assisted the rebel Lords, without stirring himself, the King his Brother having strictly charged him, not to enter on Action, without his express Order. And that politick King did not yet think it a proper Time to begin the War, but was getting together, in the most secret Manner, all the veteran Soldiers he possibly could, and particularly some of the Companions (Men who took no Pay, but liv'd on what they could plunder) whom he sent in the Marches of *Berry* and *Auvergne*, to live there on the Country, that they might not be suspected for Friends; but had Orders from him not to enter on the Prince's Lands, till he gave them Command so to do.

His Design being on the Earldom of *Ponthieu*, he was very cautious how he gave the least Suspicion of his Intentions of a War, till he had, by Treachery and other Arts, won to his Side the Chiefs of that Province. And King *Edward* was so deceived by the over-reaching Devices of the *French* King, that all the Prince could alledge had no Effect with his royal Father, who by no Persuasions could be brought to think, he would break the Peace he had so solemnly swore to. For, the more to amuse King *Edward*, he sent over the Earl of *Salebruch* and Sir *William Dorman*, to adjust all Differences between them; who, the

Q 3

better



better to conceal their true Intentions, complained of Wrongs done, as they said, to the *French*; alledging that the Peace was but slightly kept at the best, the Companions (who for the most Part were Subjects of *England*) having for almost six Years lived at Discretion in some Parts of *France*; and, on other Accounts, the King their Master had Cause to be disgusted. These Ambassadors staid in *England* about two Months, during which Time, instead of settling a right Understanding between the two Realms, they only made many frivolous Complaints to delay Time, which almost tired the King's Patience; but, by their Instructions, that was what they were sent for. They brought with them a Present to the King, of certain choice Wines and other Things, from the *French* King, as a Token of his brotherly Love and Good-will. Yet, whilst this was acting, having secretly brought the Inhabitants of *Abbeville* to own the *French* Interest, and the War being opened in *Gascoigne* (as was said before) and his Friends in Readiness to strike, he resolved now to break the Peace, thinking himself secure by the Advantage he had, in taking the Start of King *Edward*. Yet to avoid all Ignominy (as he thought) if he should invade any of the King of *England's* or the Prince's Lands without Defiance, he resolved, by Advice of his Council, to send and defy the King and all his Adherents; which, to his great Reproach, he gave to a mean Valet to carry.

But, before he arrived, King *Edward* had received Advice, that the *French* King had sent Forces

Forces into *Ponthieu*, even while the Ambassadors were taking Audience of Leave; so that, with great Indignation, he bade them get Home with their deceitful Presents, to their deceitful Master. And commanded them to tell him, *How he detested, from his Heart and Soul, the dishonourable and unprincely Falseness he had shewn; for which, he doubted not, by the Grace of God, but to make him repent before long.*

The Ambassadors departed with all Speed, and at *Dover* met with the Valet, who was come with the Letters of Defiance from *France*; the Substance whereof he declared to them, as he was enjoined to do, that they might make the greater Expedition in their Way Home. Yet, for all their Precaution, they were met<sup>1</sup> on the Sea by some Men of War belonging to *Calais*; who, knowing the *French* had entered on Action, set on them, and took their Presents which King *Edward* had refused to accept, and brought them to *Calais*; the Earl of *Salebruche* and Sir *William Dorman* narrowly escaping to *Bologne*. The *French* Valet, who brought the Defiance, on his Coming to *London*, obtained Leave to be admitted into the Painted Chamber at *Westminster*, where the King then sat with the Lords of his Council, holding a Parliament. He declared that he was an Esquire, sent from the *French* King, with Letters to the King of *England*, and, kneeling down, delivered them to the King; who having dismissed the Valet, ordered them to be opened and read. All that were present seemed much surprized when they heard the Defiance, and saw the

<sup>1</sup> *Walsingh.* p. 178, n. 10.

the Seal and other Marks of its Authority. And the King blamed himself, that he was lull'd asleep by their subtle Overtures; and ordered the Valet to be told to go about his Business, for he should return no Answer by him. The King and his Council agreed, *That it was neither Reason nor Decorum, that a War should be published by a contemptible Valet.* And this Indignity, put on so great a Monarch, was not well resented by many that were Friends to *France*; which induced the *French* Ambassadors to excuse to the Pope and the Emperor the Sending this Defiance in such a Manner, as the King of *England* was a Vassal to *France*, for the Lands of *Aquitain* and *Poitou*. But, if they had not lost all Sense of Reproach, they might have been ashamed of such an Excuse, when, by the Tenor of the last Peace (which they humbly desired) all Resort and Vassalage was absolutely given up.

The King, knowing what Danger the City of *Abbeville* and the Earldom of *Ponthieu* was in, presently appointed the Lord *Henry Percy*, the Lord *Ralph Nevil*, and the Lord *William Windsor*, to go thither with all Expedition, with three Hundred Men of Arms, and one Thousand Archers; but, when they were at *Dover* ready to cross the Seas, News came, That the *French* King had taken the City of *Abbeville*, as was determined before by private Agreement with the Burgeses, who opened their Gates to them; and Sir *Nicholas Lovain*, the Seneschal of *Ponthieu*, was surprized therein. And this, as near as could be calculated, was at the Time of the Delivery of the Defiance to King *Edward*. Also, the same Day

Day they took *Abbeville*, and other Parties of *French* entered *St. Valery*, *Crotoy*, *Noyelle*, *Sur Mer*, a Town on the Sea Side, and *Pont de Remy* on the *Soame*; so that the whole Earldom of *Ponthieu* was of a sudden cleared of the *English*.

There remained in *England* several of the *French* Hostages (some having made their Escape very dishonourably) as the Earl Dauphin of *Auvergne*, the Earl of *Porcieu*, the Lord of *Roye*, the Lord of *Mauliveres*, and others; besides most of the principal of the Towns of *France*, who were by their King left to the Mercy of King *Edward*. And well it was for them, they were in the Hands of a Monarch, the most generous and human that ever reigned. He considered with himself (tho' he was highly incensed at the Treachery of their Master) that it would be but a fruitless Cruelty, and irrational Revenge, to wreak his Displeasure on them, and therefore only resolved to debar them of some Liberties they had; but released the Earl Dauphin for a Ransom of thirty Thousand Franks, and the Earl of *Porcieu* for ten Thousand, being Persons he esteemed; and the Lord of *Roye* being in no Favour either with the King, or any of his Court, he was not admitted to any Ransom.

King *Edward*, on such a surprizing Rupture, made the necessary Preparations to defend himself both against the *French* and *Scots*; the latter being drawn over by King *Charles* to engage against him. And summoning a Parliament to meet at *Westminster*, in the Octaves of the *Holy Trinity*, *William* of *Wickham*, Bishop of *Winchester* and Lord Chancellor, declared in the  
Painted



Painted Chamber, in the Presence of the King, Lords, and Commons, " " How the King had " always, in his greatest Affairs, used their Advice and Counsel, and especially in making the " last Peace with *France* ; which was yet made on " Condition, that, by such a Day, the *French* " King should surrender up unto him certain " Countries beyond the Seas ; that within such " a Time, he should pay unto the King certain " Sums of Money ; and that he should never " pretend, for the Future, to any Jurisdiction or " Sovereignty over *Gascoigne*, or the Parts thereabouts ; in Consideration whereof, the King of " *England* should from henceforth lay by the Stile of *France*, which he had accordingly done. That " whereas he, for his Part, had not slackened " his Duty, the *French* King had done quite the " contrary ; for neither had he made a full and " due Payment of the said Monies ; and also, he " had summoned the Earl of *Armagnac*, the " Lord of *Albret*, and others who were of the " King's Allegiance, to answer to certain Appeals at *Paris* : Nay, further, he had summoned " the Prince of *Aquitain* himself (who was also " of the King's Allegiance) to appear among the " rest. Besides all which, he had sent certain " Troops into *Ponthieu*, where he had surprized " several of the King's Garrisons and Forts : " Whereupon, the Prince of *Wales* and of *Aquitain*, by Advice of his Council, had sent to the " King his Father, wishing him to resume the " Title and Stile of *France*." And therefore the

Chancellor

<sup>u</sup> MS. Rot. Parl. p. 103. and Sir Robert Cotton's Abridgment, p. 108.

Chancellor desired the Lords and Commons to take Counsel in the Matter, and to advise the King to the best of their Power about the Premises. On the *Wednesday* after, the Bishops, Lords, and Commons answered the King with one Consent, *That, considering the Premises, he might with a good Conscience take up again the Stile and Name of King of France, and use his Arms as before.*

Accordingly, on the Eleventh of *June*, the King took on him the Name, Stile, and Dignity of King of *France*; and, laying aside his Seal of *England*, had Seals with the Stile and Arms of *France*; one inscribed *Edwardus Rex Angliæ et Franciæ, &c.* and in another, *Edwardus Rex Franciæ et Angliæ, &c.*

The Dukes of *Anjou* and *Berry* Brothers to the King of *France*, who were both Hostages for the Performance of the Peace, and had sworn to maintain it, and had very dishonourably made their Escapes, were the first that entered on the War. \* Having been treacherous themselves, they by indirect Means drew to their Side several of the *Gascoigners*; and also, one *Percival Dammorie*, an *Englishman*, whom the Duke of *Lancaster* had left Captain of *Beaufort*, a Castle of his between *Troyes* and *Chalons*. This last renounced his Allegiance to his natural Lord the King of *England*, and was continued in his Government by King *Charles*; and, being a Person of Valour and Experience in War, did much Mischief to the *English*. But (as my Author observes) to recompense this Loss, \* *The noble Lord Cannon*

\* *Froissart*, c 248, 249.

\* *Barnes*, p. 743.

Cannon of Robsart, who had hitherto been on the French Part [tho' not a Subject of that Realm, but a Native of Hainault] came over voluntarily to the King of England, and swore unto him Faith and Obedience for ever, against all Men living: Whereat King Edward was well pleased, not only upon the Account of the Man's Valour and Nobility, but also of his known Judgment and Integrity, which were sufficient to add Reputation to a Cause he was pleased to own.

As this Lord Cannon Robsart was the Father of three Sons, who settled in England, and were famous for their Services to this Nation, a brief Account of them may be satisfactory to the Curious. By being Lord of Cannon in Hainault, our Historians call him Cannon Robsart, and he had an elder Brother, \* Sir Lewis of Robsart; and were the Sons of the Lord John of Robsart, who in 14 Ed. 3. was one of those expert Commanders, \* that (with Richard Verchin, Lord high Seneschal of Hainault) surprized John Duke of Normandy, eldest Son of King Philip of France, in his Quarters at Montais, on the River Selle.

This Lord Cannon Robsart, in 32 Ed. 3. was the first <sup>a</sup> who raised up a Light for his distressed Country, at that Time over-run by the Navarrais, being so watchful, they feared him above all others; having slain many of them, and <sup>b</sup> gained great Applause by his Relief of the Earl of Vermandois. The Year after (33 Ed. 3.) he again signalized <sup>c</sup> himself, in the Defeat of the Lord Gomeignes, taking many Prisoners, being then Governor

\* Barnes, p. 573.    <sup>a</sup> Ibid. p. 170.    <sup>a</sup> Ibid. p. 546, 548, 549.    <sup>b</sup> Froissart, c. 192.    <sup>c</sup> Froissart, c. 208, 209.

Governor of the young Earl of *Coucy*, and Manager of his Lands.

It is probable he came with the Earl of *Coucy* into *England*, in 38. *Ed.* 3. (for he was then his Governor) when that Earl and the King of *France*<sup>d</sup> crossed the Seas, on a Visit to the King of *England*; at which Time, the Princess *Isabella* took such a Liking to the said Earl, that the next Year King *Edward* bestowed her on him in Marriage.

In 43 *Ed.* 3. having a Detestation of the perfidious Dealings of the *French*, he voluntarily quitted their Service, as before-mentioned; and, notwithstanding the Decline of the *English* Interest in *France*, continued stedfast to King *Edward*, and his Grandson, King *Richard* 2.

After signalizing himself in several Encounters, he was one of the principal Commanders<sup>e</sup> of that Army under the Duke of *Lancaster*, which marching from *Calais* on the Twentieth of *July* in 47 *Ed.* 3. pass'd by *Montreuil*, *St. Omers*, and *Arras*, to *Bray* on the *Soame*, on which they made a general Assault. And among others, that behav'd themselves notably at that Time, was the *Cannon Robsart*, who as my Author observes, *fell'd three valiant Men to the Earth with his good Sword, for the Skirmish was exceeding hot.* But, the Town being garrison'd with many chosen Men, the Army pass'd on by *Paris*, through the whole Realm of *France* to *Bourdeaux*, ravaging and burning the Country as they march'd, the *French* not daring to withstand them. The Lord *Cannon Robsart* continued with the Duke of *Lancaster* in those Parts,  
till

<sup>d</sup> *Barnes*, p. 635, 637.

<sup>e</sup> *Ibid.* p. 857, et seq.



till a Truce was concluded with the Duke of *Anjou*, in 48 *Ed.* 3. and then <sup>f</sup> on the Eighth of *July* (with the said Duke) embarked at *Bordeaux*, and set sail for *England*.

In 50 *Ed.* 3. This Lord *Cannon Robsart*, on the King's seizing the Alien Pories, <sup>g</sup> had, in Consideration of his Services, a Grant of the Custody of *Monkskirby* in the County of *Warwick*, and the Benefit of such Rent and other Advantages, as was usually paid, in Times of Peace, to the Mother Monastery of *Angier*, to hold from the Feast of St. *Michael* then next following, during the Continuance of the Wars with *France*, paying forty Pound yearly into the Exchequer.

In 3 *R.* 2. 1379, the King being well satisfied of the Fidelity, Industry, and Discretion of <sup>h</sup> *Cannon Roberfart*, Knt. and *John Cotesford*, L.L.D. with the Consent and Advice of his Council, appoints them his Ambassadors to treat with *William* Duke of *Fuliers* and *Geldere*, or his Ambassadors, concerning the Homage, Service, Aid, and other Matters to be performed by the said Duke, and to transact all Things thereunto belonging. In 4 *R.* 2. he was one of the Commanders of that Army sent to the Aid of the Duke of *Lancaster*, against the *Spaniards*; and took <sup>i</sup> divers Castles in *Spain*, in 5 *R.* 2. After which I find no Mention of him till 14 *R.* 2. when he <sup>k</sup> had a Lease for Twenty-five Years of all the Lands of the Priory of *Monkskirby* before recited. And departed this Life, before 19 *R.* 2. for then *John* <sup>l</sup> his Son and Heir, by his Deed bearing Date on *Easter-Eve*, releas'd to the

<sup>f</sup> *Barnes*, p. 867. <sup>g</sup> *Dugdale's Warwickshire*, p. 51. <sup>h</sup> *Rymer's Fœd.* V. 7. p. 227. <sup>i</sup> *Froiss.* Chron. f. 273. a. <sup>k</sup> *Rot. Fin.* 14 *R.* 2. m. 19. <sup>l</sup> *Pat.* 19. *R.* 2. p. 2. m. 2.

the King all his Right and Title to the said Priory.

Besides the said *John Robsart*, he had two other Sons, *Lewis* and *Theodorick* (or *Tirrey* as we write the Name) who were all honour'd with Knighthood, and were Commanders of the greatest Note in their Time.

Sir *Tirrey Robsart* was Governor of *Hamby*, and of *St. Saviour de Ive* in *Normandy*, in the Reign of King *Henry* the Fifth; and was retained to serve the Regent *John* Duke of *Bedford* in *France*, in the Reign of King *Henry* the Sixth, but died before both his Brothers, Sir *John Robsart* and Sir *Lewis Robsart*.

Which Sir *Lewis Robsart* having married <sup>n</sup> *Elizabeth*, Daughter and Heir of *Bartholomew* Lord *Bourchier*, and Widow of Sir *Hugh Stafford*, was in her Right Lord *Bourchier*, having Summons to Parliament, among the Barons of this Realm, by the Title ° of Lord *Bourchier* in the third Year of King *Henry* the Sixth, as also in several other Parliaments in that Reign. This *Lewis Robsart*, Lord *Bourchier*, was one of the Esquires for the Body to King *Henry* the Fifth <sup>p</sup>, and, in Consideration of his special Services, had in 2 *H.* 5. a Grant of forty Pounds *per Annum*, to be paid during his Life, by the Hands of the Sheriffs of *London*. The Year following, the said King making his Will (which bears Date at *Southampton* the Twenty-fourth of *July*, 1415) he <sup>q</sup> bequeaths to this *Lewis Robsart*, one of the Esquires of his Body, one Hundred

<sup>m</sup> MS. Not. B. 5. in Bibl. *Job. Anstis* Arm. <sup>n</sup> Claus. 9. *H.* 5.  
<sup>m.</sup> 6. ° Claus. 3, 4, 5, & 7 *H.* 6. in dorso. <sup>p</sup> Pat. 2. *H.* 5.  
<sup>p.</sup> 3. m. 18. <sup>q</sup> *Rymer's Fæd.* V. 7. p. 227.

Hundred Pound of Gold, with one of his Horses, out of a Set of Eight; and, of the other seven, the best two he gives to his Kinsman *Edward de Holland*, and the other five to Sir *William Bourchier*, Sir *John Gray*, Sir *William Porter*, Sir *Gilbert Umfravil*, and *John Brom*. He is also mentioned in *Stow's Annals*<sup>r</sup>, and other Historians, to be one of the Executors of that Monarch. In the said third Year of the King was fought the famous Battle of *Agincourt*, wherein 'tis very probable this *Lewis* was, he being at that Time one of the Esquires of the Body to the King. And in 4 *H. 5.* having been born in the Province of *Hainault*, he was made a free Denizon in this Realm.

In 5 *H. 5.* he embarked with the King at *Portsmouth*, and after being at the Siege and Taking of *Caen*, and most of the Towns in *Normandy*<sup>r</sup>, he was made Governor of *Cruly*. In 6. *H. 5.* he was created Knight of the *Bath*, at *Caen* in *Normandy*, the King then solemnizing the Feast of St. *George*; after which he<sup>x</sup> was sent to besiege divers Places thereabouts. In the same Year he was at the Siege of *Roan*, and on the Surrender thereof, when many Towns and Fortresses yielded to that victorious King without Opposition<sup>y</sup>, he was made Governor of *Caudebee*; and in that<sup>z</sup> Year had a Grant of the Lordship of *Graville*, and an Hospital within the City of *Roan*.

In 7 *H. 5.* he continued with the King in *Normandy*, reducing such Places as still held out against his royal Master<sup>a</sup>; so that before the End of the Year

<sup>r</sup> *Stow*, p. 362.    <sup>s</sup> *Pat. 4. H. 5. m. 17.*  
<sup>58. a.</sup>    <sup>u</sup> *Stow's Ann. p. 356.*    <sup>x</sup> *Ibid.*  
<sup>z</sup> *Pat. Norm. 6 H. 5. m. 28.*    <sup>a</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>t</sup> *Hall's Chron. f.*  
<sup>y</sup> *Hall, f. 64. b.*

Year, the whole Dutchy came again into the Possession of the *English*, which, from the Year 1255, 40 *H.* 3. was detained by the *French*.

In 8 *H.* 5. in Consideration of his approved Valour and eminent Services (as the <sup>b</sup> Patent expresses, bearing Date at *Trois* in *Champaigne*) he was constituted the King's Standard-bearer, with the Fee of one Hundred Pounds *per Annum*, to be received of the Treasurer of his Chamber. And the same Year, in further Consideration of his great Services, had another Grant for Life <sup>c</sup> of the Manor of *Polsted-Hall*, in *Bornham* in *Com. Norf.* which came to the Crown by the Forfeiture of Sir *John Oldcastle*, Knt.

In 9 *H.* 5. he was present <sup>d</sup> with the King, at a Chapter of the most noble Order of the Garter, held at *Windfor*, the Third of *May*, when he was elected a Knight Companion of that Order, with *John* Earl *Mareschal*, *William* Earl of *Suffolk*, *John* Lord *Clifford*, and Sir *Heretongs Cleux*. The black Book of the Order recites, that the King, well considering the Persons named to him, how they exceeded one another in Courage, Prudence, and other Virtues, had chosen them as the most deserving: And, the same Day, Sir *Lewis* was admitted to the Stall of the Lord *Burnell*, which was first vacant. The King, about the Middle of the same Month <sup>e</sup>, landed at *Calais*, and with him Sir *Lewis Robsart*, who attended him the whole Campaigne; and also at the Siege of the City of *Meux* in *Brye*, which endur'd a Blockade and  
R
Siege

<sup>b</sup> *Pat. Norm.* 8. *H.* 5. p. 2. m. 36. <sup>c</sup> *Ibid.* m. 18. <sup>d</sup> *Anglii's* Register of the Order of the Garter, p. 73, 75. <sup>e</sup> *Hall's Chron.* vol. 78.



Siege more than six Months, being not turrender'd till the Tenth of *May* the Year following, 1422. On the <sup>f</sup> Delivery of which City, all the Towns and Fortresses in the Isle of *France*, in *Lanoy*, in *Brye*, and in *Champaigne*, yielded to the King. But on the last Day of *August* following, when that victorious Monarch had brought the greatest Part of *France* to submit to him, he left this transitory Life, <sup>g</sup> in the Castle called *Boys de Viscenne*, not far from *Paris*, from whence he was conveyed in solemn Funeral Pomp to *Calais*; and, among the chief Mourners who attended their Royal Master to *England*, was <sup>h</sup> this *Lewis Robsart* Lord *Bourchier*. It appears that he was, in that Reign, *Maister Enquestour des Canes & Forests*, in the Dutchy of *Normandy*; for the King at his Castle of *Roan*, the Twenty-seventh of *June* preceding his Death, <sup>i</sup> signified to him by that Title: How he had appointed *Degory Gamel*, Esq; Master of his Wolf Dogs, in the Sherifffdom of *Carenton*, and that he, or his Lieutenant, should give due Observance thereto.

In the Reign of *Henry* the Sixth, he was <sup>k</sup> Lord Chamberlain of the Household, and by that Title in 2 *H.* 6. was present at a Chapter of the Garter, held by the Duke of *Gloucester*; and was by the same Title with the King <sup>l</sup> at *Leicester* Castle, on the Fourteenth of *March*, 4 *H.* 6. when *John* Duke of *Bedford* delivered the great Seal in a Bag, sealed with the Arms of *Henry* Bishop of *Winchester*, late Chancellor, which the King, the

*Saturday*

<sup>f</sup> *Hall's Chron.* fol. 79.

<sup>g</sup> *Stow*, p. 362.

<sup>h</sup> *Hall*, f. 82.

<sup>i</sup> *Rymer*, Tom. 10. p. 224.

<sup>k</sup> *Anstis's Register*, p. 88.

<sup>l</sup> *Rymer*,

ibid. p. 353.

*Saturday* following, delivered to the Bishop of *London*.

In the 8th of *H. 6.* 1430. the King <sup>m</sup> appointed him to review his Forces, as often as necessary in their March to *France*, and to certify the Ability of the Captains, Officers, &c. with their Names and Number, and the Days of Review. And the same Year he <sup>n</sup> attended the King into *France*, being then retain'd <sup>o</sup> by Indenture to serve him in his Wars there, with two Knights, Thirty-one Men at Arms, and one Hundred and five Archers: And in 9 *H. 6.* departed this Life <sup>p</sup>, seiz'd among other Possessions of the Manors of *Little-Maldon*, *Cudsey*, *Totbam*, and *Tolleshunt*, in *Com. Essex*, whereunto Sir *John Robsart* his Brother was found to be his Heir, <sup>q</sup> and of the Age of Forty-eight Years; and *Elizabeth* his Wife surviving died 1 *Julii* 11 *H. 6.* without Issue. The said *Lewis* Lord *Robsart* was buried in *St. Paul's Chapel* in *Westminster Abbey*, where a Monument is remaining to his Memory, with his Arms within a Garter.

His elder Brother, Sir *John Robsart*, was also a Knight of the Carter, and no less famous for his Services to the Nation. He distinguish'd himself in the Wars with the *Saracens* in the Reign of King *Richard* the Second, and was knighted before the Reign of King *Henry* the Fourth. Which King <sup>s</sup> out of his especial Grace, and for the good Services of his beloved and faithful Knight, Sir *John Robsart*, grants to him, for Term of his Life, one Hundred Pounds *per Annum*, out of his Exche-

R 2

quer,

<sup>m</sup> *Rot. Franc.* 8. *H. 6.* m. 13.    <sup>n</sup> *Ibid.* m. 14.    <sup>o</sup> *Ex Autog.*  
<sup>p</sup> *penes Cler. Pell.*    <sup>r</sup> *Lib. Schedul.* 9 *H. 6.* p. 429. *Essex.*    <sup>q</sup> *Esc.*  
 9 *H. 6.* n. 52.    <sup>r</sup> *Froissart's Chron.*    <sup>s</sup> *Pat.* 1. *H. 4.*

quer, by Letters Patent bearing Date the Seventeenth of *November*, in the first Year of his Reign: And King *Henry* the Fifth, in Consideration of his good Services <sup>1</sup>, confirms to him the said Annuity by Letters Patent, dated at *Westminster* 12 *Junii*, in the first Year of his Reign. He attended on King *Henry* the Fifth, at his first Landing in *France*; and, after <sup>2</sup> being at the Siege of *Caen*, in *Normandy*, he became one of the principal Commanders under the Duke of *Gloucester* the King's Brother; who in 5 *H. 5.* specially appointed him to <sup>3</sup> treat with the Governors of the Castles of *Vire*, *Hambye*, *St. Lo*, and *Carenton*, for the Surrender thereof, which in that Year were at several Times delivered to him. In 6 *H. 5.* he <sup>4</sup> was also specially appointed by the said Duke, to treat with the Governor of *Pont-Down*, as also with the Governor, Knights, Esquires, Burgeses, and Inhabitants of *Chierburgh*, and with Monsieur *Robert de Freville*, Knt. Governor of the Castle of *St. Saviour le Visconte*; all which Places being surrend'ed by Agreement made with him, he <sup>5</sup> was constituted Governor of the Castle of *St. Saviour le Visconte*. On the Decease of the Duke of *Holland*, he was <sup>6</sup> elected a Knight-Companion of the most noble Order of the Garter; but, continuing Abroad, was install'd at *Windfor*, by his Proxy <sup>7</sup> Sir *Thomas Bar*, the Seventeenth of *February*, 6 *H. 5.* At the Siege of *Roban*, he <sup>8</sup> was one of the Commissioners assigned by the King, to confer with the *French* Commissioners about the Surrender of

<sup>1</sup> Pat. 1. *H. 5.* p. 4. m. 15. <sup>2</sup> *Hall's Chron.* f. 58. <sup>3</sup> *Rymer*, V. 9. p. 545, 553, 554, 555. <sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* p. 565, 566, 618. <sup>5</sup> *Hall's Chron.* f. 58. <sup>6</sup> *Regist. Ord. Gart.* p. 66. <sup>7</sup> *Asmole's Reg. Ord. Gart.* with Append. 65. <sup>8</sup> *Hall*, f. 62.

of that City ; and when eight Days had been spent, without concluding on one Article, which induced the *English* Commissioners to break off the Treaty, and thereupon the Townsmen mutinying had forced the Magistrates to alter their Opinions ; they came to the Tent of Sir *John Robsart*, desiring him to move the King, that the Truce might be prolonged for four Days, which being assented to, they surrender'd that City on Articles agreed on by the said Sir *John Robsart*, the Earls of *Warwick*, *Salisbury*, and others. In 7 *H. 5.* <sup>a</sup> he had, in Recompence of his Services, a Grant of the Castle and Lordships of *St. Saviour le Visconte*, and *Neabou*, and *Dauvers*, by Letters Patent, bearing Date the Eighth of *March*, at the City of *Eureux*. And by other Letters Patent, dated at *Gisors*, the First of *October*, he gave him the <sup>e</sup>Baronies of *St. Saviour le Visconte* and *Neaubou* ; and afterwards, <sup>f</sup> at the Request of his beloved and faithful Knight, Sir *John de Robessart*, Lord of *St. Saviour le Visconte* and *Neabou*, the King by Letters Patent, dated at *Mante*, the Eleventh of *November* the same Year, granted to the said Sir *John*, that the Men and Tenants of the said Lordships should be discharged, and stand acquitted of all Manner of Services, &c. but within those Territories. He had also, that Year, <sup>g</sup> a Grant of the Lordships and Lands of *Dorglandres*, and *Desmonville la Rogue*, in *Normandy*.

In 8 *H. 5.* he was appointed with the Duke of *Exeter*, the Earl of *Salisbury*, and others of the greatest Note, to confer with the *French* King at *Troyes*, concerning the Title of King

R 3

Henry

<sup>d</sup> Pat. Norm. 7 *H. 5.* p. 1. m. 80, n. 316.

<sup>e</sup> Ibid. m. 18.

n. 26.

<sup>f</sup> Ibid. m. 7.

<sup>g</sup> Rot. Norm. p. 2. m. 29.



*Henry* to the Crown of *France*, and his Marriage with *Catharine*, Daughter to the said King.<sup>b</sup> And when it was concluded on, that King *Henry* should come to *Troys*, and marry the said Princess, and the *French* King should make him Heir of his Realm, Crown, and Dignity, after his Decease; Sir *John Robsart*<sup>i</sup> was left to give his Attendance on the said Princess, till the King of *England* could come to *Troys*, to celebrate his Nuptials. In 9. *H.* 5. he returned with the King and his Queen to *England*,<sup>k</sup> and was present with his Majesty in a Chapter of the Garter, held at *Windsor*, the Twenty-third of *May*; but, being absent in a Chapter held in the next ensuing Year, his<sup>l</sup> Excuse was allowed, by being Abroad in the Wars.

On the Death of his Royal Master, he attended on his Corps into *England*; and, being Keeper of the Seal of the Order of the Garter, was<sup>m</sup> present at the Feast of *St. George*, held at *Windsor*, in 1 *H.* 6; but returned to *France* the same Year, and being a Knight Banneret,<sup>n</sup> as well as a Knight of the Garter, was retained with his Brother Sir *Terrey Robsart*, Captain of *Hamby*, to serve the Regent *John* Duke of *Bedford*, in that Kingdom, who made him Captain of<sup>o</sup> *Candebeck*; and, after the Death of his Brother Sir *Terrey*, of *St. Saviour de Iwe*, in *Normandy*.

This Sir *John Robsart*, being born in *Hainault*, was naturalized in the second Year of King  
*Henry*

<sup>b</sup> *Hall*, f. 68. b.

<sup>i</sup> *Hist. of Engl.* vol. 1. p. 327.

<sup>k</sup> *Regist.*

*Ord. Gart.* p. 73.

<sup>l</sup> *Ibid.* p. 81.

<sup>m</sup> *Ibid.* p. 84, 85.

<sup>n</sup> *MS.* Not. 5. in *Bibl. John Anstis Arm.*

<sup>o</sup> *E. Lib. MS.* de

*Vit. Mil. Gart.* in *Museo Aemol.* Not. 1118.

Henry the Sixth; and in the Preamble to the Patent it is recited, "That the King, in Consideration of the long and faithful Services of his beloved and faithful Sir *John Robsart*, Knt. to his dear Father and Grandfather; and also, because he did Homage to his said Father; with the Advice and Assent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal and the Commons of *England* in Parliament, grants to the said *John*, that he should be made a Native of this Kingdom, &c."

In 7 *H.* 6, he<sup>a</sup> was with the King in *Normandy*; and, the Year following, the Duke of *Bedford* sent the Earl of *Huntingdon* and this Sir *John Robsart*, to the Assistance of the Duke of *Burgundy*, then besieging *Compeigne*; who, as my Author observes, were Two as expert in all warlike Affairs, as valiant in all bold Attempts: And they were so active in carrying on the Siege, that the Gaining of the Town, in a short Time, was not doubted of. But the Death of *Philip* Duke of *Brabant*, happening in the Interval, occasioned the Duke of *Burgundy* to leave the Siege, and the Command to the Lord *John* of *Luxemburgh*, who marched off when the Town was reduced to Despair, without the Consent of the *English* Commanders.

In 9 *H.* 6. the King being in *France*, he was also in the Wars there, and was present on the Seventh of *December*, in 10 *H.* 6. when his Sovereign was crowned King of *France*; who entering *London* on the Eleventh of *November* follow-

R 4 ing,

<sup>a</sup> Pat. 2. *H.* 6. p. 4. m. 1.    <sup>q</sup> *Anstis's* Register of the Garter, vol. 2. p. 66.    <sup>r</sup> *Hist. of Engl.* vol. 1. p. 365.    <sup>s</sup> *Anstis's* Register of the Garter, vol. 2. p. 107, et seq.

ing, Sir *John Robsart* also returned to *England*, and was in several Chapters of the most noble Order of the Garter, till the Fifteenth Year of King *Henry* the Sixth, when, being in *Normandy*, his Excuse was allowed, for maintaining his Sovereign's Rights in *Normandy*; as it was in succeeding Chapters, even to 28 *H. 6.* But, in 17 *H. 6.* in Consideration of his Services, he had a Renewal<sup>†</sup> of the Grant of one Hundred Pounds *per Annum*, made to him by King *Henry* the Fourth; as also of Fifty Pounds *per Annum*, out of the Castle, Forest, and Lordship of *Rockingham*, granted him by King *Henry* the Fifth; with the Remainder to *John* his Son, for Life. It is probable he returned to *England*, in 29 *H. 6.* for, in that Year, he died, and was<sup>‡</sup> buried in *St. Frances's Chapel*, in the *Grey Friars, London*, now called *Christ-Church*; where a raised Tomb was erected to his Memory, with his Effigies in the Livery of the Garter, and this Inscription:

*Hic jacet Strenuus Vir Dom. Johannes Robsart  
Valens Miles in Armis, qui obiit 24 Die Decem-  
bris, A. D. 1450.*

Sir *John Robsart*, his Son and Heir, succeeded in his Estate; and likewise to the Grant made both to him and his Father, in 17 *H. 6.* as before recited. He left Issue Sir *Terrey Robsart*, Knt.<sup>‡</sup> who, by his Wife, the Daughter and Heir of Sir *Thomas Siderston* of *Siderston*, in the County of *Norfolk*, Knt. had Issue Sir *John Robsart*, Knt. and a Daughter *Lucy*, married to *Edward Walpole*

<sup>†</sup> Pat. 17 *H. 6.* p. 2. m. 4.    <sup>‡</sup> MS. sub Effig. *Vitell. F. 7.* in  
Bibl. Cotton. Ex Regist. Fratrum Minorum Lond.  
mate.    <sup>‡</sup> Ex Stem-

*Walpole of Houghton*, in the said County, Esq; And this last Sir *John Robsart* leaving an only Daughter *Amye*, the first Wife of *Robert Dudley*, Earl of *Leicester*, the great Favourite of Queen *Elizabeth*, and dying without Issue by him, the Manor of *Siderston*, in *Norfolk*, and other Lands, devolved on *John Walpole*, Esq; her Cousin and Heir, Son of *Edward Walpole*, Esq; by *Lucy* his Wife, Daughter of Sir *Terrey Robsart*, Knt. before-mentioned.

Which *John Walpole*, Esq; thereby becoming sole Heir to this noble Family of *Robsart*, both he and his Descendants have borne for their Crest, *On a Wreath, the Bust of a Man, Side-faced, coup'd proper, ducally crowned, with a long Cap on, Gules, thereon a Catharine Wheel Or.* Which was the Crest of Sir *John Robsart*, Knight of the Garter, the direct Ancestor (by Maternal Descent) to the present most noble and right honourable Sir *Robert Walpole*, who, for his great Abilities and Services, in several of the highest Stations in the Kingdom, and being lineal Heir (as I have shewn) to the said Sir *John Robsart*, Knight Banneret and Knight of the Garter, has also been elected one of the Knights Companions of the said most noble Order.

These memorable Persons, having (as I have shewn) merited of our Country by their Services, I hope my Readers will excuse this Digression.

I observed before, that the Dukes of *Anjou* and *Berry* were the first that begun the War; and so subtle were they, as, by Means of the Archbishop of *Tholouse*, the Clergy were prevailed on to assert in their Pulpits the Right of  
King



King *Charles* against King *Edward*; and the Archbishop being Brother to the Bishop of *Cabors*, a City belonging to the Prince of *Wales*, it was the first that revolted. And afterwards that Prelate, travelling through *Languedoc* and *Picardy*, so wrought on the Clergy, that they stirred up the People to renounce their Allegiance to King *Edward*; whereby no less than sixty Towns, Castles, and Fortresses submitted to the Obedience of the *French* King, without any Resistance, being protected by those Dukes and their Forces.

The *English*, with the Prince of *Wales*, were too inconsiderable in Number to stop their Progress; but King *Edward*, with the utmost Expedition, sent five Hundred Men of Arms and four Thousand Archers with his Son *Edmund* of *Langley*, Earl of *Cambridge*, and his Son-in-law *John Hastings*, Earl of *Pembroke*, into the Dutchy of *Aquitain* to the Prince, who was not wanting in making the necessary Preparations to resist the *French*. From the Time he had finished his *Spanish* Expedition, he had ordered Sir *Hugh Calverley* to lie about the Marches of *Arragon*, with six Thousand Men of the Companions, to receive the Monies for which King *Pedro* stood engaged to him; but, that Expectation being frustrated by the Death of the said King, he ordered them to march through *Arragon* and *Foix*, and come into *Bigorre*. Accordingly Sir *Hugh Calverley* with his Men performed that Service; and, the Prince having made him chief Leader of all the Companions, he wasted the Lands of the Earl of *Armagnac* and the Lord of *Albret*, two Lords who were the Cause of the War.

On the Arrival of the Earls of *Cambridge* and *Pembroke*, the Prince tho' glad to see his Brethren, yet, after three Days Stay with him, he sent them on an Expedition into the Earldom of *Perigort*, which they destroyed with Fire and Sword; and laid Siege to the strong Fortrefs of *Bourdelles*, which they took after a long Siege by Stratagem. But the *French* on the other Side, in the Marches of *Anjou* and *Touraine*, did no little Mischief on the Prince's Lands. These were opposed by Sir *Simon Burley*, with several Knights of *England* and *Gascogne*, whom the Prince had ordered to the Frontiers of *Poictou* and *Xantoigne*, but they were not a fourth in Number to the *French*; the Lord *Chandos* being sent with other Forces to *Montauban*, and the Earls of *Cambridge* and *Pembroke* with the greatest Body being before *Bourdelles*. However, they acquitted themselves manfully on all Occasions, and the *French* were not able to take any of their Garrisons. Yet one Day Sir *John Burley*, being out with a Party, fell into an Ambush of the *French*, between *Mirebeau* and *Lusignan*; and tho' the *English* fought with great Skill and Courage for a long Time, yet, being but a Handful of Men in Comparison of the *French*, they were wearied out, and at last utterly defeated, and forced to Flight. Sir *Simon Burley* was so closely pursued that he was taken Prisoner, and almost all his Men were either taken or slain. The Prince of *Wales* was much concerned at the Loss of Sir *Simon Burley*, having been educated with him from a Child, who was Master of many noble Qualities, and had gained much Honour by his Services.

The

The Lord *John Chandos* with his Forces had better Success; he not only kept the Frontiers, but made many Inroads into the Enemies Country, and having laid Siege to *Terriers* in *Tbolouse*, and finding it not practicable to take it by Assault, he set Pioneers to Work to undermine it; who did their Business so well, that the Town was entered and plundered, and all within put to the Sword, for their Obstinacy. He had Designs on other Places, but his Stratagems were discovered, the Country being entirely against him.

On the other Side the Duke of *Anjou* sent the Earl of *Perigort*, the Earl of *Cominges*, and ten Thousand Men into *Quercy*; where they did much Mischief in burning and ravaging the Country, and after laid Siege to *Realville* a strong Town, well furnished with all Things necessary for a good Defence, and an *English* Garrison, who were resolved every Man of them to die, rather than yield the Place, tho' the Townsmen would gladly have received the *French*. With four large Engines brought from *Thoulon*, which they reared against the Walls, they cast forth Day and Night huge Stones, &c. and set their Pioneers a Mining; but the *English* with great Courage comforted each other, and slighted all their Art and Fury, till at last, a great Part of the Wall falling, the Town was entered, and all the *English* put to the Sword. The Lord *Chandos* was grieved he could not relieve them; but the Enemy being re-inforced by a Body of the Companions on their Side, and three Thousand of the Duke of *Berry's* Men, they were so numerous, he thought it imprudent to attack them, having no Hopes of Success. The  
Enemy

Enemy by Means of the Clergy, as before-mentioned, and by their Emissaries, had seduced several Places under the Prince not garrisoned by *English*, to declare for them ; and, the better to effect their Designs, made several Divisions of their Forces, which caused the Prince to separate his, and to garrison several Towns, whereby it was impossible to make Head against them in all Places ; and a great Loss it was, that the Prince at this Time was so ill, he could not appear at the Head of his Men.

However, he had placed, every where in his Dominions, Men who had given Proofs of their Conduct and Courage, and on every Attack and Assault shewed the Enemy they were not deterred, and despised the Arts they made Use of to bring the Country to their Interest. The<sup>\*</sup> Lord of *Chavigny* a potent Baron of *Poitou*, having abandoned the *English* Interest, secured his Town of *Bresse* in *Maine*, and went to *Paris* ; but *Chavigny*, being garrisoned with *English*, he could not get into his Hands. The Prince was exceedingly displeased at his Defection, and on Information that the Viscount of *Rocheboüart* induced him to revolt, and designed himself to go to the *French* King, he forthwith sent for him ; and, charging him with it, he was in that Confusion as inclined the Prince to believe him guilty, and thereupon committed him to Prison, where he was detained a considerable Time ; and tho' there were some Proofs of his Guilt, yet, as there was not a plain Conviction, the Prince would not proceed to the utmost Extremity with him :

†

Yet,

<sup>\*</sup> *Froissart*, c. 255.



Yet, after he had given him his Liberty, he went directly to the *French* King. But, to revenge this Treason of the Lord *Chavigny*, he immediately sent for his Grand Seneschal of *Poitou*, the renowned Lord *James Audeley*, who had gained such signal Reputation at the Battle of *Poitiers*. He also sent for Sir *Guiscard Dangle*, Sir *Lewis* of *Harcourt*, and some other Barons who were firm to him, and were with the Lord *Chandos* at *Montauban*. To these, he gave Command to destroy the Lord *Chavigny's* Country with Fire and Sword; and, having formed a small but gallant Army, they marched from *Poitiers*, under the Command of the Lord *Audeley*, into *Berry*, which they ravaged, burnt, and plundered, that the whole Country trembled; and proceeded without the least Opposition, till they came into *Touraine*, scattering Ruin all the Way about them. After which, coming into the Lord *Chavigny's* Country, they put all to Fire and Sword; and the Town of *Bresse* in *Maine*, which their Lord had garrisoned, they made an Assault on it for a whole Day, without gaining any Advantage; but, early the next Morning, renewing the Assault, the Town was carried by true Courage, the Gates being cast into the Ditch, and a free Entrance made. The Garrison defended themselves to the utmost, knowing their Lives were at Stake; but Nothing could withstand the *English* Valour, and all in Arms were slain without Mercy. Sixteen of the chief Captains were hanged up in Armour, and the Town was plundered and burnt, the Inhabitants rifled, and many Hundreds of them slain and drowned.

drowned. After this hot Service, the Lord *Audeley* returned victorious to *Poitiers*, there to refresh himself and his Men, and to wait the Prince's further Pleasure.

<sup>y</sup> Sir *Robert Knowles*, a valiant *English* Leader, in the Dutchy of *Bretagne*, having performed many signal Services to Duke *John*, had a fair Estate there; and his Heart being always firm to his Country, and having manifested his Valour and Loyalty to King *Edward*, as also to his Son the Prince of *Wales*, he offered his Service, and was this Year retained by the Prince. He had been at the Conquest of *Aquitain*, and, incensed at the Treachery and Perfidiousness of the *French*, he resolved, with all his Power, to serve the Prince at his own Charges. Thereupon, he equipped four stout Ships, and, leaving the Castle of *Derval*, drew to the Port, with sixty Men of Arms and as many Archers in his Company, with whom he safely arrived at the Key of *Rochelle*. Sir *John Devereux*, the Governor under the Prince, gave him a hearty Welcome; but the Citizens being in the *French* Interest, his Men were not so well received, tho' they were over-awed by the *English* Garrison.

After two Days Stay there, Sir *Robert* went to *Angoulesme* to the Prince, who received him very graciously, all Men of Worth and Valour being dear to him; and, for his Courage and Experience in the Wars, he made him General of all those Forces, then ready to march on an Expedition. The Prince called to him all the chief Commanders, and commanding them to be obedient

ent to Sir *Robert Knowles*, as to himself, and they all answered they would most punctually. But tho' the Prince in this shewed he was an impartial Friend to Virtue, by preferring true Merit; yet, he being not of such a noble Birth, as some who were under him, they envied him the Honour of the Command; which, after some Time, caused a Dissention in the Army, and prevented the successful Enterprizes of that great Man, as will hereafter appear.

The Prince had also another faithful Servant, Sir *Thomas Wake* the valiant Seneschal of *Rou-vergne*, who had been with him in the Battle of *Najara*; and he now gallantly maintained, for his Master, the Castle and City of *Millaud*, about a Day's Journey from *Mompellier*; and tho' all the Country about it soon after turned *French*, yet he maintained that and another Fortrefs, for about a Year and half; when, being besieged by a great Army and no Hopes of Relief, he capitulated, and marched out with flying Colours, Bag and Baggage. He was the <sup>2</sup> Son of *Hugh Wake* of *Bliseworth* in *Com. Northamp.* a younger Son of *Baldwin* Lord *Wake*, Grandfather of *Margaret* Countess of *Kent*, Mother of *Joan* Princess of *Wales*. And the said Sir *Thomas Wake* was lineal Ancestor to the late Archbishop of *Canterbury*; but his chief Heir Male is the present Sir *Baldwin Wake*, Baronet.

Sir *Robert Knowles*, before-mentioned, stayed at *Angoulesme* but five Days, till his Troops were ready; and then took his Leave of the Prince, and began his March with Sir *Neale Loring*, Knight

<sup>2</sup> *Dugdale's Baronage*, vol. 1. p. 543.

Knight of the Garter, the Lord *Baldwin Freville* Seneschal of *Xantoigne*, Sir *William Molineux* Seneschal of *Agenois*, *Hugh Lord Hastings*, *Thomas Lord Spencer*, Sir *Richard Pontcharden*, Sir *Stephen Cossington*, Sir *John Trivet*, Sir *Thomas Banister*, Sir *John Taunton*, Sir *Nicholas Bond*, and more than sixty other Knights; so that in all they were above fix-score Men of Arms, besides those whom Sir *Robert* brought with him, five Hundred Archers, and as many Footmen arm'd with Brigandines, a Kind of pliable Armour like Mail, for Footmen; all desirous of fighting the *French*. At *Agen* he staid a Day or two to refresh his Men, and to get Information of his Enemies. There he heard how his old Friend and Companion in Arms, Sir *Perdiccas* of *Albret*, then Commander of no less than three Hundred Companions, was in those Parts, but had been lately corrupted by the Duke of *Anjou*, to change the Interest of *England* for *France*. Sir *Robert* was much concern'd at it, and sent Messengers to him with a safe Conduct, desiring he would give him a Meeting in the open Fields, at such Time and Place as should be agreed on. At the Interview, after mutual Careffes, they fell into Discourse; and, Sir *Robert* prevailing on him to sit down in his Pavillion, he told him, *That he both wonder'd and griev'd, that a Man of his Honour should not only leave his Friends, but his Reputation too, by forsaking the Service of a Prince so noble, so valiant and just, as the Prince of Wales was, and from whom he himself had received no small Benefits: That it could hardly be believed, and he wished it might never be proved, that so gallant a Gentleman,*



as *Sir Perdiccas of Albret* was, should ever be debauched from his Loyalty to his Prince, by the subtle Arts of Faith-breakers and traiterous Enemies: That the Prince could easily forgive a Slip, soon repented of; for it was his Way to overcome himself, as well as others, and to forget Injuries that were acknowledged presently; but to remember Services, for ever. Before they parted, *Sir Perdiccas* was wholly recover'd, and embraced *Sir Robert*, thanking him for his friendly Advice; and sware unto him Faith and Loyalty to the Prince, and the King of *England* his Father, for ever. And he immediately came over with his own three Hundred Men, and with two Hundred more of the Companions, most *Gascoigners*, who chose to follow his Fortune.

The other Companions, who lay in and about the City of *Cahors*, hearing of this Defection of *Sir Perdiccas*, were much cast down; and, thinking themselves too weak to maintain the Place against the *English*, deliver'd it to the Care of the Bishop and Burgessees, and went to *Durmel*, a strong wall'd Priory not far off, which they strongly fortified, and determined to defend. *Sir Robert Knowles* immediately besieged the Place, and made many vigorous Assaults, but was so well defended, little Advantage was gain'd; and, the Siege continuing, the Lord *Chandos*, the Lord *Thomas Felton*, the Capital of *Busche*, *Sir Thomas Peirce*, *Sir Eustace Dambreticourt*, and other *English* Knights, went from *Montauban*, to *Sir Robert Knowles*, thinking to find some Employment for their Swords. In their Way they took *Moissac*, a strong Town of the Enemies; wherein they left a Garrison, the Inhabitants capitulating, and

swearing

swearing they would keep the Town for the Prince of *Wales*, and be at his Devotion for ever, without Fraud or Collusion. On their Coming before *Durmel*, Sir *Robert Knowles* received them with great Joy and Courtesy, and there was a good Harmony among the Commanders.

During this Siege, <sup>a</sup> there were many notable Exploits on both Sides, but, the Place being exceeding strong, the *English* could gain no great Advantage; and it raining almost continually Day and Night, and being in such Want of Provision, that a Penny-Loaf was sold in the Camp for three old Groats, they broke up the Siege by general Consent, after laying before the Place near five Weeks. They march'd from thence, and set down before the Castle and Town of *Domme*, standing on the *Dordonne*, in a more plentiful Country; wherein was present Sir *Robert* of *Domme*, the Lord and Governor thereof, who had provided his Garrison with all Necessaries. The *English* Army, when they came before it, consisted of fifteen Hundred Men of Arms, besides two Thousand Archers on Horseback, and Footmen arm'd with Brigandines, to the Number of six Thousand more. After giving several brisk Assaults for fifteen Days, without any great Advantage, the chief Commanders agreed to send to the Prince, at *Angoulesme*, an Account of the State of the Siege, and know his Pleasure how they should proceed. But before the Return of the Herald they sent (who had the Title of *Chandos*) they broke up their Siege, and march'd further into the Country, to reduce other Towns and Castles, as had lately revolted by Persuasion

<sup>a</sup> *Froiss.* c. 257.

suasion of the Duke of *Berry*. There they met with better Success, reducing several Towns to the Prince's Obedience, and the Inhabitants in a solemn Manner swore to be true to him.

*Roquemador*, a Town in *Quercy*, endur'd a terrible Assault for a whole Day, and the next Day the Garrison, perceiving from their Walls the *English* preparing to renew the Attack, capitulated, but they were obliged to send fifty Horse well laden with Provisions, for fifteen Days, for the Supply of the Army, and to follow it in their March. *Ville-Franche de Perigort*, eight Leagues from *Cahors*, was well stock'd with Provisions, and all Necessaries for Defence, the Country retiring thither with their Goods, &c. as to a Sanctuary; but, after four Assaults, they also agreed to be obedient to the *English*; and Sir *John Ross*, a valiant Commander, was made Governor. The taking of this last Place was much resented by the Duke of *Anjou*, as it lost him all that Part of the Country.

The Prince caused the Herald *Chandos* to stay six Days, before he return'd an Answer; and, not finding them before *Domme*, he came to them in *Quercy*, when, producing the Prince's Letters, they were read in full Council: "How the Prince  
" would have the Lord *Chandos*, the Lord *Thomas*  
" *Felton*, and the Capital of *Busche* to come  
" speedily to him to *Angoulesme*. But that Sir  
" *Robert Knowles* and his Men with all the Com-  
" panions might tarry still where they were, and  
" carry on the War." But, Sir *Robert* being unwilling to undertake the Command without them, they all agreed to return to the Prince together, and send to Sir *Perdiccas* of *Albret*, at *Roquemador*,

to defend the Frontiers against the Enemy. And to the Chiefs of the Companions, who were with them, they promis'd, if they would enter the Marches of *Limosin* and *Auvergne*, and make Inroads on the Enemy, they were to have what they won; or, should they be therein besieged, they would assuredly order such Assistance as should set them free; with which they were well satisfied. The Lords and Sir *Robert Knowles*, leaving them, went to the Prince at *Angoulesme*; where they met the Earls of *Cambridge* and *Pembroke*, and the Lord *John Montagu*, who were a little before return'd from the Siege of *Bourdelles*. Thus the Summer was spent with mutual Losses and Gains, on both Sides, on the Frontiers of the Dominions belonging to the Prince.

King *Charles* of *France* spent the Summer in equipping a royal Fleet in the Port of *Harsleur*, designing to invade *England*, with a great Army under the Conduct of his Brother *Philip*, Duke of *Burgundy*, who was taken Prisoner with King *John* his Father, at the Battle of *Poictiers*. King *Charles* was so intent on his design'd Expedition, that he resided at *Roan* to inspect and hasten his Equipment, and sent a General Summons thro' his Realm, for a Muster of his Men to go on board, and vast Quantities of Provisions were brought in for the Fleet: Yet, after all these Preparations, King *Edward* cut out Work for him at Home, that the Expedition was wholly laid aside. The Duke of *LANCASTER*, landing from *Dover* at *Calais* with a good Body of Men, <sup>b</sup> made such Inroads on the *French*, and burnt and ravaged the Country, in that

S 3

very

<sup>b</sup> *Froissart*, l. 263. 574.



very Week the Duke of *Burgundy* was to set sail for *England*, as so alarm'd the *French* King, that he order'd all his Men of War to be laid up, and his Forces to march under the Duke of *Burgundy* towards *Calais*, to stop the Progress of the *English* Arms. He encamp'd with his great Army over-against the *English* between *St. Omers* and *Tournepam*, and, tho' he was Seven<sup>c</sup> to their One, yet refus'd Battle, the King his Brother having expressly commanded him to the contrary; for he well consider'd, that, notwithstanding such Disadvantages, the *English* had gain'd the Victory. But, the *English* being so inferior in Number, it was not judg'd prudent to attack the *French* in their Trenches, yet ranged themselves for several Days, in Order of Battle to receive them.

I now return to give an Account of the Lord *Chandos*, Sir *Robert Knowles*, &c. who as I mention'd were sent for by the Prince, where they met the Earls of *Cambridge* and *Pembroke*. The Prince received them with many kind Expressions, and communicated them his Desire of taking in a strong Castle, called *La Roche sur Yon*, belonging to the Duke of *Anjou*, his most inveterate Enemy. They were all pleas'd with the Enterprize, and, whilst the necessary Preparations were made for it, the Prince entertain'd them as Friends and Companions, but<sup>d</sup> with great Magnificence. On Taking the Field, there were at the Head of his Forces (of which were three Thousand Spears) the Earls of *Cambridge* and *Pembroke*, the Lord *John Moutagu*, the Lord *Chandos*, the Lord *Audeley*, Seneschal of *Poitou*; the Lord *Thomas Peircy*, Seneschal of *Rochelle*;

<sup>c</sup> *Froissart*, cap. 269.

<sup>d</sup> *Ibid.* c. 262.

*Rochelle*; the Lord *John Greilly*, Capital of *Busche*; the Lord of *Pons*, the Lord of *Partenay*, the the Lord *Lewis* of *Harcourt*, the Lord of *Taniboton*, the Lord of *Pinant*, and other Lords of the Prince's Dominions, and many Knights. Their Design was kept secret, so that they came before the Castle unexpectedly; but the Duke of *Anjou* had provided it with whatever was necessary for a long Defence, and placed therein a valiant Commander, Sir *John Blondeau*, with a strong Garrison. The *English* batter'd the Place, with several great Engines, and all other Devices used in those Days; which in a little Time brought the Governor to admit of a Parley. He saw no Succour like to come to him from any Part, and there being in the *English* Army several Knights, who had been in some Exploits with him, they went to the Barriers, and on mutual Security obtain'd to speak with him. In Conference together, they so over-reach'd him (for he was none of the wisest) that he agreed to surrender the Castle, if he was not reliev'd within the Space of one Month, on Payment of six Thousand Franks for the Provisions and Ammunition therein: And gave Hostages for the Performance to the Besiegers, who were not to offer them any Violence, during the said Term. After this, Sir *John Blondeau* immediately sent to the Duke of *Anjou*, the *French* King, the Duke of *Berry*, and to all from whom he expected Succour, in order to excuse himself. Yet, notwithstanding it was a Place of the greatest Consequence, for the Defence of the Marches of *Anjou*, and *Touraine*, the *French* were so careful to avoid giving Battle, that they suffer'd it to be de-

liver'd up; but the Duke of *Anjou* was so enraged at Sir *John Blondeau*, that, on his Arrival at *Angiers*, he was committed close Prisoner, and by his strict Command was sewed up in a Sack, and flung into the River, *for that* (he said) *the Castle was able to have held out an whole Year, if Need had been.*

The *English* Lords, having placed therein a good Garrison, went back to the Prince; and most of them soon after took their Leave of him, to retire to their own Habitations. Among others, it is said ° that the most valiant Lord *James Audeley*, Seneschal of *Poitou*, going into Quarters at *Pontenay le Comte*, fell sick, and died there, to the great Regret of the Prince and Princess, and all the loyal Barons of *Poitou*: And that his Obsequies were performed in the City of *Poitiers*, the Prince himself being present. But this is a Mistake in *Froissart*, it being Sir *James Audeley* that died in *Gascoigne* at this Time; which was so great a Grief to the Lord his Father, that he asked the Prince's Leave to retire into *England*, where he lived many Years † after; and departed this Life, not till the First of *April*, 1386. 9 R. 2. having a little before made his Will at *Heleigh* Castle. However, *Poitou*, by his Absence, being deprived of her grand Seneschal, the Prince of *Wales* appointed the Lord *Chandos*, at that Time Constable of *Aquitain*, to be Seneschal of *Poitou*; which he was inclined to, not only by his own Knowledge of his Merits, but also by the Request of all the Barons and

° *Froissart*, c. 260, &c.  
1. p. 750.

† *Ashmole*, p. 706. and *Dugdale*, vol.

and Knights of that Country. And he went immediately <sup>g</sup> and resided at *Poitiers*, from whence he made many Incursions on the *French*, and put all those Parts in such Terror, that none would venture Abroad, but in great Bodies. But, on the First of *January* the Year following, this great Man received his Death's Wound, by a very unhappy Accident. The Town of <sup>h</sup> *St. Salvin*, on the River *Gartempe* in *Poitou*, was an *English* Garrison, and all the Inhabitants and Monks there had sworn Allegiance to the Prince; yet one of the Monks, hating his Superior the Abbot, out of the Rancour of his Heart, found an Opportunity of betraying him and all his Convent, as also the Town, into the Hands of Sir *Lewis* of *St. Julian*; who took Possession of the Place for the *French* King, and put a good Garrison therein. The Loss of this Place vexed the Lord *Chandos*, appertaining to his Province of Seneschal of *Poitou*, and was conveniently situated for the *French* to annoy him. It was therefore always uppermost in his Thoughts how to recover it, and had used several Stratagems to take it by Surprise, which all failed; and in the last of them was so chagreened, as he omitted Taking that due Care of himself in his Return, which so great a Charge as he was entrusted with required. Having separated his Forces at *Chavigny*, three Leagues from *St. Salvin*, he resolved to stay there the whole Day; but, after hearing the *French* were Abroad under Sir *Lewis* of *St. Julian*, from *St. Salvin*, he determined to go

<sup>g</sup> *Froissart*, c. 262.  
P. 704.

<sup>h</sup> *Ibid.* c. 268. and 270. and *Du Chesne*



go in Quest of them, with the few Men he had with him; and, coming up to the Bridge of *Lussacia*, a sharp Encounter ensued. It was early in the Morning, and a great hoar Frost; and, as the Lord *Chandos* went hastily against his Enemies with a massy Battle-Ax in his Hand, he slid and fell down; and, rising again, a Rapier was thrust into his Face, under his left Eye, between the Nose and the Forehead, and entered (as it is thought) into his Brain, so that he fell again, and twice rolled upside down with the Pain; and, tho' he did not then die on the Spot, he never spoke one Word after. His Visor was up, and he was blind on that Side he received the Wound, having lost his Eye five Years before, in hunting a Hart near *Bordeaux*. In the true Use of Armory, is the Life of this Lord *Chandos*; wherein more particular Mention is made, how he came up with the *French*, and how his Men were after rescued, and how Sir *Edward Clifford* defended his Body so valiantly, that the *French* were never possessed of it, but were all taken Prisoners themselves.

When the Action was over, Sir *Edward Clifford*, who was Uncle to the Lord *Chandos*, and who had so valiantly defended him, caused him to be carefully unarmed, and his Servants to bear him softly on their Shields, to the next Fortrefs called *Mortimer*. All who were about him bemoaned his hard Fate, and his Domesticks wept bitterly. He saw, heard, and understood them well, making Signs of his being in his perfect Senses, tho' he could not speak; and in this painful Condition he lived two Days and a Night. The Prince of *Wales*,

and all the Lords and Knights of *English* Birth or Interest in those Parts, exceedingly lamented the Loss of him. The King of *France* is said to have shed Tears, when he heard of his Death; and passionately said, <sup>k</sup> *There was not any Knight, then living, so likely to have renewed the Peace between the two Crowns, as he; being so dear to King Edward, and so revered, esteemed, and loved by all Men.* Our Nation had a great Loss by his Death, for by him *Guienne* was kept and recovered. In the Battles of *Sluce*, of *Cressy*, of *Poitiers*, of *Auray*, and of *Najara*, and all other Actions he was concerned in, none behaved more gallantly, or got greater Renown, being justly celebrated by our Historians, as well for his Conduct as his Valour. He <sup>l</sup> was the Twenty-first Knight of those who were chosen the first Companions of the most noble Order of the Garter. He <sup>m</sup> had that Candor of Mind, and such an unbiass'd Judgment, as never to deny his Enemies their due Praise; such Moderation and Prudence, that, before the Fight, he never slighted them, and, when they were beaten, he never insulted over them. In Conversation, none more affable and courteous; but, in War, was a rigid Exacter of Discipline, and preserved the wretched Husbandmen free from military License (without a special Cause for it;) whereby he obtained Obedience from the Soldiery, Goodwill from the Country, and Love from his Prince. While he was Seneschal of *Poitou*, the  
Commons

<sup>i</sup> *Walsingham's Hypod.* p. 132. n. 10.      <sup>k</sup> *Idem, Hist.* p. 181, n. 10.      <sup>l</sup> *Asmole*, p. 702.      <sup>m</sup> Vide *Rich. Dinothi Adversaria Hist. de Viris illustribus*, p. 95.

Commons were not oppressed with unjust Exactions, nor vexed with the Rapines or frequent Incurfions of the Enemy; to all which they were greatly expofed, after his Death. He left <sup>a</sup> his dear Lord, the Prince of *Wales*, Heir to all that he had in *Normandy*, which amounted to the yearly Revenue of Forty-thousand Franks, or Four Thousand Pounds Sterling. In 34 *Ed.* 3. he had, in Confideration of his great Services in the Wars, and at Home, a Grant to him <sup>o</sup> and his Heirs, for ever, of the Baronies of *St. Saviour le Visconte*, *Daunvers*, and *Dongville*; as alfo, of the Lands, and Knight's Fees, of *St. Mary de Monte*, *Farfellis*, and *Romilly*; And likewise, of all other the Lands and Poffeffions of *Godfrey de Harcourt*, deceased; which King *Edward* had at that Time in *France*, by the Grant of the faid *Godfrey*. After which, he <sup>p</sup> built the Caſtle of *St. Saviours*, and thereupon he was ſtiled, <sup>r</sup> *Baro Sancti Salvatoris le Visconte*; and ſometimes, *Vicecomes Sancti Salvatoris in Normania*. He was interr'd, with all military Honours, in the Fortrefs of *Mortimer*, where he died; and, having never been married, *Elizabeth*, *Eleanor*, and *Iſabel*, were, on the Inquiſition taken after his Death, found to be his Siſters and next Heirs. *Elizabeth* the eldeſt, writing herſelf <sup>r</sup> *Elizabeth Chandos*, Siſter and one of the Heirs of Sir *John Chandos*, Knt. by Deed, dated at *London*, 1373. 47 *Ed.* 3. conveys to the King, and his Heirs, all her Right in the Barony of *St. Saviour*  
our

<sup>a</sup> *Froiffart*, c. 251.      <sup>o</sup> *Pat.* 34 *Ed.* 3. p. 1. m. 35.      <sup>p</sup> *Ypod.*  
*Neutr.* p. 198. n. 20.      <sup>q</sup> *Pat.* 35 *Ed.* 3. m. 3. and *Pat.* 45 *Ed.*  
 3. p. 1.      <sup>r</sup> *Rymer*, tom. 7. p. 31.

our *le Visconte*, &c. granted to *John* her Brother and his Heirs. Which *Elizabeth* was afterwards married to Sir *Thomas Berkley*, of *Coberley* in *Gloucestershire*; whose Daughter and Heir, *Alice*, was married to Sir *Thomas Bruges*, lineal Ancestor to his Grace the present Duke of *Chandos*. *Eleanor* was the Wife of Sir *Roger Collings*, and *Isabel* the youngest, married to —, left Issue a Daughter, *Margaret*, married Sir *John Annesley*; from whom the present Earl of *Anglesey* is descended, and all of that Branch.

In the succeeding Year (44 *Ed.* 3.) after the Death of this Lord *Chandos*, several of the Barons of *Gascoigne* and *Poictou* fell from their Allegiance to the Prince, without any Provocation, and embraced the *French King's* Interest; his Emissaries using all Arts to prevail on them. But Sir *Thomas Felton*, Seneschal of *Bordeaux* for the Prince, having discovered, that the Lord *William Pamiers* had covenanted to yield himself and all his Castles to the Protection of the *French King*; and had actually delivered his Castle of *Fronsack*; and that a Lawyer, his Secretary, and one of his Council, named *John Coulon*, a Native of *Bordeaux*, were accessory thereto; they were publicly brought to their Tryal, and, on full Proof, were all three condemned, by the Judgment of the Lord of *L'Esparre* and other loyal *Gascoigners*; and openly beheaded in the City of *Bordeaux*, before a great Concourse of People. At the same Time several others were apprehended, and laid in Prison in *Bordeaux*; but, at the Sollicitation

\* Barones Extincti MS. sub Manu Nic. Jehyl Arm. † Frois. c. 318.



Solicitation of their Friends, the Prince pardoned them. Yet, as *Froissart* writes, there remained a few, who, by no Arts, could be prevailed on to forfeit their Faith and Honour; particularly, "the Lord *John de Bourbon*, who held Part of his Lands of the Prince, and had rendered him Homage. Being about this Time at *Paris* on his Affairs, King *Charles* used all subtle Devices and Arguments, to induce him to renounce his Fealty to the Prince: But this Lord absolutely rejected his Proposals, telling the King, *That, if there was no Religion, a Gentleman ought to keep his Faith and Promise.* Of the like steady Temper was the Lord of *Pierre Buffierre*, a great Baron of *Limosin*, who, being then also at *Paris*, was urged by the King to fall off from the Prince, but he would by no Means be drawn there-to. But *Lewis* Lord of *Maleval* and the Lord *Raymund* of *Marvejous*, two considerable Barons of *Limosin*, did not imitate the Fidelity and Honour of the Lords before-mentioned: They not only forsook their Allegiance, but, from their Garrisons, did much Mischief to the *English*. This induced King *Edward* to send Letters signed by him, and sealed with his Seal, to some of the Barons and Knights in *Poitou*, and *Aquitain*, to be published in the Cities, Castles, and Towns in those Provinces, wherein he did not bear the Title of King of *France*, that he might give no Occasion of widening the Breach; and also, thereby lessen the Jealousies of King *Charles*, who, having many of the *Gascoigne* Lords with him, would continue to keep them, while

while he despaired of an Accommodation himself.  
The King's Letters are as follows :

“ *EDWARD* by the Grace of God, King  
 “ of *England*, Lord of *Ireland*, and of *A-*  
 “ *quitain* ; to all those who shall see or hear these  
 “ present Letters. Know you, that, considering  
 “ and regarding the Business of the Bounds, Mar-  
 “ ches, and Limitations of our Seignory of *Aqui-*  
 “ *tain*, stretching from End to End, we have  
 “ been informed of certain Troubles, Grievances,  
 “ and Molestations, done, or supposed to be done,  
 “ by our right dear Son the Prince of *Wales* in  
 “ the said Countries : Wherefore being obliged,  
 “ and desirous to withstand and remedy all Things  
 “ relating to evil Surmises, Hates, or Contentions  
 “ between us and our loyal Friends and Subjects ;  
 “ we do by these Presents announce and denounce,  
 “ certify and ratify, that of our meer good Will,  
 “ and by great Deliberation of our Council for  
 “ that Purpose called : We will (and command)  
 “ that our right dear Son, the Prince of *Wales*, for-  
 “ bear and remit all Manner of Actions done, or  
 “ to be done, and do restore again to all such,  
 “ as have been grieved or molested by him, or by  
 “ any of his Subjects or Officers in *Aquitain*, all  
 “ their Costs, Expences and Damages levied, or  
 “ to be levied in the Name of the said Exactions,  
 “ Aids, or *Fouïages*. And if any of our true Sub-  
 “ jects and Friends, as well Prelates, as other Men  
 “ of holy Church, Universities, Colleges, Bishops,  
 “ Earls, Viscounts, Barons, Knights, Commonal-  
 “ ties, and Inhabitants of Cities and good Towns,  
 “ be turned to keep and uphold, by evil Informa-  
 “ tion

“ tion and rash Advice, the Opinion of our Ad-  
 “ versary the *French King*, we pardon them that  
 “ their Trespas on Condition, that, these Letters  
 “ once seen, they return to us, or within a Month  
 “ after. And we desire all our loyal and true Friends  
 “ to continue still in the State they are now,  
 “ that, as concerning their Faith and Homage, they  
 “ incur no Reproach; the which Thing would  
 “ greatly displease us, and we should see it very  
 “ unwillingly. And if against our dear Son the  
 “ Prince, or against any of his Men, they make  
 “ any lawful Complaint, that in any Thing they  
 “ are grieved and oppressed, or have been in Time  
 “ past, we shall cause them to have Amends, so as  
 “ of Reason it may suffice, to the Intent to nour-  
 “ ish, Peace, Love, Concord, and Unity between  
 “ us and those of the Marches and Limitations a-  
 “ foresaid. And, to the End that all Men should  
 “ be satisfied of the Truth of the Premises, we  
 “ will, that every Man take and have a Copy of  
 “ these Presents, the which we have solemnly  
 “ sworn to keep and maintain upon the Body of  
 “ our Lord JESUS CHRIST, there being present  
 “ our right dear Son *John Duke of Lancaster*,  
 “ *William Earl of Salisbury*, the Earl of *Warwick*,  
 “ the Earl of *Hereford*, *Walter of Manny*, the  
 “ Lord *Peircy*, the Lord *Neville*, the Lord *Bour-*  
 “ *chier*, the Lord *Stafford*, *Richard of Pemburge*,  
 “ *Roger Beauchamp*, *Guy Brian*, the Lord *Mobun*,  
 “ the Lord *de la Warre*, *Allan Boxbull*, and *Rich-*  
 “ *ard Sterry*, Knights. Given at our Palace of  
 “ *Westminster*, in the Forty-Fourth Year of our  
 “ Reign the Fifth Day of *November*.”

Copies of these Letters were also secretly convey'd to *Paris*, to the Viscount of *Rocheport*, the Lord of *Maleval*, the Lord of *Marvejols*, and others who had revolted to the *French*. But on this King *Charles* of *France* was more solicitous to keep them to his Interests, and, in the Chamber of Peers, \* confiscated whatever the Prince or King held beyond Sea, summoning all the Vassals to come and render to him their Fealty and Homage: So that none of the Barons return'd to their Duty, and many others daily fell off, as they saw Opportunity of doing it safely. And many Countries and Towns, as well in *Guienne* and in *Picardy*, return'd to the Obedience of the *French* King. It was the constant Policy of the *French*, at that Time, to avoid coming to a general Engagement, tho' their Numbers were exceedingly superior; and, when even Fortresses were besieged, they rather chose to see them deliver'd up, than venture a Battle.

The Companions, on the *English* Side, had taken the Castle of *Bellepeche*, belonging to *Lewis* Duke of *Bourbon*, and therein the good Lady his Mother; which so incens'd him, that he left *Paris* in the Beginning of the Year 44 *E.* 3. resolving to lay Siege to it, and not to stir till he had won the Place. He came before it with a great Army, and after a little Time was re-inforc'd by the Lord *Lewis* of *Sancerre*, Marshal of *France*, with a great Power: In order to reduce the Place, he built a great Bastion encompassed with a Ditch, and defended with Towers, both for the Ease of his Men (being in *February*) and for their Safety in

T

\* *Du Chesne*, p. 705. and *Mexeray*, &c.



in Case of a sudden Appearance of an Enemy. The Duke had also with him four great Engines, that cast huge Stones and Timber against the Castle, which so affrighted the Duke's Mother, that she sent to her Son, desiring him to forbear using those Engines, being a great Terror to her, and the Women her Attendants. But the Duke of *Bourbon* returned Answer: That she was put on this, by his and her Enemies; and to obey her at this Time was more for the Advantage of the *English*, than of her. The Companions, finding themselves streightened, acquainted Sir *John Devereux*, Seneschal of *Limosin*, with their Condition; and that Lord *Chandos* had given them a Promise, if they took any Fortrefs in *France*, and were besieged therein, they should have Relief on Demand. Sir *John Devereux* remembered the Promise made to them, and went to the Prince at *Angoulesme*, who ordered him the Earl of *Cambridge*, the Earl of *Pembroke*, the Lord *John Montagu*, the Lord *Thomas Felton*, Sir *Thomas Peirce*, Sir *Robert Knowles*, and others, to relieve them; and sent his Summons to all his Subjects on the Frontiers, to hasten to the general Rendezvous at *Limoges*. The Earl of *Cambridge*, the Prince's Brother, was Commander in chief, and for the Space of fifteen Days encamp'd opposite to the *French*; who lay within their Fortifications, environ'd with a deep Ditch, as defensible as a strong Town, so that there was no forcing of them, but the *English* had free Communication with the Castle. The Marshal *Sancerre* and the Duke of *Bourbon* dispatch'd Messengers in all Haste to the *French King*, and to the Knights of his Court, and

caused Writings to be set on Posts and Gates, as follows : *All you that are Knights and Esquires, and desire to pursue Honour in the Field, we certify you for a Truth, that the Earl of Cambridge and the Earl of Pembroke are come with an Army before Bellepeche, with Design to raise the Siege laid there by the Duke of Bourbon and our Men ; who have endured much Trouble for a long While, till at last we have brought them to that Streight, that of Necessity they must either yield up the Place, or venture all upon a Battle with us. You are therefore desired to come hither with all Speed, for here you shall be sure to find noble Deeds of Arms ; and you may be certain of this, that the English do not lie in any good Order, and besides are in such a Place, where they may easily be incommoded by us. Given from the Camp before Bellepeche, &c.*

On these Invitations a great Re-inforcement came to them, with most of the valiant Knights in France ; yet, with all their Power, they refus'd Battle, and, being so strongly intrench'd, there was no Possibility of forcing them to an Engagement. Thereupon it was resolv'd in Council to send the Herald Chandos to the Duke of Bourbon, who being admitted to him in his Tent, he openly made this Declaration : *My Lords and Masters send you Word by me, that, since you will not afford them Battle, they have resolv'd the third Day from hence at Nine o'Clock in the Morning, or else at Noon in the next Day, to set the Lady of Bourbon on Horseback, and so to convey her away before your Faces, and in Sight of you, my Lord of Bourbon, who are her Son. And then, Sir, they bid you rescue her, if*

T 2

you

*you can.* To which the Duke replied: *To see the Lady my Mother carried away will be to me no great Pleasure ; but, for all that, we hope to recover her again, when we may, &c.* With which Answer the Herald returned.

On <sup>2</sup> the Day appointed early in the Morning, they sounded their Trumpets, and, having arm'd themselves, drew out in Order of Battle ready to fight the *French*. At Nine o'Clock their Instrument sounded a March, at which Time the Companions came forth out of the Castle of *Bellepeche*, with all their Goods, and whatever was valuable therein ; and the Lady of *Bourbon* with them mounted on a rich Palfry, attended by her Ladies and Servants : Sir *John Devereux* and the Lord *Eustace d'Ambreticourt* being appointed to wait on her. The Castle being also demolish'd, about Noon, the *English* march'd from before it, in Sight of the Duke of *Bourbon* and the *French* Army, without the least Molestation. The Companions took the Lady *Bourbon* with them to *Roche Vauclaire*, in *Limosin*, assign'd to them for their Quarters, where she remained a Prisoner : But the Prince of *Wales* was not pleas'd with her Confinement, and said, *He made not War against Women, and that, if any one had taken her but the Companions, he would have given Order for her speedy Deliverance ;* which being told to the Companions, they said, whatever Bargain should be made to set her at Liberty, they would have, in Consideration thereof, Sir *Simon Burley*, then Prisoner with the *French*, knowing the Prince had great Esteem for him ; and in a short Time the

<sup>2</sup> *Froissart*, c. 274.

was accordingly set at Liberty in Exchange for Sir *Simon Burley*. This Expedition of relieving *Bellepeche* was finish'd in *March 44 E. 3.* and both the *English* and *French* retir'd into Quarters.

The *French*, during the Winter, had made Preparations for forming two great Armies under the Conduct of the Duke of *Anjou* and the Duke of *Berry*, Brothers of the *French* King, in order to invade the Dominions of the Prince of *Wales*, who had early Notice of it; and was as vigilant to form two Armies to encounter them. On a Representation to his Royal Father, he sent his Son *John* of *Gaunt*, Duke of *Lancaster*, with four Hundred Men of Arms and four Thousand Archers, to his Assistance. And another Army into *Picardy*, under the Command of Sir *Robert Knowles*, <sup>a</sup> who was constituted the King's Lieutenant in those Parts; which was a Testimony that he approved the Choice of his Son, who had made him one of his Generals. The Duke of *Lancaster* was impower'd by the King's Commission, to receive into Favour such of his Cities, Castles, Towns, and Inhabitants, as well in *Aquitain* and other Parts of *France*, as should return to his Obedience, with the Consent of his Brother the Prince of *Wales*, if present; and in his Absence, as the King's Lieutenant, to do what the King himself could do, if personally there. His Commission bears Date <sup>b</sup>, *Julii 44 E. 3.* and the Duke shortly after arrived at *Bordeaux* <sup>c</sup>, and came to the Prince his Brother at *Cognac*. The King having reserv'd to himself the Sovereignty and Resort in  
T 3 those

<sup>a</sup> Rot. Franc. 44 E. 3. m. 14.  
<sup>c</sup> Froissart, c. 279.

<sup>b</sup> Rot. Vasc. 44 Ed. 3. m. 5.



those Territories, he had that Opinion of the Justice and good Government of his Son the Prince of *Wales*, that, this Year, he sent him <sup>a</sup> a blank Commiſſion, to insert the Names of such as he should think fit to appoint for Judges, or Delegates, to hear all Causes, as well criminal as civil, on Appeals from his (the Prince's) Court.

Sir *Robert Knowles* with twelve Thousand Men <sup>e</sup> landed at *Calais*, about *Midsummer*, and resting there seven Days, to refresh his Men, march'd out of the Town (as *Mezeray* reports) with thirty Thousand Men. Passing thro' the <sup>f</sup> Country of *Guisnes*, and *Fauconbridge*, and thence into *Artois* and *Vermendois*, wasting the Country all the Way, he came to the City of *Noyen*, and into *Champaigne*; and, turning to *Brye*, came before *Paris* <sup>g</sup>, on the Twenty-fourth of *September*, before which City he staid a Day and two Nights; the *French* King being at that Time there, with a considerable Army, and many of his Nobles with him, and, from his Palace of *St. Paul*, might discern the Destruction of his Country by the great Fires, the *English* burning all before them, to provoke the *French* to a Battle. But, besides his own Caution, the Lord *Cliffon*, who had his Ear most, said, " Sir, be  
 " not easily tempted to send forth your People  
 " against those Madmen yonder. The best Way  
 " to beat them is to deny them Battle, they will  
 " then fall away of themselves. You may let  
 " them go on thus for a While; for they cannot  
 " take your Inheritance from you, nor drive you  
 " out of your Kingdom by their Smoke." This

Army,

<sup>a</sup> Rot. Vasc. 44 E. 3. & *Asmole*, p. 675. <sup>e</sup> *Hollingshed*, p. 405.  
<sup>f</sup> *Freiff*. c. 278, 279. <sup>g</sup> *Hollingshed*, p. 405.

Army, under Sir *Robert Knowles*, prosper'd <sup>h</sup> whilst it submitted to him ; but towards Winter, some of the Lords, who were under him, growing disobedient and, slighting his Commands, separating from him, became a Prey to the *French*, whilst his Policy and Prudence preserv'd those safe, who stuck to him in his March into *Bretagne*.

I have before mentioned, that the Dukes of *Anjou* and *Berry* were each to have the Command of a great Army. The Duke of *Anjou* invaded the Prince's Territories by the Way of *Aginois*, and the Duke of *Berry* entered *Limosin* ; and, for a Time, they both proceeded without Opposition (the Duke of *Lancaster* being not arrived) in conquering of Towns, and burning and ravaging the Country. The Prince of *Wales* was quickly informed of the Progress of these two great Armies, that invaded his Principality on both Sides ; and how they gave out, they would besiege him jointly, in his City of *Angoulesme*. On which, he sent his Letters of Summons to all his loyal Friends and Subjects in *Poitou*, *Sanctogne*, *Rochelais*, *Rouvergne*, *Quercy*, *Bigorre*, and *Aginois*, desiring and commanding them to come to him in all Haste, with Horse and Armour, and their several Retinues, and meet him at the general Rendezvous at *Cognac* ; saying, *His Enemies should never find him immured up, either in Town or Castle ; but that he would meet them in the plain Field, and, by the Grace of GOD, give them Battle*. And presently after, taking Leave of his Lady the Princess, he took with him his youngest Son, *Richard* of *Bordeaux* ; and set up

T 4

his

<sup>h</sup> *Walsingham* sub. An. 44. Ed. 3.

his Standard of War at *Cognac*, to which his Men daily resorted from all Parts.

In the mean Time, the Duke of *Anjou* marched on without Controul, 'till he came to *La Linde*, standing on the River *Dordone*, about a League from *Bergerac*. The Town was under the Command of Sir *Thomas Battefoile*, a Knight of *Gascoigne*, with a sufficient Garrison to defend it, and well furnished with all Things necessary. The Duke of *Anjou*, laying Siege to it, gave out, *That he would never stir from the Place, till he had it at his Devotion*; but offered to receive those within it under his Protection, if they would submit. The Townsmen were desirous of being under the *French* Government, having been wrought on by the Duke's Emissaries; who at last prevailed also on the Governor Sir *Thomas Battefoile*, who agreed, in Consideration of a present Sum of Money, and an annual Pension, to deliver the Town, and ever after to embrace the *French* Interest. This Agreement was, by some of the Loyalists to the Prince of *Wales*, secretly discovered to the Earl of *Cambridge*, then at *Bergerac*, the Night before the Place was to be given up. On this Treachery, the Earl of *Cambridge*, the Lord *Thomas Felton*, and Sir *John Greilly*, Capital of *Busche*, said, *They would, however, be present at the Delivery of the Town, by the Grace of God*: And, before it was light, set out from *Bergerac*, and, by Break of Day, reached *La Linde*. On their Command, a Gate was opened to them, thro' which they marched with their Forces, till they came to the Gate which the *French* were to enter; at which very Instant

it was opening for them, and Sir *Thomas Battefoile* was there to receive them. Thereupon, Sir *John Greilly*, alighting from his Horse, came up to him with his Sword in his Hand, and gave him so sure a Blow that he fell dead; saying, *Thou perfidious Traytor, Battefoile, thou shalt first die by my Hand, and never more commit Treason against thy good Lord and Master.* The French, finding their Plot discovered, hastily withdrew from the Gates, and fled to their Army. It was not judged proper to pursue them, the Lords thinking it more prudent to secure the Town, which having done, they were inclined to put all the Inhabitants to the Sword; but, on alledging they were over-awed, and compelled by Sir *Thomas Battefoile*, they were at last pardoned. The Lord *Felton* and the Capital staid in the Town, 'till the Duke of *Anjou*, hearing of the Approach of the Prince of *Wales* with his Army, thought it prudent to retire to *Cabors*, where he dispersed his Men about the Country in Garrisons; and the Earl of *Armagnac* and the disaffected Lords returned into their own Lands, not knowing which Way the Prince would move with his Forces. In a Council called by the Duke of *Anjou*, wherein Sir *Bertram Clequin* was present (who was afterwards stiled *the Restorer of France*) it was warmly debated, whether they should not give Battle to the Prince; some alledging, *He was so impaired in his Health, that he was now but the Shadow of himself:* The greater Part affirmed, *That, even the Presence of such a General, in the Field, was of great Importance, and carried Courage if not Fortune*



tune along with it. That either he was dangerously ill or not; if not, he was now as formidable as ever; and, if really so, he would waste away of himself; they need not by their Rashness prepare Heaps of their own Men for him to die upon.

Thereupon, Sir Bertram of Clequin went to the City of *Limoges*, before which the Duke of *Berry*, the Duke of *Bourbon*, and the Lords of *France* lay with that Army, which had entered *Limosin*, as mentioned before. The City had been made very strong by the Prince, who having a Confidence in the Bishop (whom he had greatly obliged) left but few *English* in Garrison. But that Prelate entered into a Treaty with the Duke of *Anjou*, and by his Means the Inhabitants were induced to declare for the *French*; and, the Duke of *Berry* taking Possession of the Place, they swore Homage and Fealty to him, in the *French* King's Name. And after three Days Stay to refresh his Men, and settle a Garrison in it, he broke up with his Army as the Duke of *Anjou* had done, giving Leave to all his chief Commanders, to go to their respective Places to defend them.

When the Prince heard how his City of *Limoges* had revolted from him, and that the Bishop, who had been Godfather to his eldest Son *Edward*, and in whom he had reposed much Confidence, was chiefly concerned in the Treason, he was greatly incensed at his Falshood; and, never after, so entirely respected Men of the Clergy, as he did before. He first sent<sup>i</sup> his Heralds to the Inhabitants of *Limoges*, commanding them to yield  
the

<sup>i</sup> *Walsingham's Hist.* p. 180. n. 30. 40.

the Bishop to him, and return to their Duty, acknowledging their Fault before it was too late; But they, finding themselves encompassed with strong Fortifications, abundantly supplied with Provisions, and backed with a strong Garrison, slighted the Prince's Summons. However, the Prince sent once more to them, denouncing this Judgment, *That, if they did not presently submit to him, and turn out the French Garrison, and deliver to him the Traytors, he would surely come against them in Person, raze their City to the Ground, and put to the Sword their Men, Women, and Children, even all whom he should find therein.* But, encouraged by the Commanders of the *French* Garrison, they did not only refuse to take this Message into Consideration, but affronted his Messengers, and fortified their City yet more strongly against him. This being brought to the Prince, he was so enraged at it, that he <sup>k</sup> swore by the Soul of his Father, that he would recover that City again, and take Vengeance on those insolent Rebels, and make all the Traytors pay dearly for their Falshood. And thereupon he went from *Cognac* hastily, with twelve Thousand Spears and Esquires, one Thousand Archers on Horseback, and one Thousand Archers on Foot; with his Brethren, the Duke of *Lancaster* and the Earl of *Cambridge*, with many Lords and Knights and their Retinues.

The chief Commanders, under them, were the Lord *John Hastings*, Earl of *Pembroke*, the Lord *Thomas Peirce*, the Lord *Thomas Ross* of *Hamlake*, the Lord *William Beauchamp*, the Lord  
*Michael*

<sup>k</sup> *Froissart*, l. 280. &c.

*Michael De la Pole*, the Lord *Baldwin Frevile*, the Lord *John Devereux*, the Lord *Hugh Meinill*, Sir *Simon Burley*, Sir *Geffry Argentine*, Sir *Stephen Cossington*, Sir *Richard Pontchardon*, and Sir *Percival Collins*, all *English*; also, Sir *Guischard Dangle*, Sir *Lewis of Harcourt*, the Lord of *Pons*, the Lord of *Partenay*, the Lord of *Pinant*, the Lord of *Taniboton*, the Lord of *Monferrand*, the Lord of *Chaumont*, the Lord of *Landuras*, Sir *Emery of Chartres*, the Lord of *Pamiers*, the Lord of *Mucidan*, the Lord of *l'Esparre*, the Soldiche de *l'Estarrac*, the Lord of *Garonne*, all *Poitevins* and *Gascoigners*. When the Prince began to march, his Limbs were so sore, he could not endure to ride on Horseback, but was carried in an open Chariot, taking the direct Way to *Limoges*. Being come before the Place, he swore, he would never rise thence, till he had it at his Mercy. The Bishop and the chief Burgeesses, who had yielded the Town to the *French*, began to repent of their Treason; but they were now no longer Masters of the Town, the *French* Garrison held them under.

Sir *John Villemur*, Sir *Hugh de la Roche*, and *Roger Beaufort*, who were the chief Commanders of the City, and Men of exalted Courage and Skill in Arms, did all they could to hearten their Men, and the Inhabitants, who most of all dreaded the Anger of the incensed Prince, who knew well the Strength of the City. He concluded therefore, it would be too hazardous to storm the Place, and so resolved to undermine the Walls; and, having brought with him a select Number of choice Pioneers, they immediately

ately fell to Work with great Briskness and Skill.

To divert the Prince from this Enterprize, Sir *Bernard of Clequin*, with two Hundred Spears, made great Devastation in his Dominions ; but was so fearful of being encountered by the *English*, that, tho' he daily made an Inroad into the Country, he secured himself at Night, in some Fortrefs belonging to those *Gascoigners* who had revolted from the Prince. However, this was so far from having the desired Effect, that, tho' the Prince received daily Complaints of his Proceedings, he only more eagerly pressed the Siege.

The *French* within soon perceived the Undermining their Works, and used all Endeavours, by Countermines, to disappoint them ; but the *English*, by several false Mines and their Knowledge in the Mathematicks, as well as by continual Labour Day and Night, had, in about a Month's Time, ran their Ways so variously, as they came to the Place designed. And then, amusing their Enemies by flinging out Earth on one Side the Town, when they had advanced their Mine to the other, without suffering any considerable Damage from the Counterminers, brought their Work to such Perfection, as, on a few Hours Warning, to cause a considerable Part of the Wall to fall into the Ditch, to the great Satisfaction of the Prince, who gave Orders, the next Morning early, for the Breach to be entered, and made the necessary Dispositions in his Army ; it being his Intention, to put all to the Sword without Distinction, to deter others from the like Perfidy

†

and



and Ingratitude. Accordingly, as soon as the Fire had burned asunder the Props under the Wall, it fell near Thirty Foot in Length into the Ditch, and filled it up : The *English*, thereupon, immediately gave a Shout, and entered the Breach, beating down the Gates and Barriers with their Axes ; little or no Resistance being made by the Enemy, terrified at the Approach of their Ruin, so unexpectedly come upon them. The Prince rode in at the Gates in his Chariot, surrounded with his Guard of Partizans and Archers on Foot, and accompanied with the Duke of *Lancaster*, the Earls of *Cambridge* and *Pembroke*, Sir *Guischard Dangle*, and several other Noblemen ; then followed a Party of the Infantry, to execute the Prince's Vengeance on the Inhabitants, for their Breach of Faith and Treason. The Gates of the City were now guarded by three Troops of Men of Arms and Archers ; a like Number, standing at the Breach, whilst a third Part of the Army remained in the Camp, made it impossible for any Soul to escape. The Bishop, the Author of all this Mischief, was taken at his Palace, the Prince, on his Entrance, having sent a Troop of *English* appointed for that Purpose ; and, being immediately brought before the Prince, he beheld him with the utmost Indignation ; and, notwithstanding all he could plead for Mercy, the Prince made him no other Answer, but that he should lose his Head.

The three chief Commanders of the Garrison, when they found the Enemy gave no Quarters, exhorted each other to sell their Lives, as dearly as they could ; and, drawing together about Fourscore  
chosen

chosen Men, placed their Backs against an old Wall, with their Banners display'd. They were immediately attack'd by the Duke of *Lancaster* and the Earls of *Cambridge* and *Pembroke*, who all three, alighting from their Horses, engaged in single Combat with the three *French* Commanders; which was maintained on both Sides with so much Gallantry and Courage, as drew the Prince to stop his Chariot to behold them. He was such an Admirer of martial Atchievements, and was so taken with their Skill and Courage, that he commanded no more Slaughter should be made in the City; and that those, then engaged, should not suffer beyond the Law of Arms. On which the triple Combat immediately ceased, and the *French* Officers paid their Reverence to the Prince of *Wales*, and, delivering their Swords, said with one Consent to their Antagonists: "*Lords, we are yours, you have conquer'd us: Do unto us according to the Law of Arms.*" Sirs, said the Duke of *Lancaster*, *we receive you as our Prisoners.* But tho' these sav'd their Lives, by the Gallantry of the three Princes in encountering them; yet their Men were all slain, not being able to hold out against such Numbers of *English*, as attack'd them. Before the Prince put a Stop to the Slaughter, there were slain and beheaded (besides the Soldiers) more than <sup>1</sup> four Thousand Men, Women, and Children, as the *French* Writers testify. But the City was absolutely given up to be plunder'd, and was burnt and level'd with the Ground. The Bishop of *Limoges* had the Fortune to have many Friends among the *English*, particularly

<sup>1</sup> *Mexeray*, Part. 2. Tom. 3. p. 87.

larly the Duke of *Lancaster* ; who, artfully pretending to be his Enemy, easily obtain'd of the Prince his Brother, to have him deliver'd into his Hands, to make a publick Example of him. Yet he immediately sent secretly to *Urbanus V.* who was just return'd from *Italy* to *Avignon*, informing him of the Bishop's Danger, and that a Letter from his Holiness on his Behalf, directed to himself, might be beneficial to him. The Pope took the Hint, and immediately (without taking Notice of any Application to him) wrote to the Duke, desiring him, in Reverence of the Apostolick See, to pardon the said Bishop, and to send him to his Holiness at *Avignon*. The Duke of *Lancaster* shew'd the Letter to the Prince his Brother, who said he ought to grant the Pope's Request, but wish'd the Duke had not deferr'd his Punishment so long. However, on the Duke of *Lancaster's* Persuasion, the Bishop was sent to *Avignon*.

After this Destruction of *Limoges* <sup>m</sup>, the Prince and his Brethren return'd with their Spoil and Prisoners to *Cognac*, where the Princess met him ; and there he gave Leave to the greater Part of his Forces to go to their several Quarters, it being then late in the Year ; and his Sicknes increas'd more and more on him, which much discouraged his Brethren and Friends : And this proved the last warlike Exploit, which this ever renowned Prince performed.

About this Time, he was pleased to express his Love to his Brother the Duke of *Lancaster*, by granting

granting <sup>a</sup> him the Castle, Town, and Chastellany of *La Roche sur Yon*: The Instrument bears Date the Eighth of *October*, this Year; wherein he is stiled, *Edward*, eldest Son of the King of *France* and of *England*, Prince of *Aquitain* and of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, Earl of *Chester*, Lord of *Biscay*, and of the Castle of *Ordiales*. Appendant is his <sup>o</sup> Seal of green Wax, on which, he is represented, in his Robes, sitting on a Throne, with a Circle on his Head, and a Sceptre in his right Hand, as Prince of *Aquitain*, between two Ostrich Feathers and Scroles, whereon are the Words *I C H D I E N*; over which, are the Letters *E. P. viz. Edwardus Princeps*: On the Reverse, he is figured on Horseback, his Surcoat, Shield, and the Caparisons of his Horse, charged with the Arms of *France* and *England*, quarterly, a Label of three Points: And, for his Crest, a Lion Passant Guardant, crowned and gorged, with a like Label. The Inscription round the Seal is in *Saxon* Characters, after the Manner of that Age, *viz. S. EDVARDI PRIMOGENITI REGIS ANGL. PRINCIPIS AQUITANIÆ ET WALLIÆ, DUCIS CORNUBIÆ, ET COMITIS CESTRIÆ.*

In the Beginning of the Year 1371, 45 *Ed.* 3. the Lord *Edward*, eldest Son of the Prince of *Wales*, died, in the Seventh Year of his Age, at *Bordeaux*, to the extreme Regret of the Prince and Princess, and the whole Court.<sup>p</sup> Also, the

U

Prince

<sup>a</sup> *Sanford's Genealogical History*, p. 85. ex Instrum. in Camera Ducatus *Lancastr.*      <sup>o</sup> Vide illius Formam, *Sandford*, p. 125.  
<sup>p</sup> *Froissart*, c. 287.



Prince himself was so dangerously ill, that his Physicians, who knew the Nature of his Distemper, advised him to go into *England*, to try if his native Air would recover his Health, which was now so much impaired, that he found it was not possible for him to take the Field; and, therefore, approved of their Council. Having provided for his Return into *England*, he appointed his Brother the Earl of *Cambridge*, and, his Brother in Law the Earl of *Pembroke*, with their Retinues, to be his Convoy. While the Fleet was rigging out in the Haven of *Bordeaux*, he sent forth his special Summons to all the loyal Barons and Knights of *Gascoigne* and *Poitou*, and other Parts of his Dominions, to come to him before his Departure. On the Day appointed, they presented themselves before him in his Chamber; at which Time he told them,

“ How he had now been, for almost ten  
 “ Years Space, a good and gracious Lord unto  
 “ them, as much as in him lay; for he had  
 “ kept them in Peace, and had maintained them  
 “ in great Wealth, Prosperity, and Honour, till  
 “ the common Enemy of Mankind had scattered  
 “ new Occasions of War among them; wherein  
 “ notwithstanding, he had defended them with  
 “ a strong Hand. But that now, for the Recovery of his Health, which he very much wanted, he had designed for *England*; tho’ he  
 “ should leave behind him his dearest Brother  
 “ the Duke of *Lancaster*, to supply his Place.  
 “ Him, therefore, now he desired, that they  
 “ would all believe, honour, and obey, even  
 “ as hitherto they had done unto his own Person;  
 “ and

“ and he also required them, to be heartily  
 “ assistant to him in all his Undertakings,  
 “ by their Counsel, and otherwise; nothing  
 “ doubting, but that they should find him a  
 “ very good and gracious Lord, upon all Occa-  
 “ sions.” The Barons of *Gascoigne* and *Guienne*,  
 of *Saintogne* and *Poictou*, were much moved  
 with this pathetick Speech of the Prince, which  
 he delivered with great Earnestness; and they  
 all promised and swore upon their Faith and  
 Honour, that there should never be found any  
 Fault or Failure in them. After which, in Pre-  
 sence of the Prince, they did Fealty and Homage  
 to the Duke of *Lancaster*, as to the Prince’s  
 Lieutenant; and kissed his Mouth, according to  
 their Custom.

This done, the Prince embark’d<sup>r</sup> at *Bordeaux*  
 in *January*, with his Princess, his Son *Richard*,  
 and the Princess’s Children by her first Husband.  
 He was convoyed by the Earls of *Cambridge*, and of  
*Pembroke*, with five Hundred Men of Arms, be-  
 sides Archers; and, with a fair Wind, arrived<sup>s</sup> at  
*Plymouth* in the same Month of *January*. After  
 two Days Stay to refresh themselves, the Navy  
 returned to *Bordeaux* with the Earl of *Cambridge*;  
 and the Earl of *Pembroke* went with the Prince,  
 who was carried in a Litter to the King, then at  
*Windsor*; who, with much Joy, received his  
 Son and Daughter, and his Grandson *Richard*.  
 Soon after the King returned to *Westminster*, and  
 the Prince of *Wales*, with his Family, went to  
 his Manor of *Berkhamstead* in *Hertfordshire*, the

U 2

Air

<sup>a</sup> *Asmole*, p. 675.  
 p. 181.

<sup>r</sup> *Froissart*, c. 287.

<sup>s</sup> *Walsingham*,

Air there being thought the most proper for him.

Not long after, 'many great Lords, whom either the Reputation, Fortune, or Liberality of the Prince had constrained to follow him, fell away, after his Departure, to the *French* King; whereby the Lords and Knights of that Country were engaged in a Kind of civil War, Castles and Fortresses being intermingled one with another; that all Things were in Confusion, and mutual Losses happened, and Reprisals were made, every Day: But the particular Occurrences I shall relate, in the Life of the Duke of *Lancaster*, as he was now concerned in them.

The Prince of *Wales*, after some Time, was in better Health, but not able to take the Field; which he the more regretted, as News came, that Towns, and almost whole Provinces, had fell off from their Allegiance; and that, after *Poitou* and *Rockelle* were taken, *Thouars* was besieged: In this last Place, the greater Part of those Barons, that held still for *England*, were retired. Sir *Bertram Clequin*, Constable of *France*, knowing, the Reducing those Lords would entirely ruin the *English* Interest, used all Devices to bring them to surrender; and at length it was agreed, there should be a mutual Respite and Truce for themselves and their Lands, till they could send to the King of *England*, to certify him of their Condition; and, if not succoured, either by him, or one of his Sons in Person, (for they were in *England*) then they to yield them-

themselves and Lands to the Obedience of the French King.

When, on this Treaty, Messengers from the *Poictevin* Lords in *Thouars* came into England, and represented to the King and Prince the low Condition of *Poictou* and *Saintoigne*, and the Agreement that was made with the French, King Edward said hastily : *He never knew a King less addicted to Arms than Charles, who had yet given him more Trouble than his Ancestors, that were Warriors. But he would cross the Seas shortly, so strong, as to be able to give Battle to the whole Power of France ; and, for his Part, he would never return into England, till he had re-conquered what he had lost, or, together with the rest, lost himself in the Endeavour.* And immediately commanded the Duke of *Lancaster* (then ready, according to former Orders, to go to *Calais* with a considerable Army) to stay till more Forces were raised, and to go with him towards *Rockelle*, in order to relieve *Thouars*. An extraordinary Summons was also sent through the whole Realm, commanding all Men to attend him, according to the Service they owed.

While these Preparations were making, the King called a Parliament to meet at *Westminster*, to settle the Affairs of the Nation before his Departure out of the Realm. The Prince of *Wales* was somewhat recovered from his Illness, and resolved to accompany the King ; when, on Consultation, they agreed, that if either one or the other should miscarry in this Expedition, *Richard* of *Bourdeaux*, the Prince's only Son living, should succeed (according to his Right) to



the Crown of *England*. For the Prince, <sup>u</sup> whose Wisdom fell no Way short of his Courage, knew how apt they are, who stand nearest unto a Throne, to step first into it ; and, to prevent any Disorder of that Kind, which might be feared from the Ambition of his Brethren (the eldest of whom had already the Title of a King) he was careful to have his Son *Richard* declared to be the next Heir to the Crown, after the Decease of his Royal Father and himself. And the Prince, thereupon, \* shewed in full Parliament, that, if he should happen to die before the King his Father, then his Son *Richard*, as next Heir, was to succeed to the Crown of *England*, after the Decease of the King his Grandfather. And the Prelates, Lords, and all the Commons of the Realm had such a Veneration for the heroick Virtues of the Prince of *Wales*, that, with one Consent, they all agreed to so reasonable a Motion ; and desired it might be enacted, with apparent Demonstrations of Joy : And first the King himself, then all his Sons, swore to uphold and maintain the Right of the young Prince *Richard*, in Case of the Prince his Father's Decease. And to this Ordinance the Prince of *Wales* caused them all to put their Hands and Seals ; but the Commons only expressed their Concurrence, by holding up their Hands. And, to set an early Mark of Sovereignty on the young Prince *Richard*, the King his Grandfather, by Commission, <sup>v</sup> bearing Date at *Sandwich*, the Thirtieth Day of *August*, in the Forty-sixth Year of his Reign,

con-

<sup>u</sup> *Churchill's Divi Britannici*, p. 245.  
<sup>v</sup> *Pat. 46. Ed. 3. p. 2. m. 25.*

\* *Froissart*, c. 305, &c.

constituted him *Custos Regni*, or Lieutenant, during his and the Prince's Absence beyond the Sea. And the King having given Directions, that publick Prayers should be made in all Churches, for his good Success in this Voyage, he, with the Prince of *Wales*, took Shipping at *Sandwich* the same Day, being a *Monday*; <sup>z</sup> and sailing towards *Rockelle*, the Winds <sup>a</sup> and Tempests kept him at Sea Nine Weeks: And, when the King saw he could not arrive in *France* by *Michaelmas*, being the Time limited for the Relief of *Thouars*, or otherwise, the Surrender thereof, he returned to *England*, and had the Wind at Will. That strange Fortune, which before was always ready to waft him over, but very difficult to convey him back, was now quite varied, and was a Hindrance to his glorious Designs. The Consequence of this improsperous Voyage was the Loss of all the Country of *Poitou*, *Sanctoine*, and about *Rockelle*.

After this the most heroick Prince of *Wales* foreseeing it was hardly possible for him to recover any tolerable Degree of Health, so as to enable him to take the Field, he surrender'd into his Father's Hands his Principality of *Aquitain*, with all his Right and Title thereto; the Surrender <sup>b</sup> bearing Date the Fifth of *October*, in the Forty-sixth Year of his Father's Reign, and the Year of our Lord 1372. From which Time the King govern'd those Countries again by Lieutenants, as he had before he gave it to the Prince his Son.

From this Time the Prince's Disease gradually increased, till it prov'd mortal to him, about four

U 4

Years

<sup>z</sup> *Claus.* 46 *Ed.* 3. m. 12. *Dors.* & *Assemble*, p. 657. <sup>a</sup> *Froiss.* c. 305, & *Walsingh.* p. 183. <sup>b</sup> *Selden's Titles of Hon.* p. 493.  
ex *Rot. Vasc.* 46 *E.* 3. m. 2.

Years after : <sup>c</sup> A Sicknefs no lefs fatal to him than to the Kingdom, which, wanting the Advantage of his excellent Conduct, fell under the Misfortunes of an ill-managed Government. The whole Face of Affairs was changed Abroad, and all Things were unprosperous at Home, the King, in his old Age, seeming to have loft all thofe Virtues, which in his younger Years gained him the Character of one of the bravest and wifeft Monarchs of the Age. The Prince knew better thefe Disorders, than how to remedy them. He was apprehenfive of the Ambition of his Brother the Duke of *Lancaster*, who now managed all Things under his Father, and, being already a King in Name, made too open Signs of affecting the Succeffion to the Crown. He therefore loft no Opportunity of ftrengthening his Son's Succeffion after his Grandfather. And a Parliament being affembled, <sup>d</sup> the Twenty-eighth of *April* preceding the Prince's Death, it was provided, that fince the King, through Age and Weaknefs, was unable to govern the Realm, twelve of the moft fage and difcreet Lords fhould take on them the Adminiftration under him ; without whofe joint Concurrence, no Affairs of Confequence were to be tranfacted, and not any of lefs Account without the Approbation of Six, or Four at leaft. The Lord *Latimer*, Lord Chamberlain, Dame *Alice Perrers* (who is faid to be the King's Miftrefs) Sir *Richard Sturry*, and fome others of leffer Name were accufed by the Commons of divers Mifdemaneors, and were all immediately condemned, and expelled the

<sup>c</sup> Compleat Hift. of Engl. V. 1. p. 232. <sup>d</sup> MS. Rot. Parl. 50 B. 3. p. 116. n. 1, &c. Item Sir Robert Cotton's Abridgment, 120. &c.

the Court. The Prince is said to favour these Proceedings, by most of our Historians, and not without good Probability, seeing shortly after his Death, which happened during the Sitting of this Parliament, all Things were restored to their former Course ; the Duke of *Lancaster*, notwithstanding the afore-mentioned Order, was instated in the Regency, and those very Persons, so lately excluded, appeared again at Court in greater Authority; and so much the more insolent, as they had weathered the Storm, which threatened to overwhelm them. Also, to gratify the Revenge of *Alice Perrers*, Sir *Peter de la Mare*, a Member of the House of Commons, and one of the principal Promoters of the late Regulations, was imprisoned at *Nottingham*.

The Prince's Disease turned at last into a Calenture<sup>e</sup>, or violent burning Fever, which soon put an End to his Life, to the infinite Regret of the whole Nation. He died on *Trinity-Sunday*, the Eighth of *June*, 50 E. 3. 1376, in the King his Father's great Chamber, in the royal Palace of *Westminster*. His last Will and Testament was finished the Day before his Death<sup>f</sup>, wherein he ordered his Body to be buried in the Cathedral Church of the *Trinity* in *Canterbury*, and gave a particular Charge to his Son *Richard* to continue the Payment of those Pensions, which he had settled on those Persons who had done him Service. His Executors were his Brother of *Spain*, the Duke of *Lancaster*, *William*, Bishop of *Winchester*, *John*, Bishop of *Bath*, *William*, Bishop of *St. Asaph*, *Robert de Walsham*, his Confessor, *Hugh de Segrave*,  
Steward

<sup>e</sup> *Froiss. c. Gallice, f. 266. b.*  
*tuar. vocat. Sudbury, f. 90. b.*

<sup>f</sup> *Lib. in Offic. principal. Can-*



Steward of his Lands, *Aleyn de Stokes*, and *John de Fordham*.

Nothing besides his great Actions can give Posterity a grander Idea of his Worth and Virtue, than the universal Lamentation which succeeded his untimely Death, and the extraordinary Desire which spread thro' all Ranks and Degrees, that the Son of so great a Father might in due Time sit in the Throne of his Ancestors. Both Houses of Parliament paid all imaginable Respects to his Memory. They <sup>e</sup> desired to attend his Funeral. And the House of Commons manifested their Affection to him, in their Concern for his Son. They earnestly <sup>h</sup> requested, that the young Prince might be brought into open Parliament; and accordingly when, on the Twenty-fifth of *June* following, he came into the House of Lords, they unanimously desired he might be made Prince of *Wales*, as his Father was.

The King himself <sup>i</sup> was no less sensibly affected at this Misfortune; and tho' he had already experienced the Loss of several of his Children, even in the Bloom of Life, particularly, the Duke of *Clarence* his second Son, yet he was now more sensibly griev'd. He above all Things desired to leave so great a Successor, and now, being deprived of that Comfort, seemed to live without the Enjoyment of Life. He surviv'd his Son, but a Year and thirteen Days, having in that Space very commendably settled every Thing relating to the Succession, and created his Grandson Prince of *Wales* and Duke of *Cornwall*, who accordingly, at the Age of

<sup>e</sup> *Barnes*, p. 883.  
*Verg.* p. 399.

<sup>h</sup> MS. Rot. Parl. p. 120. *Esc.*

<sup>i</sup> *Polyd.*

of eleven Years, succeeded him in the Throne, by the Name of King *Richard* the Second.

The Prince's Body <sup>k</sup> was first embalmed, and, after having laid in State, was carried in a stately Hearse drawn with twelve Horses to *Canterbury* (the whole Court and two Houses of Parliament attending him in Mourning through the City) where he was interred with great Funeral Pomp, on the South Side of the Cathedral of *Christ-Church*, near the Shrine of *St. Thomas Becket*. *Charles* the *French* King, though an Enemy, also distinguish'd his Merit, with the <sup>l</sup> Performance of his Obsequies in great Solemnity (according to the Custom of those Times) attended by the principal Prelates and Peers of his Realm.

Over his Grave was shortly after erected a magnificent Monument of grey Marble, with his Pourtraiture of Copper gilt lying thereon. The Ends and Sides are garnish'd with Escutcheons of Copper, enamel'd with his Arms and Devices, the one being the Arms of *France* and *England*, quarterly, with a Label of three Points; and the other the Ostrich Feathers, commonly call'd from him the *Prince's Arms*, with the Word *H O U M O N T* on the former, and *ICH DIEN* on the latter. On an iron Bar over the Tomb are placed a Helm and Crest, Coat of Mail and Gantlets; and not far distant from these, on a Pillar, is a Shield of Arms richly diaped with Gold, all which are said to be the same which he used in Battle. But this sumptuous Monument has no other Epitaph than the following Lines in old *French*, being in Substance  
little

<sup>k</sup> *Barnes*, p. 883.  
f. 266. b.

<sup>l</sup> *Froiss.* c. 314. f. 195. b. & *Gallic.*

little more, than to put the Reader in Remembrance of the common Fate of human Greatness.

On a Fillet of Brass, beginning at the Head, are these Lines :

*Cy Gist le noble Prince Monsieur Edward, aînéz  
Filz du Tresnoble Roy Edward Tiers ; jadis Prince  
d'Aquitaine & de Galles, Duc de Cornwaille, &  
Comte de Cestre, qi morust en la Feste de la Trinite,  
gestoit le VIII. Jour de Juyn, l'An. de Grace Mil  
Trois Cenz Septante sifine. L'alme de qi Dieu eit  
Mercie. Amen.*

Thus *English'd* by *John Weever*, in his Funeral Monuments, p. 204, 205.

Here lieth the noble Prince, the Lord *Edward*, eldest Son to the thrice noble King *Edward* the Third, late Prince of *Aquitain*, and of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earl of *Chester* : Who died on the Feast of the *Trinity*, which was the eighth Day of *June*, in the Year of Grace, 1376, on whose Soul God have Mercy. *Amen.*

To which these *French* Rhymes are added, beginning at the South Side of the Tomb, and running on at the Foot of the North Side.

*Tu qi passez oue bouche close  
Par la ou ce Corps repose,  
Entent ce qe te dirai,  
Si comme te dire le say  
Tiel comme tu es au tiel fu,  
Tu seras tiel comme je su.*

*De la Mort ne pensai je mye,  
Tant come javoi la Vie,  
En tre avoi grand Richesse,  
Dont je y fis grand Noblesse,*

*Terre,*

*Terre, Mesons, grand Tresor,  
Draps, Chivaux, Argent & Or.*

*Mes ore su jes pources & chetifs  
Perfond en la an Tersé tre gis  
Ma Grand Beaute est tout allee;  
Ma char est tout gastee.*

*Moule est estroit ma Meson,  
En moy na si Veritie non :*

*Et si ore me veillez,  
Je ne guide pas qe vous deissez,  
Qe je eusse onques home este,  
Si su je ore de tant changee.*

*Pour dieu priez au celestien Roy,  
Qe Mercy ait de l'alme de moy,  
Touz ceulx qi pur Moy prieront,  
Ou a Dieu m' accorderont,  
Dieu les mette en son Paradis,  
Ou nul ne poet estre chetiffs.*

Thou, who silent passest by  
Where this Corpse interr'd doth lie,  
Hear what to thee I now shall show,  
Words that from Experience flow:  
As thou art, once the World saw me;  
As I am, so thou once shalt be.

I little could my Death divine,  
When Life's bright Lamp did sweetly shine;  
Vast Wealth did o'er my Coffers flow,  
Which I as freely did bestow;  
Great Store of Mansions I did hold,  
Land, Wardrobes, Horses, Silver, Gold.

But now I am of all bereft,  
And deep in Ground alone am left;

†

My



My once admir'd Beauty's gone,  
My Flesh is wasted to the Bone.

A narrow House doth me contain,  
All that I speak is true and plain ;  
And, if you should behold me here,  
You'd hardly think (I justly fear)  
That e'er the World to me did bow,  
I am so chang'd and alter'd now.

For God's Sake, pray to Heaven's high King  
To shade my Soul with Mercy's Wing ;  
All those, that try on bended Knee  
To reconcile my God and me,  
God place them in his Paradise,  
Where neither Death can be, nor Vice.

After what has been said, it is almost needless to enter into a particular Description of his Virtues ; he was a Prince, whom his very Enemies admired, and is allowed, by the common Suffrages of all our Historians, to have been as free from Vice, as endued with all excellent Virtues. Take him as a Man, he enjoyed, in a very eminent Degree, all those Qualifications that beautify a private Life ; and he was so entirely beloved by those whom he honoured with his Friendship, that the Lord *John Greilly* Capital of *Busche*,<sup>m</sup> at this Time a Prisoner in *France*, bemoaned his Loss in so singular a Manner, as his own Death, which happened soon after, was imputed to his Excess of Grief. Take him as a Prince, he was adorned with all those shining Qualities, that cast a Lustre on a publick Station : His Temper was exactly calculated to the Disposition of that Age,  
which

<sup>m</sup> *Barnes*, p. 884.

which exceedingly delighted in martial Performances: And tho' he was bred a Soldier, and commanded Armies, when others began to learn the Art of War, whereby the Minds of some Men are elated with Conquest; yet, perhaps, never any exceeded him in the Exercise of those Virtues of Moderation, Clemency, and Generosity. And he is not more celebrated for Courage and military Experience, than for Wisdom, Justice, and Liberality: But that, which was the Crown of all his Virtues, was his remarkable Piety; from which, he manifestly derived his Courage and Success; ever ascribing to Omnipotence the Glory of all his Actions: And our Historians have mentioned his Decease on *Trinity Sunday*, as on a Day which he constantly observed, with most singular Devotion. Before the Battle of *Poitiers*, he declared, that his whole Confidence was in the divine Assistance; and, after that great Victory, behaved himself in all Particulars, like a truly *Christian* Conqueror. And, when he returned to *England* in Triumph with the King of *France*, the Pomp of the Day consisted chiefly in extraordinary Processions and Acts of Devotion. His Behaviour, at the Battle of *Najara*, was no less remarkable: The King of *Castile* being restored to his Dominions by that signal Victory, he, transported with his Success, flung himself upon his Knees to thank him; but the generous Prince told him, it was not he who could lay any Claim to his Gratitude; but desired, they might go to the Altar together, and jointly return their Thanks, to whom only it was due.

†

*Walsingham,*

*Walsingham*<sup>n</sup> (an old Historian of Credit) writes of him, *That the good Fortune of England, as if it had been inherent in his Person, flourished in his Health, languish'd in his Sickness, and expir'd in his Death; with whom died all the Hope of Englishmen; during whose Life, they fear'd no Invasion of the Enemy, nor Encounter in Battle: For he assail'd no Nation, but he overcame, and besieged no City that he did not take.* So that whatever the Reader can conceive, of a devout, brave, and generous Person, may with Justice be ascribed to this Prince of *Wales*.

While he was in Minority, there were several Matches designed for him; as first, being but a Year old<sup>o</sup>, a Commission was given to Sir *John Darcy* and Sir *William Trussel*, Knts. to treat and agree with *Philip*, King of *France*, or his Deputies, upon Espousals and Matrimony between this young Prince and King *Philip's* Daughter; but, the Quarrel breaking out afterwards with that King, there was no further Progress made in that Affair.

The next Proposal was for *Margaret*, one of the Daughters of *John* Duke of *Brabant* and *Lorraine*, to which Purpose a<sup>p</sup> Commission was made out to *Henry* Bishop of *Lincoln* and *William de Bobun*, Earl of *Northampton*, to treat with the said Duke, or his Deputies, about his Marriage; and for which, in Regard they were both within the third Degree of Consanguinity, the Pope's Dispensation was several Times endeavour'd to be obtained by<sup>a</sup> Letters sent from the King; but he

<sup>n</sup> 190. n. 15. & Ypodigm *Neustr.* p. 530. n. 47. <sup>o</sup> 15 July, Pat. 5. E. 3. P. 2. m. 28. <sup>p</sup> 12 May, Rot. *Alman.* 12. E. 3. p. 1. m. 17. <sup>a</sup> Rot. *Rom.* 14 E. 3. m. 2. & 18 E. 3. m. 2. & 19 E. 3. m. 3, & 4.

he could not be induced to do any Thing therein.

Another Match was proposed with a Daughter of the King of *Portugal*; and thereupon the King commissioned Mr. *Andrew Offord*, *Richard de Sobam*, and *Philip de Barton*, to treat of a Marriage not only between the Prince, but any other of his Sons, and any one of the Daughters of the said King: That also taking no Effect, there was another Commission issued to *Robert de Stratton*, Canon of *Chichester*, and *Richard de Sobam*, to treat with the said King, concerning a Marriage between the Prince and his Daughter *Leonora*.

But none of these, which were thought of for him by others, taking Effect; he at length in 35 E. 3. married with a Lady of his own Choice (as I have already mentioned) by whom he had only two Sons, *Edward*, who died at the Age of seven Years, and *Richard* who was afterwards King of *England*, the second of that Name.

He had also, before Marriage, two natural Sons, *John Sounder*, and *Sir Roger de Clarendon*; to the latter of these, he gave by his Will a Silk-Bed, with all thereunto belonging. This *Sir Roger* was after made one of the Knights of the Chamber, to King *Richard* the Second, who, in the thirteenth Year of his Reign, gave to him for Life one Hundred Pounds, *per Annum*, out of the Issues of his Subsidies, in the Counties of *Bristol*, *Gloucester*, *Somerſet*, *Dorſet*, and *Cornwall*. But An. 3. H. 4. he was beheaded for reporting, that King *Richard* was alive. He bore for his Arms, Or on a Bend

X

Sable

<sup>8</sup> Nov. Pat. 19. E. 3. Part 3. m. 11.      <sup>5</sup> 6 July, Pat. 21.  
E. 3. Part 2. m. 13.      <sup>1</sup> Baker's Chron. p. 143.      <sup>u</sup> Cauf. 14.  
R. 2. m. 13.      <sup>\*</sup> Compleat Hist. of Engl. v. i. p. 234.  
*Sandford's* Geneal. Hist. first Edit. p. 189.



*Sable three Ostrich Feathers Argent, the Quills transfixed thro' as many Scroles of the first.* And is said to be Ancestor to the Family of the *Smith's* in the County of *Essex*.

The Princess of *Wales* surviv'd the Prince about ten Years, and shew'd a sincere Sorrow at his Death, and a constant Regard to his Memory, whereby she was greatly revered by the whole Nation. It was soon after the Prince's Decease, that the Duke of *Lancaster* having quarrel'd with *Courtney*, Bishop of *London*, and the Citizens taking the Bishop's Part, the Duke was in such Danger of his Life, that, on their Coming to the *Savoy* where he resided, he leap'd so hastily from the Table <sup>z</sup>, that he broke both his Shins against the Form, and, with Sir *Henry Peirce*, immediately passed over by Boat to *Kennington*, near *Lambeth*, where the Princess of *Wales* was with her Son the Prince. The Duke, who knew the Esteem the City had for her, desired her to mediate a Reconciliation between him and the Citizens, who were so incens'd at his Proceedings, that they hung up his Arms revers'd in Sign of Treason, in all the principal Streets; and, had they found him in his House at the *Savoy*, had certainly destroyed him. The Princess, thereupon, sent three of her Knights, Sir *Aubrey de Vere*, Sir *Simon Burley*, and Sir *Lewis Clifford*, to persuade the Citizens to make their Peace with the Duke. They return'd Answer, *That, for her Honour, they would do whatever she commanded*; but enjoined the Messengers to require the Duke to suffer the Bishop of *Winchester* and Sir *Peter de la Mare*, to have their lawful Trial according to the Custom of *England*. And some of the principal being

<sup>z</sup> Hist. of Eng. in the Life of Ed. 3. p. 233.

being sent to the old King, to excuse their Commotion, he told them : *It was never in his Thoughts to deprive them of their Liberties, but desired rather to enlarge them.* With which they were pacified.

Also, in the eighth Year of King *Richard* the Second, the Princess of *Wales* was so prudent, that she made up another Difference between the Duke of *Lancaster*, and the King's Favourites. The latter had so incens'd the King against the Duke, that he fled to *Pontefract* Castle, and there strongly fortified himself against his Adversaries, drawing in all his Friends to his Assistance. The Princess of *Wales* knew the Duke was not very well beloved by the People, but was also appriz'd that the King's Favourites were more odious ; so that, if the King persisted in his Anger against the Duke, a civil War might ensue, she therefore in her own Person undertook a Mediation between them. And, ~~that~~ she was very corpulent and unfit for Travel, she made many Journeys from the one to the other, and in the End wrought a perfect Reconciliation between them, *to the great Satisfaction of the Nation, as well as her own eternal Honour* ; as my Author has observ'd <sup>b</sup>.

Not long after, *John Holland* Earl of *Huntington*, her second Son by her first Husband, attending on King *Richard* the Second, in his Expedition towards *Scotland*, and relying on the Favour of the King, by Reason of his near Alliance in Blood, he on some Words, which happen'd between him and *Ralph*, eldest Son to the Earl of *Stafford* (occasioned by a Quarrel between their Servants) kill'd him with a Dagger near *York*, and thereupon fled

X 2

to

<sup>a</sup> Hist. of Eng. in the Life of *Ed.* 3. p. 234.  
vol. 1. p. 253.

<sup>b</sup> Hist. of Eng.

to a Sanctuary at *Beverley* <sup>c</sup>. And the King being so highly incens'd at the Foulness of the Murther, that he vowed he should suffer for the Fact according to Law, the Princess of *Wales* was mov'd with such Tenderness for her Son <sup>a</sup>; that she sent earnestly to the King, imploring his Favour (being Mother to them both;) and on Return of the Messenger to *Wallingford*, where she lay, finding her Request did not avail, she fell into such Grief, that she died within five Days. Whereupon her Body being wrap'd in Cere-cloth, and put in Lead, was kept till the King's Return from *Scotland*, to be buried in the *Grey-Friers* at *Stamford*. By the Inquisition taken after her Death <sup>e</sup>, it appears that she deceased on the *Monday* next after the Feast of *St. Laurence*, viz. the Seventh of *August*, 9 R. 2. And her <sup>f</sup> last Will bears Date at her Castle of *Wallingford*, the same Day, 1385. in the ninth Year of her dear Son *Richard* King of *England* and *France*. She is therein stiled, *Joan*, Princess of *Wales*, Dutches of *Cornwall*, Countess of *Chester*, and Lady *Wake*. She orders her Body to be buried in her Chapel at *Stamford*, near the Monument of her late Husband, the Earl of *Kent*. And constitutes her Executors *Robert*, Bishop of *London*, *William*, Bishop of *Winchester*, *John* Lord *Cobham*, Sir *William de Beauchamp*, Sir *William de Nevile*, Sir *Simon Burley*, Sir *Lewis Clifford*, Sir *Richard Abberbury*, Sir *John Clanvowe*, Sir *Richard Stany*, Sir *John de Worth*, Sir *John le Vache*, Knts. *William de Harpiley*, and *Henry Horton*, Esqrs;

<sup>c</sup> *Knighton*. p. 2675. n. 60.

<sup>a</sup> *Walsing*. p. 343.

<sup>e</sup> *Efc*.

9 R. 2. n. 54.

f. 213.

Lib. in Offic. Princip. Cant. vocat. *Courtney*.



# I N D E X.

## O F

## N A M E S.

- A
- A** Bberbury, Richard 308  
 Abbevil, Burgesſes of 220  
 Agenois, Senefchal of 224  
 Alby, Biſhop of 104, 106  
 Albret, Perdiccas 187, 257, 8, 260  
 — Lord of, 215, 17, 224, 7,  
 234, 250  
 Alencon, Earl Charles 11, 13,  
 18, 85, 144  
 Angreville, Lord 128  
 Anneſley, John 269  
 — Earl of Angleſey ibid.  
 Anjou, Duke Lewis 64, 67, 144,  
 214, 224, 5, 229, 235, 8,  
 249, 252, 262, 3, 4, 277,  
 279, 280, 1, 2  
 Argenton, Lord 84, 88  
 Armagnac, Earl of 47, 50, 6,  
 7, 8, 111, 135, 215, 17, 224,  
 7, 8, 234, 250, 281  
 Armenia, King of 41  
 Arragon, King of 57, 190  
 Arundel, Earl Richard 6, 14,  
 15, 17, 38  
 Artois, Lord John 85  
 Aſhmole, Mr. 23  
 Aubigny, Lord 20, 144  
 Audley, James 48  
 — Lord James 55, 7, 60,  
 79, 86, 94, 95, 99, 122, 49  
 194, 254, 5, 262, 264  
 Aumarle, Earl of 18  
 Auſtria, Duke Otho 12  
 Athens, Duke of 67, 82, 88  
 Auvergne, Dauphin of 144, 233  
 Auxerre, Earl of 18, 144  

B

 Badleſmere, Lord Giles 92  
 Baſiſter, Tho. 257  
 Bar, Tho. 244  
 Barrois, John 128  
 Bartnel, Bourg 187  
 Barnes, John 119  
 Barton, Philip 305  
 Baſſet of Drayton, Lord 61,  
 Ralph 122  
 Battefoile, Tho. 280, 281  
 Bath, Biſhop John 297  
 Bauldron, Rob. 44  
 Beauchamp, John 10, 38, 44,  
 133. Roger 272  
 — Lord John 32, 45.  
 Guy 131. William 283, 308  
 — of Bletſo Lord Ro-  
 ger 158  
 Beaufort, Roger 234  
 Beaujeu, Lord 20. Richard 68.  
 James 85. Guiſchard 88  
 Beaumont, John 6  
 X 3 Beaumont,



# I N D E X.

Beaumont off Hainault, Lord John	12, 15, 21	Brewis, Peter	10
—— Viscount	144	Brian, Guy 10, 133, 272. Lord	158
Beauvais, Rob.	35	Guy	187
Bedford, Duke John	239, 242, 246, 247	Briquet, Rob.	240
Becket, Tho.	298	Brom, John	269
Bergerac, Nandon	187	Bruges, Tho.	110
Berclay, Tho.	6	Bucy, Simon	132
Berkley, Lord Tho. 32, 46,	46	Buchy, Simon	85, 270
269. Maurice	63	Buffiers, Lord Piers	46, 48, 61, 66, 89, 122, 124, 125, 126, 132, 133
Bernard, Jacob	63	Burgherfe, Lord Bartholomew	64, 127, 261, 262
Berry, Duke John 64, 67, 218,	235, 249, 252, 260, 263, 277, 279, 282	Burgundy, Duke Philip	2. Simon 251, 276, 277, 284, 306, 308
Blondeau, John	263, 264	Burley, Walter	241
Blois, Charles	149	Burnell, Lord	53
—— E. 18, 144. Guy	12	Burton, William	119
Bochan, Earl Hen.	6	Bury, John	46, 56, 80, 83, 84, 103, 160, 260. John 133
Bodenay, Lord 84. Theobald	83	Buscche, Capital of	Burwash, Lord Bartholomew 56 C.
Bohemia, King John of Luxem-	burgh, 11, 12, 18, 22, 28. Char. 29.		
Bohon, William Earl of Nor-	thampton	Calverley, Hugh	186, 194, 208, 250
Bois, Hen.	35	Cambridge, Earl	261, 262, 274, 275, 280, 283, 286, 287.
Bologne, Bishop Guy	27	Edmund	184, 250, 251, 290, 291
Bond, Nich.	257	Camel, Degory	242
Bottetourt, Lord John	55, 57, 122	Camois, Ralph	187
Bouciqualt, Monsieur	56	Campbell, Grimston	56
Bouchiquant, Lord 60, 62, 128		Canterbury, Archbishop John	5. Simon 164
Bourcher, Lord Bartholomew	239. William 240.	Caples, John	125
Boulant, Reginald	122	Carency, Lord	125
Bourbon, Duke Peter of Cler-	mont, 11, 67, 88. Lewis 273	Carmain, Viscount of	135, 217, 224, 227
—— Duke, 84, 144, 274,	275, 276, 282	Carre, Martin	196
—— Lord James	85, 117	Carrian, Lord Reginald	88
—— John	270	Castile, King Peter	179. John 211
Bourchier, Lord 272. John	46	Castle-Guillon, Lord of	88
Bourdeaux, Archbishop Elias	192	Catharine of Spain, Princess	211
Boxhull, Allan	272	Cervoles, Lord Arnold	85, 88
Brabant, Duke 5, 23. Philip	247	Chalenton, Lord of	88
Brabant and Lorrain, Duke John	304	Chalons, Viscount of	85
Brayne, Earl of	144	Chambley, Lord Guyventon	85
		Chandos, John	14, 48, 133
		Chandos,	

## I N D E X,

Chandos, Lord	82, 260, 262, 264, 265, 269, 274	Coulon, John	269
— Lord John	8, 55, 57, 60, 62, 81, 85, 122, 124, 128, 177, 179, 195, 196, 208, 212, 228, 251, 252, 258	Coutras, Lord Petiton	61
Chandos, Duke of	269	Craon, Lord	60, 107, 144
Chapponeau	221	— William	144
Charleton, Lord John	122	Crequi, Lord	33
Charny, Lord Geoffry	29, 31, 32, 33, 35, 36, 67, 89	Crotony, Lord	56
Charnels, John	187	Cyprus, King of Hugh	40, 41, 178
Chartres, Emery	284	— Peter	
Chastel Vilaine, Lord of	85	D.	
Chaumont, Lord	46, 103, 284	Dabernon, John	113
— Hermit of	60, 62	Dachone, Lord	85
Chauvigny, Lord	65	D'Ambreticourt, Lord Eustace	61, 56, 78, 82, 186, 258, 276
Cheyney, William	128, Robert 187, Clanvowe, John 308	Damorie, Percival	235
Clarence, Duke of	298, Lionel 121	Dampmartin, Earl of	67, 84, 89, 144
Clarendon, Roger	305	D'Angle, Lord Guisfard	84, 89, 177, 284, 6
Clermont, Lord John	47, 79, 80	Darcy, John	6, 304
— Marshall	50	Danequin, Baldwin	123
Clequin, Bertram	187, 189, 190, 196, 206, 211, 212, 213, 214, 292, 281, 282	Daudeavile, Lord	33
— Bernard	285	De la Bonne, Lord	123
Cleux, Heretongs	241	De la Bret, Bernard	57, 58
Clifford, Rob. 6. Edw.	266	— Charre, Lord	85
— Lewis	306, 308	— Esparre, Bourg	187
— Lord 45. John	241	— Pole, Lord Michael	284
Cliffon, Lord	278	— Roche, Hugh	284
Cluigny Abbot, Andrew de la Roche	128	— Tour, Arnart	85, 88, 132
Cobham, Lord Regim.	14, 45, 55, 57, 89, 93, 94, 95, 122, 132, 133, 158, John 308.	— Warr, Lord Roger	32, 61, 90, 1, 122, 182, 272
Collings, Roger	269, Percival 284	— Marche, Thomas	40, 1, 2
Comignis, Lord and Earl of	215, 217, 224, 227, 252	— Mare, Peter	297, 306
Conde, Lord of	215, 217	D'Endregahan, Arnold	56, 79, 117, 144
Conferans, Lord	59	Derval, Lord,	144
Corten hale, Richard	44	Derge du Lache Raimond	63
Coslington, Stephen	122, 257	Derby, Earl Henry	5
Cotesford, John	238	Devereux, John	186, 255, 274, 6, 284.
Coucy, Lord 144. Ralph	65	Devonshire, Earl Hugh	6
— Earl of	237	Domme, Robert	259
		Dorman, William	229, 231
		Doria, Antonio	12, 18
		Douglas, Earl William	80, 85
		— Lord Archibald	80
		— James	80
		Du Chaitell, Garfes	187
		Du Plessi, William	128
		Dudley, Robert Earl of Leicester	249
		X 4	Durham,

## I N D E X.

Durham, Bishop, Tho. Hatfield	122	Duke of	242, 4
Duras, Lord Robert	73, 81	Goldesborough, John	39
E.		Gondemar du Fay, Lord	21
Eam, Henry	23, 122	Gournay, Matthew	186
Egmont, Earl John	10	Gourdon, Robert	80
Ely, Bp. Tho.	184	Grandifon, William	133
Emeldon, Wm.	6	Graville, Earl of	96
Emposta, Chastellain	103	Grey, Roger	6
Ewe, Earl John of Artois,	88,	— John	240
	95	— of Codnere, Lord John	122
Eu, Earl of	144	Greilly, Lord John	63, 66, 77,
Engain, Henry	10	88, 108, 229, 263, 280,	
Esplot, Battiller	187	281	
Eltampes, Earl of	96	Grimaldi, Carolo	12, 18
Exeter, Duke of	245	Gueret Pepin	35
F.		Guifnes, Earl of	136
Faukeberge, John	6	Guiscard D'Angle	254
Ferriers, Henry	6	H.	
Felton, Lord Thomas	122,	Hainault, Lord John	20
179, 180, 197, 258, 260,		— Countess Maud	167
269, 274, 280, 1		Hale, Frank	133
Foix, Earl of, Gaston	47, 135	Haliburton, Andrew	80
	193, 5, 6	Hangeft, Lord	144
Fordham, de John	198	Harcourt, Earl	18, 144, Lewis
Forest, Earl of	144	— Lord Lewis	229, 254
Fitz-Allan,	8, 9	— Lewis	144, 284
Fitz-Walter, Lord John	122	— Godfrey	149, 266
Fiennes, Lord Moreaux	33,	Harpiley, William	308
	128	Hastings, Hugh	122
Flanders, Earl Lewis	11, 18,	— Lord Hugh	257
	162	— John, Earl of Pem-	
France, King Philip 4th	2, 11,	broke	250, 251, 290, 291
	12	Hereford and Essex, Earl, Hum-	
— King Charles	216, 17,	phry Bohun	122
18, 19, 220, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5,		— Earl of	272
6, 7, 8, 9, 230, 1, 3, 4,		Hainault, Earl William	2
249, 293, 9		Hewet, Walter	186
Frevile, Robert	244	Hoggeshaw, Tho.	44
— Lord Baldwin,	257, 284	Holey, Lord	85
Froiffart, John	25	Holland, Tho.	165
G.		— Edward	240
Galard, John	149	— John Earl of Huntingdon	
Garenciers, Lord	144		307
Garibz, William	203	Horton, Henry	308
Garonne, Lord	284	Huntingfield, Lord	William
Genoa, Earl Ame	12		122
Germany, Emperor of	18, 212	Huntington, Earl	38, 247
Gloucester, Earl Hugh	6, 38	— William	6
		Hylton,	

# I N D E X

Hylton, Adam	133	Robert	308
— I.		Longeville, Earl of	144
Joigny, Earl of	65, 144	Lore, Lord	123
Isabella, Princess	237	Loring, Nele	61, 122, 132,
Juliers, Marquiss of	28		133, 256
— Duke, William	238	Lorrain, Duke	18
— K.		— Ralph	11
Kent, Countess Joan	165	Lovain, Nich.	232
— Margaret	256	Loufkin, John,	119
— Earl, 308. Edmund	165	Luxemburgh, Lord John	247
Knowles, Robert	60, 255, 256,	Lymiers, Lord	84
258, 259, 260, 262, 264,			
274, 277, 278, 279			
— L.			
Lancaster, Tho.	10	Majorca, King of 18. James	12,
— Earl, Henry	5, 38	192, 196, 208, 214	
— Duke of	121, 123,	Maleval, Lord 273. Lewis	270
124, 125, 126, 129, 162,		Manny, Lord Walter 31, 32,	
182, 192, 193, 211, 235,		33, 122, 133, 128, 129, 272	
237, 238, 290, 293, 296,		March, Earl of 124. Roger,	121
297, 306, 307		Mareschal, Earl John	241
— Henry 43, 114, 115,		Marvejous, Lord Raymond	270
121, 128, 130, 131, 133		Marvejols, Lord	273
— John of Gaunt	91,	Mauliveres, Lord of	233
121, 184, 186, 272, 277,		Mauley, Lord Peter	15
279, 283, 286, 287, 288		— Robert	10
Landas, Lord	35	Meingre, John	132
— John	67, 83	Meinill, Lord Hugh	284
Landuras, Lord	284	Merners, Lord Hutin	59
Langley, Edmund of	167	Mico, Griffith	60
Langres, Simon	128	Mifnia, Marquiss Frederick	28
Latimer, Lord	296	Mohun, Lord	272
La Vache, Richard	132, 133	Molineaux, William	224, 257
La Ware, Lord Roger	46	— Lord Viscount	224
L'Esparre, Lord	284, 269	Monpenfer, Earl of	85
L'Estarrac, Soldiche of	284	Montagre, Lord	85
Liege, Bishop of	12	Montagu, Lord John	32, 261,
Ligny, John	144		262, 274
Limoges, Viscount of	135	Montalboto, Lord	84
— Bishop of	282, 283,	Montendre, Lord	84, 89
	287	Montferrand, Lord	46, 56, 103,
Lincoln, Bishop of	122, 167		284
— Henry,	304	Montfort, L'Amaury Lord of	20
— Dean of	167	Montford, Earl of	130. John
Lisle, Lord John	46, 49		146, 147
— Bastard of	55	Mons, Earl of	88
— Earl of	135	Monfalt, Lord	85
Litchfield, Dean of	167	Montmorency, Lord Charles	20,
London, Bishop, Courtney	306.		34, 35, 132, 144
		Moravia, Marquiss Charles of	
		Luxemburgh	11, 15
		Morgy	



# INDEX

- More, Tho. 45, 49  
 Morbeque, Dennis 90, 92, 93, 108  
 Morley, Lord Rob. 122, 131  
 Moubray, Lord John 122  
 — John 6  
 Moulvins, John 6  
 Moyne, of Baffleberg Lord 18  
 Mucidan, Lord 56, 61, 84, 125, 284
- N
- Narbon, Viscount of 89  
 Nassau, Earl of 69, 79, 82  
 Navarre, King of 117, 118, 183  
 184. Rich. 192, 194, 195, 209  
 Negremont, Earl Gunter 28  
 Nemers, Lord 46  
 Nesle, Lord William 85, 88  
 Nevill, Ralph 6. Hugh 28. John 186. William 308  
 — Lord 272, of Raby Ralph 122, 232  
 Newcastle, Duke of 96  
 Neydo, Earl of 69, 82  
 Normandy, Duke of 80, 83, 149. Charles 64, 67. John 236  
 Northampton, Earl William 5, 8, 9, 14, 15, 17, 28, 38, 122, 126, 128, 133  
 Northumberland, Earl Henry 122  
 Norvel, Lord 85  
 Noyon, Bishop of 12  
 Nuys, Marquiss of 122
- O
- Offord, Andrew 305  
 Oldcastle, John 241  
 Orleans, Duke 67, 83, 130, 144  
 Ortingo, Edmund 187  
 Oxford, Earl of 14, 45, 46, 56, 75, 85. John de Vere 91, 92, 122. Tho. de Vere 92  
 — Joan 2
- P
- Palatine, Prince Albert 12  
 Pamiers, Ellis 56. John 229  
 — Hen. 229  
 — Monsieur 57  
 — Lord 84, 284. Edmund 66. Tho. 269
- Partenay, Lord of 84, 96, 229, 263, 284  
 Paveley, Walter 61  
 Pavia, Emeric 29, 31, 37  
 Pedro, King 195, 196, 197, 198, 200, 204, 205, 206, 207, 209, 210, 211, 212  
 Pelham, John 90, 91, 92  
 Pelot, Bernard 221  
 Pembroke, Earl 26, 262, 274, 275. John 283, 286, 287  
 Pemburge, Richard 122, 272  
 Percival, Walter 10  
 Percy, Henry 6, 306. Tho. 258  
 — Lord 272. Hen. 122, 232, Tho. 262, 283  
 Perigort, Cardinal of 69, 72, 73, 82, 103. Nicholas, 115  
 Perigort, Earl of 135, 217, 224, 227, 252  
 Perot, Humphry 187  
 Perrers, Alice 296, 297  
 Picard, Hen. 113  
 Pierpoint, Lord Edmund 122  
 Pincornet, Lord of 215, 217  
 Pinant, Lord of 263, 284, 229  
 Plumpton, Matilda 2  
 Poitiers, Earl John 144  
 Pompador, Lord of 89  
 Pons, Lord of 84, 89, 229, 263, 284  
 Ponthieu, Lord James of Bourbon 47  
 — Earl James of Bourbon 88, 95, 108  
 — Earl of 144  
 Ponynge, Tho. 6  
 Porcieu, Earl of 123, 144, 233  
 Porter, William 240  
 Prior, Tho. 2  
 Punchardon, Richard 61, 125, 193, 257, 284, 299
- R
- Ravenal, Ralph 132  
 Ravensholm, John 10  
 Renty, Edward 31  
 Revel, Arnold 85  
 Rheims, Archbishop 20. John de

# I N D E X.

- de Craon 123  
 Ribemont, Lord Eustace 35, 36,  
     67, 68, 69, 85, 88  
 Richmond, Earl of 124, 125.  
     John 167  
 Roan, Archbishop 17, 109, 110  
 Robfart, Lord of Cannon 236,  
     237, 238  
 — Lewis 236, 239, 240, 243.  
     John 236, 243, 245, 246,  
     247, 248, 249. Tirrey 239,  
     240, 248, 249  
 Rochebreton, Earl of 211  
 Rochecouart, Earl of 89  
 — Viscount of 273  
 Rochefort, Lord 85  
 Rodez, Bishop of 214  
 Romene, Earl of 48  
 Ros de Hamlake, Will. 6  
 Rose, Lord John 46  
 Roos, Lord Tho. 178  
 Rofs, Lord Will. 32. Tho.  
     280  
 — John 260  
 Roye, Lord of 233  
     S.  
 Salisbury, Earl William de Mon-  
     tacute 4, 5, 32, 8, 45, 46,  
     56, 77, 9, 80, 4, 5, 121, 6,  
     133, 165, 245, 272  
 Salisbury, Bishop of 167  
 Saltburgh, Earl of 69, 82  
 Salebruche, Earl of 67, 144,  
     229, 231  
 Salemmi, Earl of 18  
 Sancerre, Lord Lewis 273  
 — Marshal 274  
     Earl of 12, 18, 107, 144  
 Sancelloni, Earl of 200, 2  
 Santerre, Lord John 84, 9  
 Savoy, Earl Ame 12  
 — Peter 113  
 Segrave, de Hugh 297  
 Sens, Archbishop William de  
     Melun 86  
 Shareshall, William 43  
 Siderston, Thomas 248  
 Smith, Famil. 306  
 Soham, Richard 305  
 Sounder, John 305  
 Spain, King Pedro 192, 212  
     Alphonso 201  
     Henry 197, 8, 200,  
         1, 3, 8, 9, 211  
 Spencer, Lord Edward 61, 122  
     Thomas 257  
 Strafford, Richard 45, 9, 53, 4  
     Earl Ralph 32, 43,  
         121, 133, 158, 307  
 Stafford, Hugh 239  
     Lord 272  
 Stapleton, Miles 132, 3.  
 St. Asaph, Bishop William 297  
 St. Dizien Geoffry 85  
 St. Guislain, Lord John 65  
 St. Jean de Maurienne, Bishop  
     115  
 St. Julian Lewis 265  
 St. Paul, Earl of 12, 18, 122,  
     144, 218  
 St. Vitalis, Card. Nichs. 106,  
     115  
 Stany, Richard 308  
 Stokes, de Aleyn 298  
 Stratton, Robert 308  
 Stuart, Andrew 80  
 Sturry, Richard 274, 296  
 Surgeres, Lord 84  
 Suffolk, Earl Robert Ufford 6,  
     17, 32, 45, 6, 56, 77, 9, 84,  
     5, 121, 167  
 Sutton, John 91  
     T.  
 Tankerville, Earl Charles of Ar-  
     tois 67, 88, 95, 144  
 Taniboton, Lord of 229, 263,  
     284  
 Taunton, John 257  
 Terovenne, Bishop William 130  
 Touchet, Lord John 122  
 Tourain, Duke John 67  
 Trivet, John 257  
 Troutes, Bernard 108  
 Trussel, William 122, 304  
 Tuwe, Thomas 91  
 Typtoft, John 6  
     V.  
 Vache, John 308  
 Valence,

# I N D E X.

Valence, Walter	35	Walpole, Edward	248, 249
Valois, Earl Charles	2	John	249
John	40	Sir Robert	249
Valentinois, Earl of	144	Walsham, de Robert	297
Van Hall, Fran.	60, 122, 132	Warren, Earl John	5
Van Coucibras, Lord Lewis	78	Warwick, Earl Thomas Beau-	
Vaudemont, Earl Henry	12, 18,	champ	6, 8, 14, 32, 8, 43, 5, 57,
	144		77, 84, 6, 93, 4, 5, 121, 8,
Vaux, Henry	125		131, 3, 160, 7, 178, 245,
Andrew	80		272
Vendosme, Earl of	88, 144	Westminster, Abbot of	167
Ventador, Earl of	67, 85, 8,	Willoughby, Richard	43
	144	Lord John	46,
Vere, Aubrey	306		122
Vermandois, Earl of	236	Winchester, Bishop William	233,
Virchin, Richard	236		297, 308
Viennois, Dauphin Humbert	11,	Bishop, Henry	242
	18, 20.	Windfor, Lord William	232
Villemur, John	284	Wingfield, John	45, 7, 9, 57-
Ulvedale, John	92	Woodland, Walter	81
Umfrevil, Gilbert	240	Worcester, Bishop of	167
Wake, de Lydell Thomas	6	Worth, John	308
Hugh	256	X.	
Baldwin	256	Xaintogne Lord	89
Thomas	227, 8, 256	Y.	
Archbishop of Canter-		York, Duke Edmund	121
bury	256	The Treasurer	167

F I N I S.



*P. 2 l. 17 for Bersarlix r. Bersatrix, p. 6 l. 6 for Mouthray r. Mowbray, p. 10 par. 2 l. 6 for Englainne r. Engaine, p. 67 par. 2 l. 8 for Bourton r. Bourbon, p. 92 l. 8 for Badillermere r. Badlesmere, p. 107 par. 3 for Gascoingers r. Gascoigners, p. 240 for Caudebec r. Caudebec, p. 251 l. 20 for John r. Simon.*



*Vol. 6. B. C.*  
THE  
HISTORY

*Francis OF Hargrave.*

JOHN of GAUNT,  
KING of CASTILE, and LEON,  
DUKE of LANCASTER,

AND

Father of HENRY IV,  
KING of ENGLAND.

RELATING

His several Expeditions, and an Account of his  
Right to the Kingdom of Spain.

WITH

His Marriages, Issue, and the Descendents from him  
now existing.

Collected from Records, Manuscripts, and Historians,

By ARTHUR COLLINS, Esq;

*It should have been added, that*

*the collection is also from 2. & 3. Dugdale's*  
*Baron. 1. 4. At the beginning it is more*  
*extract from Dugdale without any*  
LONDON:  
Printed for THOMAS OSBORNE, in Gray's-Inn.  
*ledgment. N. H.*

M DCC XL.



FH

MVSEVM  
BRITANNICVM



THE  
LIFE and ACTIONS  
OF  
JOHN of GAUNT,  
DUKE of Lancaster, &c.

**J**OH N of GAUNT, Duke of Lancaster, &c. was the fourth Son of King Edward the III<sup>d</sup>, and being born <sup>a</sup> at Gaunt in Flanders, An. 1340. (14 Ed. III.) had that Sur-name. On the Twenty-ninth of September, 16 Edw. III. (before he was Three Years of Age) He was <sup>b</sup> created Earl of Richmond, with a Grant in Tail General, of the Castles, Manors and Lands, belonging to that Earldom, as also all Pre-rogatives and Royalties, which John, late Duke of Britanny and Richmond, did enjoy; likewise in 17 Edw. III. a like <sup>c</sup> Grant of the Manor of Danebys<sup>super</sup> Wyske in Com. Ebor.

A 2

In

<sup>a</sup> T. Wals. p. 134. <sup>b</sup> Cart. 16. E. 3. n. 2. <sup>c</sup> Cart. 17. E. 3. n. 25.

In 18 *Edw. III.* he had a Charter <sup>d</sup> for a Market every Week, at his Manor of *Bassingburne* in *Com. Cantab.* and for a Fair every Year on the Eve and Day of the Apostles *Peter* and *Paul*, also six Days following. And for Markets at *Badburham* in the said County, and at *Cheeshunt* in *Hertfordshire*, on the Monday every Week; likewise at *Baughes* in *Com. Ebor.* on the *Tuesday*; with two Fairs Yearly, one on the Eve and Day of *Barnabas* the Apostle, and two Days following; the other, on the Eve, and Day of *St. Giles* the *Abbot*, and two Days ensuing.

In 27 *Edw. III.* he had a Confirmation <sup>e</sup> of that Earldom of *Richmond*, with all the Castles, Manors, and Lands thereto belonging. And the Year following was one of those Peers, who, on the 28th of *August*, <sup>f</sup> constituted *Richard de Wymondeswold*, and others, their Proctors, to consent on their part to what should be agreed on between the King's Ambassadors, and those of *France*, before the *Pope*, not judicially, but as a private Person. In 29 *Edw. III.* being in the Fifteenth Year of his Age, he <sup>g</sup> attended on the King his Father in that Expedition then made into *France*, having on the *Downs* <sup>h</sup> received the Honour of Knighthood, with Prince *Lionel* his elder Brother, and Twenty-five other Noble young Gentlemen. The Army began their March from *Calais*, <sup>i</sup> the first of *November*, but being streightened for want of Provision, return'd again on the Twelfth without atchieving any memorable

<sup>d</sup> *Cart. 18 Edw. 3. n. 13.* <sup>e</sup> *Cart. 27. Edw. 3. n. 33.* <sup>f</sup> *Rymers Fæd. Tom. 5. p. 797.* <sup>g</sup> *T. Wals. 162. n. 40.* <sup>h</sup> *Knighton, p. 2609.* <sup>i</sup> *Barnes's Hist. of Edw. 3. p. 484, 485.*

memorable Action, and a Truce being immediately concluded, the King, together with his Son, return'd into *England* the same Month. And, in order to recover *Berwick*, which had by Stratagem been taken by the *Scots* during his Absence, the King, three Days after his Arrival, set out for *Scotland*, attended by the Earl of *Richmond*, as appears from his being among the Witnessees to King *Edward Baliol's* Grant of the Crown of *Scotland* to his Father, <sup>k</sup> dated at *Rokesburgh*, Jan. 20, 1356. 29 *Edw. III.* which was soon after the King had recover'd *Berwick*. In 31 *Edw. III.* he had a Grant <sup>l</sup> in special Tail of the Castle and Lordship of *Lydel* in *Com. Northumb.* (wherein *Blanch*, the Widow of *Thomas* Lord *Wake*, had an Estate for Life,) which she then quitted with Remainder to the Crown.

In 33 *Edw. III.* having obtain'd a special Dispensation from *Rome*, he was <sup>m</sup> married at *Reading* in *Berkshire*, the Sunday before *Rogation Sunday*, (being the 14th of the *Kalends* of *June*) to his Cousin the Lady *Blanch*, second Daughter and Coheir to *Henry Plantagenet*, Duke of *Lancaster*, Earl of *Derby*, *Lincoln*, and *Leicester*, Steward of *England*, Lord of *Bergerac* and *Beaufort*, by <sup>n</sup> *Isabel* his Wife, Daughter of *Henry* Lord *Beaumont*, Cousin-German to Queen *Isabel*, Wife to King *Edward* the II<sup>d</sup>. The eldest Daughter, the Lady *Maud*, was first married to *Ralph*, Son of *Ralph* Earl of *Stafford*;

A 3

and

<sup>k</sup> *Rymer præd.* p. 832. <sup>l</sup> *Ex magno Registro in Offic. Ducat. Lanc. tit. Cumb.* <sup>m</sup> *Walsingh.* p. 166. & *M.S. vet. Angl.* in *Bibl. C. C. C. Cantabr.* c. 230. <sup>n</sup> *Asmole's Order of the Garter*, p. 684.



and secondly, to *William Duke of Bavaria*, Earl of *Henalt*, *Holland*, and *Zeland*. The Week after his Marriage, a solemn Just having been proclaimed ° to be held at *London* for three Days, against all Comers, by the Mayor, Sheriffs, and One and Twenty Aldermen, He with his Father, Three Brothers, and Nineteen Great Lords of *England*, came privily in their Stead, and bearing the City Arms, both on their Shields and Surcoats, in the presence of the Kings of *France* and *Scotland*, then Prisoners in *England*, held the Field the whole three Days with great Honour, especially to the Satisfaction of the Citizens, while they took them really for what they seem'd; but were extreemly delighted when they understood the King himself, and his Sons, had done them the Honour to fight so gallantly under their Cognizance. The same Year he <sup>p</sup> attended his Royal Father in that grand Expedition made into *France*; and about <sup>q</sup> that time he was elected one of the Knights Companions of the *Garter*.

In 35 *Edw. III.* he obtain'd a special Charter, <sup>r</sup> for divers Privileges to himself, and the Heirs of his Body, by his Lady the said *Blanch*, viz. Return of Writs, Pleas of *Wythbernham*, Felons Goods, &c. in all the Lordships and Lands, whereof he was then possess'd. And the same Year, having Issue <sup>t</sup> by her, and doing his Homage, had an Affignation of her purparty in all those Lands, whereof her Father died seized; viz. of the Castle and Manor of *Pontefract*,  
with

° *Barnes*, præd. p. 564. <sup>p</sup> *Ibid.* p. 568. <sup>q</sup> *Assmole*, p. 708.  
<sup>r</sup> *Cart.* 35. *Edw.* 3. n. 2. <sup>t</sup> *Rot. Fin.* 35. *Edw.* 3. m. 23

with the Manors of *Bradford*, *Almanbury*, *Altofts*, *Warnfield*, *Rothewell*, *Leeds*, *Roundebay*, *Scoles*, *Berewyk*, *Kepax*, *Alderton*, *Knottynghley*, with the Mill; *Beghale*, *Kamsale*, *Orifston*, *Elmesale*, *Akworth* and *Tanshelf*: Likewise of the *Bailliwicks* of *Osgoderas*, *Agbrigge*, and *Stayncros*; with the *Bailliwick* of the Honour of *Pontefract*, the annual Rent called *Castel-Ferme*, and Pleas and Perquisites of the Court. And of the Manors of *Kritelyng* and *Barlay*, of the Castle of *Pykering*, with the *Soke*; as also of the Manors of *Efyngwold* and *Scalby*; all in *Com. Ebor.* at that Time valed at One Thousand One Hundred Fourscore and Seven Pounds, Three Shillings and Four Pence. Of the Castle and Manor of *Dunstanburgh*, with the Manors of *Shoplaye*, *Stanford*, *Burton*, and *Emeldon*; as also of the Fishing of *Tweed* in *Com. Northumb.* valued at Two Hundred Twenty Pounds, Fifteen Shillings, and Eight-Pence Farthing. Of the *Wapentakes* of *Leyland*, *Amundernesse*, and *Londesdale*; with the Manors of *Oves-Walton*, *Preston*, *Shingelton*, *Wriggeby*, and *Wra*; *Overton-Skerton*; the Towns of *Lancaster*, and *Slyne*; the Royal *Bailliwick* of *Blackbournshire*, the Office of Chief-Forester beyond *Ribble*, and of the *Vaccarie* of *Wyersdale* in *Com. Lanc.* valued at Four Hundred Thirty-Three Pounds, Four Shillings and One Farthing. Of the Manors of *Penwortham*, *Totyngton*, and *Rachedale*, of the *Wapentake* of *Clyderhowe*, with the *Demesn Lands* there: Of the Lordship of *Bouland*, the *Vaccarie* of *Bouland*, and *Blackbournshire*; of the Forest of *Blackbournshire*, and Park of *Igh-*

*tenbull* in *Blackbournshire*, all in the said County of *Lancaster*, valued at Five Hundred Forty-Nine Pound and One Farthing, *per Annum*.

Of the Manor of *Hynkley*, with the Bailliwick in *Com. Leic.* valued at Forty-Seven Pound, Eleven Shillings and Two-pence. Of the Castle and Manor of *Kenilworth*; the *Poole* and *Mill* there, with the Manors of *Watton*, *Shrewele*, *Radesle*, and *Astbull* in *Com. War.* valued at Seventy-Two Pounds, Four Shillings and Two-pence, *per Annum*. Of the Manors of *Halton*, *Ronkore*, *More*, *Whitelawe*, *Congelton*, *Keteshale*, and *Bedeftan*; with the Bailliwick of *Halton*, the Town of *Wyndenes*, and Serjeanty of *Wyndes*, in *Com. Cestr.* valued at Three Hundred Twelve Pound, Eleven Shillings and Five-pence Farthing, *per Annum*.

As also <sup>t</sup> of the Manor of *Coggeshall*, with the Manors of *Cridelyng*, *Barley*, *Kilbourne*, *Toresholme*, *Marchesden*, *Swanyngton*, *Passenham*; and certain Lands in *Daventre* and *Hynkele*; the Mills at *Lilleburne*, and Manor of *Uggele* in *Com. Effex*.

Moreover, by Virtue of the King's Licence, he obtain'd a Grant <sup>u</sup> from *John* Bishop of *Lincoln*, *Richard* Earl of *Arundel*, and others, to himself, and her the said *Blanch*; and the Issue of their two Bodies lawfully begotten; of the Castle of *Bolinbroke*, with the Park, Knights Fees, and Advowsons of Churches thereto belonging. (the Town and Soke of *Bolingbroke*, with the Manors of *Sutton*, *Thoresby*, *Watbe*,  
and

<sup>t</sup> *Pat. 35. Edw. 3. p. 2. n. 7.*  
*p. 3. m. 17.*

<sup>u</sup> *Pat. 35. Edw. 3.*

and *Idgoldmels*, in *Com. Linc.* excepted) Like-  
 wise of the Town, Manor, and Castle, of  
*Tutbury*, with the Towns of *Screpton*, *March-*  
*ington*, *Chalangwode*, *Uttoxatre*, *Adgaresle* and  
*Newburgh*, in *Com. Staff.* Of the Hundred of  
*Higham-Ferrers*, with the Manors of *Raundes* and  
*Rusbeden*, in *Com. Northamp.* and of the Towns of  
*Braslington*, *Matlok*, and *Hertyngdon* in *Com. Derb.*

In 36 *Edward III.* on the Death of <sup>w</sup> *Maud*,  
 (his Wife's Sister) the Widow of *William Duke*  
 of *Bavaria*; (she dying without Issue, on *Palm-*  
*Sunday*, the same Year) he had in right of her,  
 the Manor and Honour of *Leicester*, with the  
 Mansion of *Deresford* in that County; the Man-  
 sion called the *Savoy*, in *Com. Midd.* The Manors  
 of *Gymingham*, *Tunstede*, *Methwold*, *Thetford*, with  
 the Hundreds of *Gallowe* and *Brothecros*, in *Com.*  
*Norff.* The Manors of *Rothewell*, *Navesby*, *Wish-*  
*ton*, *Glaphthorne*; with the Leets of *Denford*,  
*Cotberstoke*, and *Barton*, in *Com. Northamp.* The  
 Manor of *Southo*, with the Ferme of the Towns  
 of *Gomecestre*, and *Huntendon*. The Manors of  
*Hungerford* and *Esgarston*, in *Com. Berks*; the  
 Manors of *Colingborne*, *Everle*, and *Lavinton*,  
 in *Com. Wilts.* The Manor of *Kings-Somborne*, in  
*Com. South.* The Manors of *Langstoke*, *Weston*  
*juxta Odybam*, and *Hertele* *Com. Somers.* The  
 Manor of *Newcastle under Lyne*, in *Com. Staff.*  
 With the Manors of *Penkbul*, *Clayton*, *Sheprug*  
*Wolstanton*, and *Shelton*, Members thereof: The  
 Manor of *Minsterworth*, and Castle of *Mon-*  
*mouth*, with the *Berton*, and Little *Monmouth*;  
 the Castles of *Grossemont* and *Oken*, with the  
*Berton*,



*Berton*, as also *Blan-Castle*, in the Marches of *Wales*: the Castle, Town, and Lordship of *Kidwelly*: the Lordship of *Carnewathlaw*, with the Castle of *Kaer-Kennyn*, the Commote of *Iskenning*; the Castle of *Ogemore*, and Manor of *Ebbothe*, also in the Marches of *Wales*; and the Manor of *Kingslon-Laci*, the Borough of *Wimbourne-Minster*, the Chace of *Winbourne-Holt*, the Hundreds of *Gadbury*, and *Mayden-Newton*, with the Manor of *Shapwike*, in *Com. Dorset*.

Being thereupon sole Heir (by his Wife) to *Henry Duke of Lancaster*, he was advanced <sup>x</sup> to that Title in Parliament, on the 13th of *November*, 36 *Edward III.* by girding with a Sword, a Cap of Furr on his Head, with a Circlet of Gold and Pearls.

In 38 *Edward III.* he, with *Edmund Earl of Cambridge*, his Brother, cross'd the Sea with many Knights and Esquires, in their Company to visit *Lewis Earl of Flanders*, on a Treaty of Marriage, between the said *Edmund* his Brother, and *Margaret*, Duchess of *Burgundy*, the Earl's Daughter, of whom they were received with great Honour, and on their return the Earl of *Flanders* accompanied them to *Calais*, and from thence to *Dover*, where the King with his Court received them. And at *Dover-Castle* the Articles and Contract of Marriage were <sup>z</sup> executed, on the 19th of *October*, 1364. 38 *Edward III.* To which this *John Duke of Lancaster*, *Robert*, Earl of *Suffolk*, *Richard* Earl of *Arundel* and *Surry*, *Thomas* Earl of *Oxford*, *Humphry* Earl of

<sup>x</sup> *Cart. 36. Edw. 3. n. 9.*

<sup>z</sup> *Rymer, Tom. 6. p. 444.*

<sup>y</sup> *Barnes, præd. p. 661.*

of *Hertford*, *Ralph Lord Nevil*, and others were Witnesses. But in regard of Proximity of Blood, a Dispensation from Pope *Urban V* being to be obtain'd, <sup>a</sup> the Match was soon after broke by the *French King's* Policy, who craftily prevail'd on the *Pope* not to grant the Dispensation, and then never left courting the Earl of *Flanders* till he had given his Daughter in Marriage to his Brother *Philip*, who in her Right was Duke of *Burgundy*, which Province has ever since given that Title to the eldest Sons of the Kings of *France*.

In 40 *Edward III.* the King and his Council having approved of assisting Don *Pedro*, King of *Castile*, in recovering that Kingdom, the Duke of *Lancaster* was <sup>b</sup> sent to *Bordeaux*, to confer with the Prince of *Wales* and *Aquitain*, as also Don *Pedro*. And when all things were ratified, he return'd to *England* to raise Forces to serve under the Prince his Brother, against Don *Henry* of *Spain*, (the Bastard Brother of Don *Pedro*) who had, by the Power of the Pope, been rais'd to the Kingdom.

He took shipping on the 5th of *January*, 1367, (41 *Edward III.*) and landed with all his Troops at a Port in *Bretagn*, <sup>c</sup> from whence he rode to *Nantes*, where his Brother-in-Law, the Duke of *Bretagn*, receiv'd him with great Love and Respect. And having ordered his Men to march after his Brother the Prince, he rode to the Abby of *St Andrew*, to visit the Princess of *Wales*, who then lay-in, of whom taking leave, he followed his Men to *Dax*, where he met the Prince his Brother, who entirely lov'd one another.

Soon

<sup>a</sup> *Barnes*, *ibid.*    <sup>b</sup> *Barnes*, p. 686.    <sup>c</sup> *ibid.* p. 696.

Soon after, on some difference with the King of *Navarre*, he made him a visit <sup>d</sup> and obtain'd by Treaty, that the Prince of *Wales* and his Army should pass through *Navarre*, and be provided with Provisions for their Money. After which he led the Vanguard of the Army <sup>e</sup> under the Mountains between *St John de Prie du Port*, and the City of *Pampelona*, thro' Passages narrow and perilous.

At their Entrance into *Spain*, a bloody Battle was fought between *Najava* and *Neveret* in *Old Castile*, on the third of *April*, being a *Saturday*, 1367. The Vanguard of the Army, saith my Author <sup>f</sup> " Was order'd with wonderful Dis-  
" cretion, and there stood *John of Gaunt*, Duke  
" of *Lancaster*, in the Flower of his Youth,  
" being at that time in the 27th Year of his  
" Age, of great Strength, Conduct, and Courage,  
" and honourably emulous of his Brother Prince  
" *Edward's* Glory." Before the Engagement, he made twelve Knights, and approaching the Enemy, <sup>g</sup> he said to Sir *William Beauchamp* Lord of *Bergavenny*; *Sir William*, behold yonder our Enemies; This Day you shall see me a good Knight, or else die in the Quarrel. And immediately after began the Fight, with Sir *Bertram Clequin* and Sir *Arnold de Endregban*, Marshal of *France*, who led the Van of the Enemy's Army, compos'd of *Frenchmen*, and Strangers of divers Countries. These made a long and gallant Resistance, and if the *Spaniards* had behav'd with equal Bravery, the Victory would have

<sup>d</sup> P. 697.    <sup>e</sup> *Froissart*, p. 196.    <sup>f</sup> *Barnes*, p. 701.

<sup>g</sup> *Froissart*, p. 138. b.

have been dearer bought, for each fought with Spear in Hand, and when many of them broke, they took to their short Battle-Axes, Swords, and Daggers. But at length, the Duke of *Lancaster* prevail'd, and entirely discomfited them, taking Sir *Bertram Clequin*, Sir *Arnold D'Endregban*, Marshal of *France*, and above 60 more Prisoners of Note. And being entirely subdued, the Duke of *Lancaster* and his Forces march'd to the Succour of the Prince of *Wales*, who engaged the main Body of the Enemy under Don *Henry*, whom they soon after put to Flight, and gain'd a compleat Victory, whereby Don *Pedro* was establish'd in his Kingdom.

The Prince and the Duke of *Lancaster*, after three Months stay in *Spain*, return'd with their Forces thro' *Navarre* to *Bordeaux*, where they were joyfully received.

The next mention I find of the Duke worth Notice, is in 43 *Edward III*. When the League between the *French* and King *Edward* being broke, he was sent with a powerful Army into *France*, and <sup>h</sup> was retain'd to serve the King for half a Year, with three hundred Men at Arms, five hundred Archers, three Bannerets, fourscore Knights, and two hundred sixteen Esquires. In order to this Expedition, he, the Year before, <sup>i</sup> bearing the Title of Duke of *Brittanny*, pawn'd the Castle of *Becherell* in those Parts, to King *Edward* his Father, for a Sum of Money.

Landing at *Calais*, <sup>k</sup> and having refresh'd his Men there, he made daily Incurfions against the

<sup>h</sup> *Ex. Autog. penes Cler. Pell.*    <sup>i</sup> *Pat. 42. Edw. 3. p. 1.*  
<sup>n. 3.</sup>    <sup>k</sup> *Barnes, p. 769.*



the Enemy, took much Pillage, and destroyed all the adjacent Country, which so alarmed the *French King* then at *Rouen*, supervising an *Armada*, design'd for the *Invasion* of *England* (and then almost ready to set Sail) as he laid aside all Thoughts of that Expedition, and immediately order'd all the Forces designed for the Fleet to march under the Command of his Brother the Duke of *Burgundy*, against the Duke of *Lancaster*, who, when he heard of it, marched out of *Calais*, with all his Forces to meet him, and encamp'd between *Ardres* and *St. Omers*, whither came to him <sup>1</sup> *Sir Robert* of *Namur*, with three hundred Spears. The Duke of *Lancaster*, among other Things, said to him, "My dear Uncle, you are heartily welcome; and, Sir, rejoice with us; for I hear for certain, that the Duke of *Burgundy* comes on a-pace to fight us, so that we shall not miss of Deeds of Arms." But finding the Duke of *Burgundy's* Army so far superior to his, as seven to one, he thought it prudent to fortify his Camp, and the *French King* having expressly enjoined his Brother not to fight, only Skirmishes happened between the two Armies.

The *French Army* <sup>m</sup> first decamped, and thereupon the Duke of *Lancaster* returned to *Calais*, where after he had refreshed his Men for three Days, he propos'd to make an Expedition into *France*. In order to which, having muster'd his Men, he march'd to *St. Omers*, where they had a Skirmish at the Gates, and passing

<sup>1</sup> *Froissart*, p. 263. f. 169. b.

<sup>m</sup> *Ibid.* c. 268.

passing on to *Terouenne*, came into the Earl of *St. Paul's* Country, which they ravag'd and burnt. After which the Duke marching thro' *Vineux*, and the Earldom of *Ew*, enter'd into the Archbishoprick of *Rouen*, and pass'd by *Diepe*, with intent to burn the *French* King's Navy, at *Harfleur* on the *Seine*. But the Earl of *St Paul*, having thrown Succours into the Place, prevented their Design; so on the fourth Day after they came before it, they decamp'd, and returned thro' the Lands of the Lord *Stouteville*, where they burnt and destroy'd most part of his Country, and wasted the Region called *le Pais de Caulx*, whence they took their Way thro' *le Vex*, in *Normandy*; and having wherever they came left severe Marks of their Displeasure, they passed the River of *Soame* at *Blanchetteque*. The Duke march'd towards the strong Town of *Rue* on the *Maye*, and so to *Montrevil*; till at last by several Journies he return'd again in Safety to *Calais*, where he dismiss'd Sir *Robert* of *Namur*, and all other Strangers: On the 19th of *November* he embark'd for *England*, the Lady *Blanch* his Wife being lately deceased of the great Pestilence, who was buried on the North-Side of the Choir in *St. Paul's* Cathedral, at *London*.

On the 24th of *December*, 1369. 43 *Edward* III. the King signifies to him, That <sup>a</sup> the *French* and their Adherents endeavour to expunge the *English* Language, destroy the Principality of *Wales*, and by making an Invasion, bring it under their Subjection. He therefore commands

<sup>a</sup> *Rymer's Fadera*, Tom. 6. p. 642.

commands the Duke and all other Lords in the said Principality, to raise and muster their Men, and put Garrisons into the Forts, with Stores, &c. for Defence of the said Principality, and that when summon'd may be ready to march.

The next Year the *French* having made great Preparations to carry on the War in the Principality of *Aquitain*, the Duke of *Lancaster* was sent thither with four hundred Men of Arms, and four thousand Archers, to the Assistance of his Brother the *Black Prince*, having ° Commission from the King to receive into Favour, and wholly to pardon such of his Cities, Castles, Towns, and Inhabitants, as well in *Aquitain* as other Parts of *France*, as should return to his Obedience, and to do and exercise all Power given in his said Commission, with the Consent of the Prince, if present, and in his Absence, as the King's Lieutenant to do what the King himself could do if personally there. He shortly after arrived at *Bordeaux*, and the next day <sup>p</sup> went to the Prince at *Cognac*, then sick of an incurable Disease, yet was gathering his Forces together to fight the *French*, who, when they heard of this Reinforcement, withdrew their Men into Garrison. But the City of *Limoges* by the perswasion of it's Bishop, and Treachery of the Inhabitants, having revolted about this time from the Prince, he became so incensed thereat, that he resolved to make them a severe Example of his Resentment. Thereupon setting down before the place with the Duke of *Lancaster*,  
undermined

undermined their Walls in such manner, that he entered it without Opposition; and resolving entirely to destroy the City, <sup>a</sup> commanded a Party of his Army to put all to Death without Distinction. On which the Commanders of the Garrison resolved to make what Opposition they could, and placing their Backs against an old Wall, with about fourscore of their Men, they were immediately encountered by the Duke of *Lancaster*, the Earl of *Cambridge*, and the Earl of *Pembroke*, with their Forces. The Duke and the two Earls fought with great Gallantry, in single Combat, with the three chief *French* Captains, till the Prince, admiring their Valour, immediately ordered them to be taken to Mercy, and for their Sakes commanded no further Slaughter should be made in the City. The Bishop, the Author of their Revolt, had certainly lost his Head, if the Duke of *Lancaster* had not stood his Friend, who pretending to put him to condign Punishment, had him delivered to do as he should think fit. And then secretly informed the Pope of the Bishop's Danger, who immediately wrote, desiring a Pardon for him, in Reverence to the Apostolick See, which the Duke complied with, by Leave from his Brother. After this Action, the Season of the Year being far advanced, the Army went into their Winter-Quarters, and the Duke remained with the Prince, who, on the 8th of *October* this Year, gave him a Grant of the Castle, Town, and *Chastellanie*, of *la Roche sur Yon*.

B

In

<sup>a</sup> *Barnes*, p. 806, 807.



In the beginning of the next Year, (45 E. III.) the *Black Prince's* Distemper increasing, he resolved, by Advice of his Physicians, to return into *England*, and having convened the Nobility of *Gascoigne* and *Poictou*\*, he told them “ he  
 “ should leave his dearest Brother, the Duke of  
 “ *Lancaster*, to supply his Place. Him there-  
 “ fore he desired they would all believe, honour,  
 “ serve, and obey, even as hitherto they had  
 “ done unto his own Person.”

Soon after the Prince embarked for *England*, and the Duke, in the City of *Bordeaux*, solemnized, in a most magnificent Manner, the Obsequies of his Nephew *Edward*, eldest Son to the *Black Prince*, at which all the Lords and Barons of *Gascoign*, who had lately sworn Obedience to him, were present. But before the Funeral was finished, the Captain of *Monpaon*, a strong Castle belonging to the *English*, revolted from them. At which, being exceedingly displeased, he said to the Lords about him,  
 “ Gentlemen, surely we do not our Duty a-  
 “ right: For the *Britons* and *Frenchmen* are a-  
 “ broad, and have taken the Fortrefs of *Mont-*  
 “ *paon*, which borders upon us: Wherefore it  
 “ behoves us to go forth, and shew our selves,  
 “ or the Enemy will laugh us to scorn.” Where-  
 upon, accompanied by all his Nobility, he marched out of *Bordeaux* with an Army of 700 Spears, and 500 Archers on Horseback, beside Footmen, and invested *Monpaon*, where he was resolutely resisted for several Weeks, until having undermined their Walls, his Army being ready  
 to

\* *Froissard*, c. 287.

to enter the Breach, the Garrison surrendered themselves Prisoners of War.

The Duke having dismissed his Army, returned to *Bordeaux*, and although the Examples of *Limoges* and *Monpaon*, were sufficient to deter the *Poitevins* from revolting, yet many great Lords abandoned the *English* Interest. This obliged the Duke to act defensively, so that he took not the Field this Year, but kept his Court at *Bordeaux* with great Splendor, being attended by a gallant Retinue of Noblemen, both of *England* and *Aquitain*. This Summer, by the Advice of Sir *Guischard d'Angle*, a noble and faithful Knight of *Aquitain*, the Duke took to his second Wife *Constance*, eldest Daughter to Don *Pedro*, King of *Castile* and *Leon*, who, with her other Sister the Lady *Isabella*, had been left by their Father in the Custody of the Prince of *Wales*, as Pledges for the Money the Prince expended in the Service of that King. But he, neglecting to redeem them, after he had gained Possession of his Kingdom, they remained with the Prince; and their Father being slain by his bastard Brother, they were in a most disconsolate Condition at *Aire*, a City of *Gascony*, when the Duke, and the Earl of *Cambridge* his Brother, determined to marry them. Four Lords, and their Attendants, were sent to conduct them to *Bordeaux*, and the Duke and his Brother rode forth to meet them, and were immediately married on the Place, the Village of *Rochfort*, not far from *Bordeaux*. On their Entrance into that City, there was great Feasting and Joy, and a most splendid Re-solemnization of this double

Marriage, all the Lords and Ladies of *Aquitain* attending, who carested the Royal Brides, and presented them with many rich Jewels, and other Gifts, to manifest their Respect to the Duke.

But these Marriages were in effect to denounce mortal War against the King of *Spain*, and his Heirs, for ever; who, tho' he was an Usurper, yet he had great Power, and it was not thought good Policy at that Juncture, when the King of *England* had his Hands full, by the War with *France*, to engage against *Spain*. King *Henry* of *Castile*, had no sooner Notice of the Marriages of his Nieces, than he engaged with the *French* King in a close and perpetual League, offensive and defensive, thereby to support himself against the Power of *England*.

Nor was this Caution of King *Henry's* needless; for the Duke of *Lancaster* immediately took on him the Stile of King of *Castile* and *Leon*, in Right of his Lady the eldest Daughter of Don *Pedro*, the last lawful King of *Spain*<sup>†</sup>, and empaled the Arms of *Castile* and *Leon* with his own. Also some few Years after entered into a War against the bastard Usurper of his Crown, which at last could no otherwise be ended, but by a Match between the sole Daughter and Heiress of this Duke, by the *Spanish* Princess, and *Henry*, Grandson and Heir of the said *Henry* the Bastard; in whose Line and Posterity thus legitimated, that Kingdom hath ever since remained.

The Duke, with his Lady, soon after *Michaelmas* returned into *England*, to assist at a great Council

<sup>†</sup> *Sandford's General History*, p. 238, and 253.

Council held there, about carrying on the War, and to inform his Father of the Affairs of *Aquitain*. The Year following, 46 *Edw. III.* he <sup>t</sup> surrendered his Earldom of *Richmond*, with all the Castles, Manors, Lands, &c. thereto belonging, and in Lieu thereof had a Grant in general Tail, bearing date 26 *Junii*, of the Castle, Manor, and Honour, of *Tykbill*; of the Manor of *High Peke*, with the Knights Fees, and free Chapels thereto belonging, in *Com. Ebor*; of the Advowsons of the Churches of *Steyndrope*, and *Brauncepath*, in the Bishoprick of *Durham*; of the Church of *Marsfeld*, and free Chapel there; of the free Chapel within the Castle of *Pevenſe*: Likewise of the Advowsons of the Priory of *Wilmington*, which was a Cell to the Abbey of *St Mary*, of *Grestene* in *Normandy*; of the Priory of *Withibam*, being a Cell to *St Martin's*, at *Marmonſtre*; all in the County of *Suffex*. And of the House of *St Robert*, at *Knareſburgh*; of the Castle, Manor, and Honour, of *Knareſburgh*; and of the *Wapentake* of *Steynclyff*, in *Com. Ebor*. Of the Manors of *Grynglay* and *Wheteley*, in *Com. Nott*. Of the Manors of *Wighton*, *Alleſham*, *Fakenhamden*, and *Snetesham*, with the Hundreds of *North Grenhowe*, *North Erpyngbam*, *South Erpyngbam*, and *Smethbeton*, in the Counties of *Norfolk* and *Suffolk*. Of the Manors of *Clatton* and *Holme*, in *Com. Hunt*. Of the Manor of *Saham*, in *Com. Cantab*. Of the Castle and Leucate of *Pevenſe*, with the Manors of *Wylindon* and *Marsfield*, and Bailliwick of *Endelenewyk*, in *Com. Suffex*. Of the free Chases of

B 3

High



*High Peke* and *Ashedon*; and of the yearly Farm of 200 Marks, which the Abbot and Convent of *St Mary's* at *York*, ought to pay for the Manor of *Whitgift*.

Shortly after which he <sup>u</sup> embarked with his Father, and a very great Army, intending to relieve *Thovars*; but the Fleet being tossed by contrary Winds, during the Space of a Month, returned again without landing. On the 12th of *June* 1373, 47 *Edw.* III, he was <sup>w</sup> constituted Generalissimo of all the King's Forces beyond Sea, and landed at *Calais* in the beginning of *July* <sup>x</sup>, with an Army of above 30000 Men, from whence, after refreshing his Forces, he set forward, and marched by *Paris* through *Burgundy* and all *France*, without much Molestation from the Enemy, who, having often <sup>z</sup> experienced the Courage and Resolution of the *English*, now cautiously avoided fighting, choosing rather to permit them to ravage the Country, than hazard the Loss of a Battle, which might have endangered the whole Realm. So that the Duke arrived <sup>a</sup> at *Bourdeaux*, about the beginning of *November*, after a long and fatiguing March, having lost in the Mountains several of his Men, and <sup>b</sup> almost all his Horses, for want of Provision, which (although he received no considerable Damage from the *French*) rendered this Expedition more honourable than advantageous.

The Duke remained <sup>c</sup> at *Bourdeaux* the following Winter, and in the beginning of the  
next

<sup>u</sup> *Barnes*, p. 844.      <sup>w</sup> *Rymer*, Tom. 7. p. 13.      <sup>x</sup> *Barnes*, p. 857.      <sup>y</sup> *M.S. vet Angl. in Bibl. G. C. C. Cantabr.* c. 236.  
<sup>z</sup> *Barnes*, p. 860.      <sup>a</sup> *Ibid.* p. 862.      <sup>b</sup> *Fabian*, p. 258.  
<sup>c</sup> *Barnes*, p. 862.

next Summer <sup>d</sup>, concluded a Truce with the Duke of *Anjou*, to hold till the last of *August*, and likewise agreed on it's Expiration to be present at *Calais*, to prolong it. He set sail for *England* on the eighth of *July*; after whose Departure the People of those Parts almost totally revolted, nothing in *Aquitain* remaining to the *English*, but the Towns of *Bordeaux* and *Bayonne*.

Not coming to *Calais* <sup>e</sup> according to his Agreement, the War was again set on Foot, but at the earnest Intercession of the Pope's Legates, the Duke went thither, having a Commission bearing date the Twenty-first of *February* 1374, 49 *Edw. III* <sup>f</sup>, with *Simon* Bishop of *London*, *William* Earl of *Salisbury*, *John* Cobham, *Francis de Hale*, and *Arnold Savage*, Knights, *John de Shepeye*, and *Simon de Multon*, L.L.D. to treat with the King of *France* concerning a Peace; which, when they could not accomplish, they <sup>g</sup> agreed on a Truce to continue a Year, and engaged to return to *Bruges* again at the Feast of *All-Saints* ensuing, either to prolong it, or conclude a Peace. In pursuance whereof the Duke, on the Twentieth of *September* 1375, 49 *Edw. III*, was <sup>h</sup> commissioned, with *Simon* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Edmund* Earl of *Cambridge*, *William* Earl of *Salisbury*, Sir *William de Latimer*, and Sir *John de Cobham*, to treat with the King's Adversary *Charles* of *France*, or such Persons as he shall appoint, about all Disputes and Differences between them. And by another

B 4

<sup>d</sup> Ibid. p. 867.<sup>e</sup> Ibid. p. 870.<sup>f</sup> Rymer, T. 7. p. 59.<sup>g</sup> Barnes, p. 876.<sup>h</sup> Rymer, T. 7. p. 88.

ther <sup>i</sup> Commission of the same Date, they had Power to prorogue the Truce. He likewise was again <sup>k</sup> commissioned, on the 10th of *October* following, with the aforesaid Persons, to treat with the *French* King, with Power to himself alone to act as he thought proper. But this Meeting also produced no other Effect than prolonging the Truce, from the first to the last of *June* ensuing, and then to the first of *April* 1377. So that having <sup>l</sup> remained at *Bruges* all the Winter, and most Part of *Lent*, in great Pomp and State, he returned into *England*, in 50 *Edw.* III, when the King grown aged, made <sup>m</sup> him an Assistant in the Government, and bestowed on him, in special Tail, the Town and Castle of *Bergeriac*, in the Diocese of *Perigort*, in *France*, to hold in as ample a Manner, as *Henry* Duke of *Lancaster* ever enjoyed.

In this Station under the King, he is said, by our Historians, to have formed Designs to attain the Crown, but having offended the Parliament, and soon after quarrelling with the *Londoners*, which greatly increased the Peoples Displeasure, it deterred him from any such Attempt. Yet he carried himself very imperiously to all his Enemies, particularly to the Bishop of *Winchester* <sup>n</sup>, whom he deprived of his Temporalities, and prohibited him to come within twenty Miles of the Court; and the Earl of *March*, who, being commanded <sup>o</sup> to guard *Calais*, and the Marches adjoining, chose rather to resign his Office of Earl-

<sup>i</sup> Ibid.  
<sup>Wals.</sup> p. 187.  
<sup>o</sup> Ibid.

<sup>k</sup> Ibid. p. 91.

<sup>l</sup> *Barnes*, p. 879.

<sup>m</sup> T.

<sup>n</sup> *History of England*, Vol. 1. p. 232.

Earl-Marshal of *England*, than obey in so hazardous an Employ. This the Duke <sup>p</sup> gladly accepted of, and immediately conferred it on the Lord *Henry Peirce*, one of his intimate Friends. He also <sup>q</sup> obtained a Grant from the King, bearing date at *Westminster* the 28th of *February* 1377, 51 *Edw. III.* of a Chancery within his Duchy of *Lancaster*, in as ample Manner as the Earl of *Chester* had, in the County of *Chester*, and all things to be by him done in the said County, as in a County Palatine, and to send two Knights to Parliament, and two Burgeses for every Borough, in the said County. Likewise on the 12th of *June* following, he had Licence <sup>r</sup> for two Years, of coining Money in the City of *Baion*, Castle of *Guissen*, or in such Place as he pleased, in the Seneschaly of *Landerre*, of Gold, Silver, or other Metal, and of such Coinage, Alloy, and Tale, as he shall think fit, and the Profit thereof to accrue to himself.

In the beginning of this Year, (51 *Edw. III.*) favouring the preaching of *John Wycliff*, an eminent Divine, that maintained certain Tenets repugnant to the Doctrines of the *Romish* Church, and distasteful to the Majority of the People, he brought upon himself so general a Dislike, that the Consequences of it had like to have proved fatal to him. For *Wycliff* being convened before the Bishops in *St Paul's Cathedral*, the Duke not only assigned him four Assistants, but with the Lord *Peirce*, Earl-Marshal, accompanied him thither,

<sup>p</sup> *Snow's Annals*, pag. 272.

<sup>r</sup> *Ibid.* p. 148.

<sup>q</sup> *Rymer*, T. 7. p. 138.



thither, animating him and his Assistants as they went, not to be afraid or daunted at the Presence of the Bishops, or the Concourse or Clamors of the Multitude, since he was able to protect him from any Danger. When they came to *St Paul's* the Throng was so great, that hardly any Passage could be made into the Church; and the Earl-Marshal using some Violence among the People, the Bishop of *London* forbade him, saying, *That if he had known before how he would have played the Master in his Church, he would have hindered him from coming thither.* At which the Duke, being offended, angrily replied, *That the Marshal should execute his Authority, whether he would or not.* When they came to our Lady's Chapel, the Duke, Lords, and Bishops, sat down; and *Wycliff* being brought before them, the Lord Marshal desired him to sit, alledging, *He had much to answer to, and needed a convenient Seat.* This the Bishop of *London* opposed, affirming, *it was contrary to all Law and Reason, that a Person cited before his Ordinary should sit.* And thereupon angry Words, and Menaces, passed between the Lord Marshal, and the Bishop, the one presuming on the Duke's Authority, and the other standing on the Privileges of his Place and Function. The Duke took the Marshal's Part, and sharply reprov'd the Bishop, who as sharply replied again, which so enflamed the Duke, that in great Rage he swore, *he would pull down the Pride of him, and all the Bishops of England;* and turning to the Bishop, said, *Sir, you are too bold; and all in Confidence of your Parents,*  
who

*who yet will not be able to help you; they shall have enough to do to help themselves.* The Bishop answered, *That he ought to be bold in declaring the Truth; but that his Confidence was not in his Parents, nor in any mortal Man, but in the Living God alone, in whom he trusted.* Then the Duke whispered to one that sat next him, *how he had rather drag the Bishop out of the Church by the Hair of his Head, than take this at his Hands;* which Words being overheard by some of the Londoners, they cried out with a loud Voice, *That they would never see their Bishop so abused, but rather lose their Lives, than that any one should draw him out of his Church by the Hair.* This Contention dissolved the Meeting before Nine of the Clock, having only prohibited *Wycliff* from preaching or writing in Defence of those Articles objected to him.

The Day after, whilst the chief Citizens were consulting among themselves about the Insult offered their Bishop, and concerning a Bill lately put up in Parliament, designed to destroy their Liberties, and understanding that one of their People was imprisoned in the Lord Marshal's House, they took up Arms, and in great Fury breaking open the Gates, brought out the Prisoner in his Shackles, and set him at Liberty. But not finding the Lord Marshal, he being at Dinner with the Duke, in the House of *John de Ipres*, an eminent Merchant, they ran to assault the Duke's Palace, called the *Savoy*, which one of his Retinue observing, went immediately to the Place where he dined, and in great Fear told him, that infinite Numbers of armed Men  
were

were searching for him, and if he took not Care, that Day would be his last. The Duke hearing this leapt so hastily from his Oysters, that he hurt both his Legs against the Form; Wine was offered him, but he refused to drink for haste, and flying out a Back-Gate, with the Lord Marshal, took Barge at the *Thames*, and never ceased rowing till they reached *Kennington*, where the young Prince of *Wales*, and his Mother, then lay, to whom they grievously complained of this Outrage offered them by the Citizens.

In the mean Time the incensed Multitude, coming to the *Savoy*, met a Priest, who, more boldly than wisely, daring to shew a Dislike of their Proceeding, they in great Fury cried out, *This is Peirce the Traytor to England, his Speech betrays him though in Disguise*, and immediately they fell upon him, and killed him. Nor had the Tumult in all Likelihood been appeased, without some considerable Damage, if the Bishop of *London* had not, on the first Notice, left his Dinner, and went to the *Savoy*, where admonishing the People to be mindful of the solemn Season of *Lent*, with great Reason and Persuasion, he so pacified them, that they forbore to assault the Duke's House, whom in their Fury they had certainly destroyed, as also the Earl-Marshal, if they had met with them. But to shew their Displeasure, they hung up the Duke's Arms reversed, as a Traytor's, in all the principal Streets of the City. And one of his Retinue riding by with a Plate of his Arms about his Neck, they flung him from his Horse, tore away  
his

his Cognizance, and had undoubtedly served him as the Priest, if the Mayor had not come opportunely to his Rescue.

Likewise Rhimes and Libels (those secret Stings of Discontent) were spread daily about the City, to defame the Duke, and make him odious to the People; for which, after Matters in some Degree were pacified, he caused the Authors to be excommunicated by the Bishops. And notwithstanding these harsh Proceedings, very incommodious as well to the King as himself, yet the Commons being assembled in Parliament, were induced to grant a Tax (to be disposed of according to the Occasions of the King and Kingdom) perfectly new; every Person, Man, and Woman, within the Kingdom, above fourteen Years of Age, being to pay Four-pence a Head, those that lived on Alms only excepted, The Clergy likewise granted Twelve-pence a Head for every Person beneficed, and Four-pence for all other religious Persons, an unknown Aid never granted to any King before, but a Precedent to the following Reigns; in the next of which it caused the greatest popular Insurrection, that ever was seen in the Kingdom. And so the Parliament ended, but not the Duke's Displeasure against the City: For the Mayor and Aldermen were brought before the King at *Shene*, and advised to submit themselves to the Duke, and crave Pardon for their grievous Offences. They protested they could not stop the Rage of the Multitude, who committed those Insolencies, and beseeching the King not to punish them who were innocent and ignorant of the



the Fact; promised the Duke to use all Means that they could to bring the Malefactors, and oblige them to satisfy his Honour. On this answer, they were sent from the Court, and shortly after were put from their Places by the Duke's Power: Sir *Nicholas Brember* was made Mayor instead of *Adam Staple*, and other Aldermen put in their Places. The King was desirous to have reconciled them to his Son, but Sickness disabled him from his Design, and Death shortly after forced him to leave it to his Successor.

The Duke's Nephew, King *Richard* the Second, (only Son of the *Black Prince*) succeeded his Grandfather in the Throne of *England*, June 21. 1377. He was eleven Years old when he began his Reign; but there appeared in him so great a Pregnancy of Wit, above his Years, and so sweet a Disposition, set off with an admirable Beauty, and Proportion of Body, that the People were enamour'd with him, and as if the Virtues of both his immediate Ancestors were united in him, received him for their King, with universal Joy and Satisfaction. The first Action he undertook was the Reconciliation of the Duke of *Lancaster* with the City of *London*, in which he shewed a Prudence and Moderation much above his Years. The Citizens had made an Address to him the Day before his Grandfather's Decease, assuring him of their Service and Fidelity, if their present King should die, and petitioning his Highness to mediate between the Duke of *Lancaster* and them. He return'd them not only Promises of his Love and Favour to their City, but of his Endeavours to effect their Desires, and accord-

accordingly prevail'd on his Uncle to submit himself to his Decision, of which he gave the Citizens immediate Notice, and that he expected the like Submission from them. Whereupon they sent certain Aldermen to the young King, (then at *Sheen* near *Richmond*) in the Name of the whole City, and were reconciled to the Duke, both to his and their Satisfaction. And, in Favour to them the King released Sir *Peter de la Mare* from his Imprisonment.

The only Thing which threaten'd a Disturbance to the Nation, being thus compos'd, Preparations were made for the Coronation of the King, in the most splendid Manner, on *St. Swinthin's Day*, 1377. <sup>s</sup> *John*, the King's eldest Uncle, under the Stile of *John, King of Castile and Leon*; and Duke of *Lancaster*, claim'd to be Steward of *England*, in Right of his Earldom of *Leicester*; and as he was Duke of *Lancaster*, to bear the King's chief Sword, called *Curtana*; and as Earl of *Lincoln*, to be Carver, which were confirm'd to him and his Assignes, the Earls of *Derby* and *Stafford*. The Duke then, in great State, held the King's high Court of Stewardship, in the *Whitehall* of the King's Palace at *Westminster*, next to the Chapel of the said Palace, and decided the Claims of such who were to attend at the Coronation, of which this Account is given in *Rymer's Fædera*, <sup>t</sup> and being in few Hands, I shall give a brief Relation of it. After Dinner, the Peers, Knights, Mayors, Sheriffs, Aldermen, and many Citizens of *London*, on Horseback, decently equipt, met near the *Tower of London*;

<sup>s</sup> *Speed's Chronicle*, p. 603.    <sup>t</sup> P. 157, &c.

and

and, after a small Stay the King came forth from the *Tower*, clad in white Robes, attended by a great Number of Peers, Statesmen, Knights, Esquires, in their Habits, the Serjeants of Arms, and other armed Men preceding; and there, being met with Trumpets and other Musick, they passed thro' the publick Streets to that noble one, call'd *the Chepe of London*, thence to *Fleetstreet*, and so directly to the Palace of *Westminster*; and coming to the high Marble Table in the Hall, the King asked for Wine, of which he drank, as did also the Standers by. And then he departed to his Chamber, where he supp'd, and having bath'd, went to Rest.

In the Morning the King heard divine Service, and Mass, cloth'd in most clean Vestments, having Sandals or Buskins upon his Feet, then descended into the Hall, attended as before, and being placed in his royal Chair, the Prelates, and Clergy, prepared the Ceremonial of the Procession. The Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and other Prelates, were in their Pontificalibus, and the rest of the Clergy in black Copes. *William de Latymer*, as Almoner, cover'd the Way (which led from the Hall to the Pulpit of *St. Peter's Church at Westminster*) with red striped Cloth, for the King, and others to walk on. The King was preceded by the Duke of *Lancaster*, carrying the chief Sword or Curtana; *Edmund*, Earl of *March*, the second Sword, and Spurs, in Right of the Earl of *Pembroke*; the Earl of *Warwick*, the third Sword, in his own Right; *Edmund*, Earl of *Cambridge*, one Rod, and *Thomas of Wodestok* the other, on each a Dove. A Bishop  
of

of *St Davids*, Chancellor, the consecrated *Chalice*,  
*H. Bishop of Worcester* Treasurer, a Paten, &c.  
 The King being seated in the Chair at *St Peter's*  
*Church*, *Richard*, Earl of *Arundel*, having in his  
 Hands the royal Crown, by the King's Command;  
*William*, Earl of *Suffolk*, the royal Scepter, with  
 the Cross at Top, and a precious Garment; and  
*William*, Earl of *Salisbury*, such another Vest-  
 ment, which the King put on afterwards, having  
 received the Sacrament, and heard Mass, and a  
 Sermon preach'd by the Archbishop, he was  
 crown'd, the following Lords and great Men do-  
 ing their Homage, viz.

*John*, D. of *Lancaster*,

*Edm. E. of March*,

*Will. E. of Suffolk*,

*Hen. de Percy*,

*John de Nevill*,

*Will. Audele de Helegh*,

*Roger de Scales*,

*John la Warre*,

*John de Montagu*,

*Hen. de Grey de Wylton*,

*Thomas de Berkele*,

*Ralph de Cromwel*,

*Ralph*, Baron of *Greystok*,

*Smebron de Curton*,

*Edm. Earl of Kent*,

*Rich. Earl of Arundel*,

*Hugh*, Earl of *Stafford*,

*Tho. de Roos de Hamlak*,

*Almery de St Amand*,

*Will. Zouche de Haryng-*

*worth*,

*Gilb. Talbot*,

*Roger le Straunge de*  
*Knockyn*,

*Walt. Fitz-Walter*,

*John de Welynton*,

*Michael de la Pole*,

*Will. Botreux*,

*Will. de Furnival*,

*John*, E. of *Richmond*,

*Tho. Beauchamp*, E. of

*Warwick*,

*Will. E. of Sarum*,

*Ralph Bassett de Drayton*,

*Regind. Grey de Ruthyn*,

*Rob. de Wylughby*,

*John Lovel*,

*Will. de Bardolf*,

*John de Buttetourt*,

*Philip Darcy*,

*H. la Zouch de Foulborn*,

*R. Seymour de Somerset*,

*Archibald de Grelly*, Cap-

tain of *Bouche*.



The Ceremony being over, they return'd into the Hall, and the King being sat, before Dinner, he created his Uncle, *Thomas de Wodestok*, Earl of *Buckingham*, *Henry de Percy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, *John de Moubray* of *Axholm*, Earl of *Nottingham*, and *Guischard d'Angle*, Earl of *Huntingdon*. He also knighted those following Persons at the same Time, viz. *Edward*, Son of *Edmond* Earl of *Kent*; *John*, Son of *Thomas Roos de Hamelake*; *Robert de Grey de Rotherfield*; *Richard*, Son of *Gilbert Talbot*; *Gerard*, Son of *Warin de Lisle*; *Michael*, Son of *Michael de la Pole*; *Richard de Ponynge*; *Robert de Haryngton*, and *Thomas de la Mare*; giving to each large Presents.

It was observed <sup>u</sup> of the Duke of *Lancaster*, and the Lord *Percy*, who rode before the King thro' the City, that they behaved themselves with so much Obligingness and Respect to the Citizens, as demonstrated, that the late Reconciliation between them was real and hearty.

Immediately after the Coronation, in respect of the King's tender Years, <sup>x</sup> the Government was committed to the Care of the Duke of *Lancaster*, the Earl of *Cambridge* his Brother, and certain Bishops, who were as well to provide for the Security and Happiness of the Nation, as the Education of the King. He was also <sup>y</sup> retain'd to serve the King, with 500 Men of Arms, 500 Archers, 500 Bannerets, and 134 Esquires. Among these were Sir *John Norris*, <sup>z</sup> *Richard Hoo*, Sir *Edmund*

<sup>u</sup> Life of *Richard II.* in *History of England*, Vol. 1. p. 237.

<sup>x</sup> *Ibid.* p. 238. and *Froiss.* p. 196. <sup>y</sup> *Ex Autogr. penes Cler. Pol.*

<sup>z</sup> *Rymer's Fœdera*, Vol. 7. p. 186, 199.

*mund de la Pole, John Wake de Clyston, John de Asheton, Walter Blount, Sir Thomas Beaumont, Sir Michael de la Pole, John de Blount de Beveresbrok, in Com. Wilts, Knight, Sir John Bottiler, Sir Philip le Despencer, William de Ufford, Earl of Suffolk, Sir John de Berkley, and others, who had severally the King's Letters of Protection to hold till Michaelmas, going with his Uncle John, King of Castile, beyond the Seas.*

However, I don't find that the Duke went out of England in the first Year of the King. But, as *Walsingham* writes <sup>a</sup>, shortly after the Coronation, discerning the King to be wholly sway'd by the Advice of young Heads, and fearing, that whatsoever happen'd amiss, might be imputed to him; he desired Leave to retire, promising, if Need were, to repair again to the Court with all his Power. At that Time, he was under some Discontent, the King having taken his Castle of *Hereford* from him, where he intended to reside, and for that Purpose, begged Timber from the Gentlemen of those Parts, for the repairing and fortifying of it. Whereupon he made the Castle of *Kenelworth*, in *Warwickshire*, his chief Residence; and tho' he kept at that distance from the Court, and before he retired, had found the People not fully contented with the Council which had been assign'd by Parliament to be join'd be the King's Officers in the Affairs of the Government; he thro' a Desire of securing the Nation from their Enemies, <sup>b</sup> requested that the Money granted by the Parliament for that End, might be put in his Hands, and he would take Care to

C 2

guard

<sup>a</sup> *Rymer, ibid. p. 196, 197.*

<sup>b</sup> *Walsingham, ibid.*

guard the Coasts from the Incurfions of the *French*, and their Confederates, for the succeeding Year. This was <sup>c</sup> opposed by some of the Council, but was at length consented to, and the Duke immediately hired nine Ships from *Baion*, to join the Fleet he was setting out with all Expedition; which Ships, in their Voyage hither, <sup>d</sup> encounter'd the *Spanish* Fleet, and took 14 of their Ships laden'd with Wine and other Merchandize. After which, Part of the Fleet he set out, <sup>e</sup> took Possession of the Haven of *Chierburgh*, whereby an easy Entrance was made for the *English* at all Times into *Normandy*, and present occasion given to annoy the *French*. It was put into Possession of the *English*, by the King of *Navarre*, for a Sum of Money lent him, (being at variance with the King of *France*) and thereupon a Confederacy was also establish'd with him.

In 2. R. II. he was <sup>f</sup> contituted the King's Lieutenant in the Marches of *Scotland*. Also the same Year being informed, <sup>g</sup> that if he would go into *Britanny* with an Army, several Forts and Castles would yield to him, he committed himself, (as <sup>h</sup> *Walsingham* writes) with a great Fleet of Men and Ships to the Sea, able to oppose his Enemies, had God pleased to have favoured him.

After his Arrival in *Britanny*, (where Sir Robert *Knolles* had burnt several Towns, but not without the Loss of many Men) conceiving *St Maloes* easy to be taken, he set down before it, which so alarm'd

<sup>c</sup> *History of England*, Vol. 1. p. 240.    <sup>d</sup> *Walsingham*, p. 210.  
<sup>e</sup> *History of England*, ut antea.    <sup>f</sup> *Rot. Scot.* 2. R. II. m. 3.  
<sup>g</sup> *Froissart*, p. 198.    <sup>h</sup> P. 214.

alarm'd those in the Town, that they offer'd to capitulate, provided their Houses might not be fired, or Effects plunder'd, which the Duke would not grant; and this so irritated the besieged, that they took fresh Courage, fortifying, (as far as they were able) the Town. When the Duke gave Orders for the assaulting it, he stood at a Distance the better to observe their Motions, that every one might receive his due Reward. But the *English* losing most of their best Men, and having spent much Treasure, rais'd the Siege, and the Duke drew off ill satisfied with the Event, which caused him no little Dis-esteem and Envy at Home. In order to this Expedition, he was the on 12th of *June*, 1379. 2 R. II. <sup>i</sup> constituted Commander in chief of all the King's Forces, both by Sea and Land, employ'd against *France*, with Powers to appoint his Officers, confer Honours, grant Letters of Conduct, raise Contributions, coin Money, make Truces, &c. with other large Privileges.

Whilst he was on the said Expedition, there happen'd an Accident, which likewise lost him the good Will of the *Londoners*. The Earl of *Denia* <sup>k</sup> being taken Prisoner in *Spain*, when Prince *Edward* establish'd *Don Pedro* in that Realm; and *Robert Hawl*, and *John Shakell*, who took him, being rewarded for their Valour with the Custody of him, the Earl made an Agreement with them for his Liberty, and left his Son with them as an Hostage till the Ransom was paid, which not being satisfied, he remain'd with them many Years. The Duke of *Lancaster*, (who in right of his Wife was King of *Castile*)

C 3

thought

<sup>i</sup> Rymer, Tom. 7. p. 218.      <sup>k</sup> *Hist. of Eng. præd.* p. 241.



thought the Restitution of the Earl of *Denia's* Son, might oblige his Father to engage in his Interest, and make a Party among his Friends for him. Wherefore the Duke sent to Mr *Hawl*, and *Shakell*, in the King's Name, to deliver up their Prisoner, and they obstinately refusing, he caused them to be imprisoned in the *Tower*. The Gentlemen yet kept him; but after some Time made their Escape out of the *Tower*, and got to the Sanctuary at *Westminster*, where they hoped to find more Liberty, and kinder Usage. The Constable of the *Tower*, Sir *Allan Buxhall*, a great Friend of the Duke's, much troubled at this Escape, contrived with the Lord *Latimer*, and Sir *Ralph Ferrers*, two of the Duke's Friends, to take them by Force out of the Sanctuary; and, accordingly with a sufficient Strength of armed Men entred the *Abbey-Church*, when the *Monks* were at Prayers, and seiz'd on the two Gentlemen. Mr *Hawl* made some Opposition, and was slain in the Choir, with a *Monk*, and his Servant, who stood up for his Assistance; but Mr *Shakell*, they carried away with them to the *Tower*, from whence he at length got his Freedom, by resigning his Prisoner to them, on Condition that he should receive an Hundred Marks *per annum*, and that the King should found a Chantry of five Priests, to pray for the Souls of Mr *Hawl*, and his Servant. This Violation of the Sanctuary was so highly resented by the Archbishop, Bishop of *London*, and other Bishops, that they excommunicated all that were Assistants in the Murder, except the King, and Duke of *Lancaster*; and the Bishop of *London* pronounced the Excommunication every *Sunday*.

day, *Wednesday*, and *Friday*, for a long Time after. The King looking on it, as a Reflexion on himself, and the Duke, sent to the Bishop to cease it, who not regarding the Order was summoned to *Windsor*, but would not obey: whereupon the Duke, in a Rage told the King, that he would fetch the Bishop by Force, in spite of those Rebels the *Londoners*. Which Words, being related to the Citizens, they were extreemly offended, and to make the Duke odious, gave out, that he was privy to the Murder.

On this Displeasure against the *Londoners*, the Parliament met at *Gloucester*, on the 20th of *October*, and among other Matters, it was enacted, " That all Persons, that should report any " slanderous Words against any Bishop, or " Nobleman, should be imprison'd till he could " procure the Author of such Calumnies." The Archbishop complained of the Violation of the Sanctuary at *Westminster*, and desired a Course might be taken to secure the Liberties of Sanctuaries; but the Nobles objecting the voluntary Abuses of them by the Clergy, in protecting Debtors, Accountants, &c. the Archbishop dropp'd the Motion, least they should be deprived of those Advantages.

On the seventh of *March* 1380, 3 *Rich. II.*, he had <sup>1</sup> Licence from the King to coin Gold and Silver, by *Pelegrin de Ser*, or such Person, or Persons, as to him shall seem proper, in the City of *Baion*, and *Guissen*, or in any other Place within the Seneschaly of *Landerre*, for two Years, to commence from the first of *August* last. In

C 4

the

<sup>1</sup> Rymer. T. 7. P. 244.

the same Year, on that Trial by Combat, which should have solemnly been performed betwixt Sir *John de Annesley*, Knt. and *Thomas Katerington*, Esq; the said *Annesley* having accused *Katerington* for selling the Castle of *St Saviour's*, in *Normandy*, to the *French*. The Duke of *Lancaster* discerning that *Katerington*, by frivolous Exceptions, endeavoured to avoid the Combat, swore, *That if he did not perform what he ought to do therein, according to the Law of Arms, he should be drawn to the Gallows as a Traytor.* Which Expressions (as *Walsingham* writes <sup>m</sup>) gained him so much Respect from the People, that it utterly wiped off the Stain he had undergone for his former Miscarriages.

In 4 *Rich. II*, he obtained a Grant <sup>n</sup> of the Marriage of *Mary*, one of the Daughters and Heirs to *Humphry de Bohun*, late Earl of *Hereford*, valued at 5000 Marks; in part of Satisfaction of a greater Sum due to him for his Wages of War, in order to her being a Wife for *Henry de Bolingbroke*, Earl of *Derby*, his Son. On the sixth of *September* the same Year, he was the first <sup>o</sup> commissioned to amend and correct such Matters, as were done in Breach of the Truce made between King *Edward*, and *David de Bruys*, King of *Scotland*, with Power to punish Delinquents, &c. And soon after went with a great Army into the North, and lay on the Borders to treat with the *Scots*. Which Negotiation lasted long, ending in a Truce the *Easter* following. The Duke was zealous to promote a firm

<sup>m</sup> P. 245. n. 20. and 246. n. 10 and 20.      <sup>n</sup> Pat. 4 R. II.  
<sup>p</sup> 1, m. 26.      <sup>o</sup> Rymer, T. 7, p. 268.

a firm Peace at Home, believing he had an Opportunity of recovering his Wife's Right to the Crown of *Spain*, there being a Breach, at that Time, between the King of *Portugal*, and the Usurper. He was impowered to drive out the *Scots* from the northern Parts of *England*, viz. *Westmorland*, *Cumberland*, and *Penrith*, and for the Hostilities they had committed, to make Repairs; but they, by Insinuations of coming to a Peace, and idle Delusions, (as *Walsingham* <sup>p</sup> writes) induced him, without doing any thing memorable against the *Scots*, to return home, having concluded a Truce, as before-mentioned.

It is said, that on his March back <sup>q</sup>, Sir *Matthew Redman*, Governor of *Berwick*, refused him Entrance, though his Provisions lay there; which so incensed him, that he afterwards expostulated on it very warmly with the Earl of *Northumberland*, Sir *Matthew* being his Deputy in that Command. But the Earl excused himself, by alledging <sup>r</sup>, that he held that Charge by Virtue of the King's Warrant. And to appease the Quarrel, the King was necessitated to take it on himself; imputing the Fault to the Clerk who drew it up.

During his Absence in *Scotland*, happened that dangerous Insurrection by the Commons of *Kent*, headed by *Jack Straw* and *Watt Tyler*, who, entering the City of *London* <sup>s</sup>, amongst other Outrages, burnt the Duke's House, called the *Savoy*, with much rich Furniture, and other things of great Value therein; as also his Characters,

<sup>p</sup> P. 254.  
<sup>p</sup> 260.

<sup>q</sup> *Freiffart*, p. 265.

<sup>r</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>s</sup> *Wals.*



ters, Evidences, and Writings. Which House <sup>t</sup> was then reputed the fairest Structure in *England*, and had been built from the Ground by him. Having therefore sudden Advertisement <sup>u</sup> of this Mischief, it is said he thought it best to make Peace with the *Scots* for two Years, and so did before Intelligence came to them of what had thus befallen.

On this Outrage committed at the *Savoy*, much Apprehension there was <sup>w</sup>, that those rude People would have persisted in their Fury towards him, and have destroyed his Castle at *Leicester*, with all he had therein. Whereupon the Keeper of his Wardrobe hastened thither from *London*, and loaded in Carts what he could suddenly remove out of the Castle, which he brought to the Abbot of *Leicester*, there to be secured: But the Abbot, terrified with Fear, lest his Reception of them might endanger the Destruction of the Monastery by the enraged Multitude, refused to suffer them to be unloaded there; so that they were constrained to carry them to *St Mary's Church*, near the Castle.

The Lady *Constance*, his Wife, being also terrified <sup>x</sup>, made what Haste she could to *Pontfract* Castle for Refuge, expecting Security there. But when she got thither, those who were their own Servants durst not permit her to come in: so that she was constrained to go seven Miles by Torch-Light to *Knareburgh-Castle*, where she continued till the Insurrection ceased, and that the Duke returned.

Moreover,

<sup>t</sup> *Knighon*, p. 2635.      <sup>u</sup> *Walsing.* p. 297.  
p. 2640.      <sup>x</sup> *Ibid.* p. 2641.

<sup>w</sup> *Knighon*,

Moreover, on his return the Earl of *Northumberland* would not suffer him to come where he was, nor to enter into the Castle of *Bamburgh*, where he had left his Family, during his abode in the Marches of *Scotland*, neither to permit him to make Use of those Provisions he had caused to be prepared there, which occasioned great Discontent from him towards that Earl. Discerning <sup>y</sup> therefore in what Distress he was, and that many, who made fair Shews of good Will towards him, were perfidious; as also that divers of his own Party forsook him. And hearing that the King had been so wrought on, that for very fear he offered to deliver him up to the People; he desired that the *Scots* (who had made large Offers to him) would give him safe Conduct, to come into their Country, and with Freedom to return when he thought it convenient, which they readily did. Thereupon he went thither, and coming to *Edinburgh*, was honourably received by the <sup>z</sup> Earls of *Douglas*, and *Dunbar*, who staying there, entertained him at their own Charge.

Another of our Historians relates <sup>a</sup>, that the *Scots*, tho' vexed the Duke had, by his Policy in making Peace, debarred them from a great Advantage on *England* by the Insurrection, yet they offered him 20000 Men to guard himself against the Rebels, if he purposed to return Home; or if he thought it better to stay till the Storm was spent, Holy-Rood-House should be prepared for his Accommodation. The Duke  
accepted

<sup>y</sup> *Wals.* p. 297.  
of *England* præd. p. 248.

<sup>z</sup> *Knighton*, p. 2642.

<sup>a</sup> *History*

accepted the latter Proposition, and abode in *Scotland* some Months extraordinary. This gave the tumultuous Multitude occasion to report, That the Duke of *Lancaster* was gone over to the *Scots*, and had obtained of them an Army to invade and conquer *England*; but as soon as the Rebellion was allayed, the Duke cleared himself of that foul Asperſion, by ſending a Meſſage to the King, to give an Account of the Reaſons of his Stay, aſſuring his Maſteſty, that if he had any Suſpicion of his Diſloyalty, he would either come to him without one <sup>b</sup> Knight, Eſquire, and Groom: or rather than any Trouble ſhould happen to the Realm, he would go into Exile, and never return. But the King much reſenting his hard Condition, wrote a conſolatory Letter to him, dated at *Chelmsford*, July 5, 1381, 5 *Rich. II.* c, ſignifying, That whereas a Rumor had been ſpread of his Diſaffection, and the King inclining to ſecure his Perſon, whenſoever, by his Command, he ſhall repair to him; he not only gives him Aſſurances of his Affection to him, but orders him to come through the middle of his Kingdom, or ſuch Parts, and with ſuch a Number of armed Men, as ſhall ſeem beſt for his Defence againſt the Malice of the People. And at the ſame Time ſignified to *Henry de Peircy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, and to *John Lord Nevil*, That whereas he has ordered them to accompany *John King of Caſtile* and *Leon*, and Duke of *Lancaster*, who is coming to him, he therefore aſſigns them to raiſe ſuch Archers, and other armed Men, in the Counties of *Northumberland*,

<sup>b</sup> *Walf.* p. 298.

<sup>c</sup> *Rymer's Fœd. T.* 7. p. 319.

*thumberland, York, and Nottingham*, or further, as shall seem most convenient to the said Duke, and to accompany him as his Guards. But when the Earl of *Northumberland* repaired <sup>d</sup> to him accordingly, he refused his Attendance. The like Command the King sent to all the Sheriffs of the North. Whereupon he was safely conducted to *York*, and so to *Nottingham* and *Leicester* <sup>e</sup>, sometimes attended with no less than 1000 Lances, besides Archers, and others; and, at length, came to the King at *Reading*, who received him with much Joy and Honour. On the 18th of *August* the King appointed him his Justiciary, to <sup>f</sup> enquire, on the Oaths of good and lawful Men, in any County in *England*, through which he should happen to pass, after such Persons as were concerned in the late Insurrection, commanding all Sheriffs to summon such good Men, as shall be necessary for trying them; with Power to punish all Delinquents according to their Demerits.

Soon after his Arrival, the Duke <sup>g</sup> complained of the Earl of *Northumberland's* Usage; and that Sir *Matthew Redman*, Governor of *Berwick* under the Earl, had denied his Admittance into that Garrison by the Earl's Order, when he was on the Borders of *Scotland*. The Duke accused the Earl, in the King's Presence, of Ingratitude, Unfaithfulness, and Disobedience. The Earl being a Man of an high and angry Spirit, burst out into foul and reproachful Language against the Duke; and was so very furious, that

<sup>d</sup> *Knights*, p. 2643.

<sup>e</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>f</sup> *Rymer's Fœd.* p. 323.

<sup>g</sup> *History of England præd.* p. 248.



that though the King commanded him Silence, yet he would not hold in his reproachful Language. Whereupon the King commanded him to be arrested and imprisoned; but the Earls of *Warwick* and *Suffolk* undertaking for his Appearance at the next Parliament, he was left at Liberty, and returned into his own Country. About the beginning of *November*, the Parliament met at *Westminster*, and the Duke of *Lancaster* and Earl of *Northumberland* attended it; but with very large Retinues of armed Men, going every Day to the Parliament-House with their Guards, to the Amazement of the Citizens. The Quarrel between these two great Personages was first debated by the Houses, and took up a long Time before it was fully decided by the King, who reconciled them.

After this, though *Walsingham* places it in 1381, the Duke, with his Brother *Edmund* of *Langley*, went with some Forces to the Aid of *John* King of *Portugal*, against *John* King of *Castile*, who challenged his Kingdom in Right of *Beatrice* his Wife, (by whom he had no Issue). And, by the Assistance of the *English*, a memorable Victory was obtained over the *Spaniards*<sup>b</sup>, in which they lost 10000 Men; and the *English* grew so famous there, that both the Kings of *Portugal* and *Castile* were jealous of their Power, and conveyed them home at their common Charge. The Poet *Harding*<sup>i</sup> gives the following Character of their Deportment in the Battle, in these old Rhimes.

*Att*

<sup>b</sup> *Ypodigm. Neustriæ*, p. 534, in Anno 1381.  
cap. 184.

<sup>i</sup> *Harding*,

*Att whiche Battaill John of Gaunt indede,  
 And his Brother Edmund then faught full sore;  
 Were never twoo better Knightes than thei indede,  
 That better faught upon a Feld afore:  
 It was but Grace that thei escaped thore.  
 They putte themselves so far furth, ay in Prees,  
 That wounded were thei both full sore, no lees.*

On September 12, 7 R. II, he was constituted  
<sup>k</sup> Captain-General in *France* and *Flanders*, the  
 Bishop of *Norwich* going to the Assistance of  
 Pope *Urban*, against Pope *Clement*, and entering  
*Flanders*, had taken several Towns, so that the  
*French* made Head against them. But before  
 the Duke of *Lancaster* could hasten over with  
 his Forces, the Bishop had lost all he had won,  
 and the Expedition was at an end <sup>l</sup>. The King,  
 to shew his Resentment of the Bishop's Con-  
 duct, seized on his Temporalities, and impris-  
 oned Sir *Thomas Trivit*, and Sir *William Elm-*  
*ham*, concerned with him.

On November 4, 1383, 7 R. II <sup>m</sup>, the King  
 commissions *John* King of *Castile*, &c. *Henry*  
 Earl of *Derby*, and others, to treat with those  
 commissioned by the Earl of *Flanders* and *Flem-*  
*ings*, about all Differences, and to redress the  
 same. As also <sup>n</sup> to treat with his Adversary the  
 King of *France*. About *Christmas* the Commis-  
 sioners on both Sides met, the Dukes of *Berry*  
 and *Burgundy*, the Bishop of *Laon*, and the  
 Chancellor of *France*, being for the *French*.  
 Three

<sup>k</sup> *Rymer*, Vol. VII, p. 408.

<sup>m</sup> *Rymer*, *ibid.* p. 412.

<sup>l</sup> *Hist. of Engl.* Vol. I, p. 251.

<sup>n</sup> *Ibid.* p. 413.

Three Weeks or more ° were spent in Propositions on both Sides, but the Demands of the *French* were so extravagant, and so obstinately persisted in, especially for having *Aquitain*, *Calais*, and some other Castles, the *English* then held in *France*, that a Truce was only agreed on for ten Months, and at the end thereof to meet again to conclude a Peace, and so the *English* returned.

After which, Preparations having been made to invade *Scotland* <sup>p</sup>, the Duke, with his Brother the Earl of *Buckingham*, went with a great Army thither, and wasted all the Country with Fire and Sword, as far as *Edinburgh*, out of which the Inhabitants fled with their Goods, to save themselves from this Torrent. The Duke of *Burgundy* hearing of this, immediately dispatched an Embassy into *Scotland*, to compose the Breach; but the *Scots*, who had received so much Damage, were so hardly brought to sit down without Revenge, that the *English* Army did almost as much Harm by their long Continuance on the Borders to their Countrymen, as they had done to the *Scots*, before a Truce was concluded, which was only for the same Time, as that made with the *French*.

The Duke, before he returned, by Indenture dated *April 23*, 1384, 7 *Rich. II* <sup>q</sup>, agreed with *Henry de Peirce*, Earl of *Northumberland*, to stay in the Counties of *Northumberland* and *Cumberland*, or in the Marches, from the first of *May*, to the 11th of *June* next, to defend the Marches,

° *History of England*, p. 252.  
p. 425, 427.

<sup>p</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>q</sup> *Rymer*, *ibid.*

Marches, the Town of *Berwick*, and the Castle of *Carlisle*, for which he was to receive 4000 Pounds; and the King at *Sarum*, 16th of *May* following, confirm'd the Agreement.

The King calling a Parliament the same Year at *Salisbury*, one <sup>r</sup> *John Latimer*, an *Irish* Carmelite Friar appeared, and brought an Information against the Duke of *Lancaster*, that he had a Design to destroy the King, and usurp his Crown. The Accuser <sup>s</sup> discover'd the Day, Place, and other Circumstances, to induce a Belief of the pretended Intention, and took his Oath on the Sacrament, (which that Day he received) that no one Word in the Scroll was untrue. The Duke came into the Presence of the King, immediately after he had received the Accusation, and not suspecting what had happen'd, seeing the King displeas'd, withdrew. The King having taken Advice of his two Chaplains about it, sent for the Duke, and told him how, and by whom, he was charg'd of High-Treason against his Person. The Duke knowing his Innocency, seem'd not concern'd, and gave such an Answer to every Particular, as satisfied the King, yet he desired the Friar might be put into safe Custody till he should clear himself of what he had charg'd him with. Whereupon he was committed to the Lord *Holland*, the King's Brother, in the *Tower*. When the Day of Trial was to be, and the Duke was to clear himself, and convict the Friar of false Accusations, in a publick Judicature, the Lord *John Holland*, (if one may believe that so villanous an Act could be done by Men of Ho-

<sup>r</sup> *History of England*, p. 252.

<sup>r</sup> *Speed's Chron.* p. 609.



nour) and Sir *Henry Green*, are reported, the Night before to have enter'd the Friar's Lodgings, and cruelly put him to Death with their own Hands, by hanging him up by the Neck and Privy-Members, and laying a great Stone on his Breast, which broke his Back. And, as if they had done this by publick Authority, drew his dead Body thro' the Streets the next Day, as being deservedly punish'd as a Traitor. All our Historians relate this Story, agreeing, that tho' it rid the Duke of a false Accuser, as was thought till the Friar was so illegally put to Death, yet it render'd his Innocency more suspicious, and many believ'd him really guilty, who before thought him falsely accused.

The King, however, repos'd that Confidence in him, that at *Sarum*, on the 27th of *May*, 1384. 7 R. II. he commissoned him, with *Thomas*, Earl of *Buckingham* and *Essex*, Constable of *England*, to treat with his Adversary the King of *France*, as also with the Earl of *Flanders*, and the *Flemings*, about a Truce, Cessation of Arms, &c. Also on the 11th of *June* following, he constituted him Lieutenant of *Picardy*, and Captain-General in *France* and *Flanders*. Thereupon the Duke pass'd the Seas with a great Equipage, to endeavour to gain a Peace, or renew the Truce for a longer Time. He remain'd a great while there, but at length return'd with the News only of a Continuation of the Truce till *May*, which was generally meanly thought of, as not worth the Time and Expence consum'd about it, being Fifty Thousand Marks of Silver, as *Walsingham* writes.

On *November* 12th, the Parliament met at *Westminster*, and whilst it was sitting, the *Scots* besieg'd and took the Town and Castle of *Berwick*, not so much by their Valour, as by the Bribery of the Governor, who being put in by the Earl of *Northumberland*, he was much blamed. The Duke of *Lancaster*, who bore ill Will to the Earl, so aggravated the Loss of the Town, that he had almost perswaded the Members of both Houses, that it was a treasonable Conspiracy in him, and his Deputy, to resign it to them; but the King observing the Passion and Prejudice of his Uncle, permitted the Earl to go down to recover it, tho' many of the Nobles were for imprisoning him. Whereupon he bestirred himself so briskly among his Friends in the *North*, that he soon got an Army, and forced the *Scots* to surrender it, which set him right in the good Opinion both of King and Parliament.

'Tis observ'd by *Walsingham*, that in 8 R. II. the King being young, and guided by ill Counsel, he conspired the Death of the Duke of *Lancaster*. And others of our Historians agree, that being the chief about the King, he was the greatest Obstruction to the ambitious Aims of his Favourites, who growing impatient of Delays, thought on all Ways to remove him out of the World. These cunning Flatterers, having by forged Crimes and Accusations, incens'd the King against him, contrived to have him suddenly arrested and tried before Judge *Trisilian*; who, being perfectly framed to their Interests, would be ready enough upon such Evidence as they should produce to condemn him. But these Consulta-

tions were not so closely managed but they came to the Duke's Ear; who knowing that Innocency in such Cases could not be guard sufficient against their bloody Designs, fled to *Pomfret* Castle, and there strongly fortify'd himself against his Adversaries, drawing all his Friends to his Assistance. The Duke, indeed was not very well belov'd by the People, yet the King's Favourites were generally so odious, that the greatest Endearment to the Nation was to oppose them: so that, if the King had persisted in his Anger against the Duke, here was a Foundation laid for a Civil War between his Favourites and Nobility. This the Princess of *Wales*, the King's Mother presently observ'd, and foresaw the Effects it would produce; and therefore, in her own Person, undertook a Mediation between the King and Duke; and to make a Peace between them; and tho' she was very corpulent and unfit for Travel, yet made many Journies from the one to the other; and, in the End, by the Duke's dutiful Submission, wrought a perfect Reconciliation between them.

Soon after the Truce between *England* and *France*<sup>t</sup>, expiring, both Nations vigorously resolv'd to pursue the War; and the *French* King having made great Preparations, and sent *John de Vienne*, his Admiral, with a thousand Men at Arms, besides Cross-Bows, to the Assistance of the *Scots*; the King, 13th of *June*, 1385. 8 *Rich. II.* <sup>u</sup> signified to the Duke of *Lancaster*, that for the Welfare of his Crown and Kingdom, and Suppression of the Rebellion of his Enemies

<sup>t</sup> *History of England*. præd. p. 253.

<sup>u</sup> *Rymer*, T. 7. P. 474.

mies the *Scots*, he proposes to be at *Newcastle* on *Tyne*, the 14th of *July* next, to march against them, with Horse and Arms; he therefore commands him to be then at the said Place, with more than his Quota, if possible, which shall be acknowledged, and his Loyalty and Probity commended. And the King signifying the same to all the great Men throughout the Kingdom \*, raised in a short Time an Army of Three hundred thousand Men, whereof sixty thousand were immediately sent against the *Scots*, under the Command of the Duke of *Lancaster*, the King himself resolving to follow as fast as he could with the rest. The *Scots* and *French* had been very busy in plundering, burning, and killing, before they had the News of the Duke's Approach; but as soon as they heard of it, they retreated with their Cattle into the Mountains, so that the Duke found no Opposition. The King was inform'd of this at *York*, yet proceeded on his Journey, and joining with the Duke, destroyed the Country as far as *Edinburgh*, which they burnt, all but the *Abbey* of *Holy-Rood House*, spared by the Intercession of the Duke of *Lancaster*, because he had been civilly entertain'd in that Convent during the Rebellion in *England*. The *French* were very desirous to have stopped the Progress of the *English* Army, but the *Scots* shewing them from the Hills, the Numbers of the Enemy prevail'd with them to fall into *Cumberland*, where they did much Mischief to countervail their own Losses. The Army having remain'd five Days about *Edinburgh*, was returning when they heard

D 3

of

\* *History of England*, p. 254.



of the Inroads of the *Scots*. The Duke of *Lancaster* advised the King to stop up the Passes strongly, that they might all fall into his Power, which they could not have avoided had it been done; but the Earl of *Oxford*, who was most in Favour, and whose Advice the King principally follow'd, suggested to him, that the Duke designed to bring his Person into Danger. Whereupon the King neglected the Advantage, and return'd home in great Displeasure against the Duke, altho' he <sup>y</sup> had behav'd himself with great Duty and Modesty, both in Words and Actions, so that it had like to have occasion'd a Breach between them, had not the Lords by their Intercession again cemented their Affections in the best manner they could.

The next Year, 9 R. II. the *Spaniards* <sup>z</sup> besieg'd *Lisbon*, the Metropolis of the King of *Portugal*, who, being unable to raise the Siege, and well knowing that the Duke of *Lancaster*, who was King of *Spain* in Title, would be glad of any Opportunity to make himself so in Fact, and that there could not be a better Way to secure himself, than by a Conjunction of their Arms together, sent an Embassy into *England* to the Duke to beg his Assistance, and to promise him, that their united Arms would infallibly effect a Conquest over the *Spaniards*. The Duke, who had been for some Time making Preparations for the Expedition, readily embraced the Offer, having had the Assent of the <sup>a</sup> Lords and Commons in Parliament, and being encouraged by the King, and his Friends, who <sup>b</sup> long'd to have him out  
of

<sup>y</sup> *Speed's Chron.* p. 611.

<sup>z</sup> *History of Engl.* p. 255.

<sup>a</sup> *Knigh-ton*, p. 2676.

<sup>b</sup> *History of England*, p. 255.

of their Way; and therefore that he might lose no Time, mustered up his Forces with all speed, and began his Voyage in the beginning of *May*. His Fleet was 18 Ships and 7 Gallies, of which Sir *Thomas Percy* was Admiral; and his Army, (of which the Lord *John Holland* was Constable, and Sir *Thomas Moreaux* one of his Marshals) consisted of 20000 Men. Many Nobleman accompany'd him to share in his Fortunes, as the Lords, *Lucy*, *Talbot*, *Basset*, *Willoughby*, *Fitz-Walter*, *Poynings*, *Fitz-Warren*, *Beauchamp*, and *Beaumont*, besides many Knights and Gentlemen. He carried with him his Wife the Lady *Constance*, Heir to the Crown of *Spain*, *Catharine*, her Daughter by him, and *Philippa*, his other Daughter by his first Wife. Before his Departure, he <sup>c</sup> ordained his Son, *Henry* Earl of *Derby*, Lieutenant of all he had in *England*, and placed about him a sage and judicious Council. And when he had took his Leave the King <sup>d</sup> presented him with a Crown of Gold, and commanded that his Men should obey him as King of *Spain*, the Queen likewise gave his Dutcheß a Crown of Gold, with many good Wishes of Success in obtaining their Right. As the Duke passed by *Brest*, the Governor made <sup>e</sup> Complaint to him of two Forts lately erected by the *French*, to annoy his Garrison. Whereupon he sent out a strong Force under the Lord *Fitz-Walter*, to assault and demolish them, but they were so well defended, that it cost them the Lives of many valiant Men, who were accidentally killed by the Fall of a Tower, and at length was gained by Capitulation, the *French*

D 4

Gover-

<sup>c</sup> *Froissart*, Lib. 3 & 4. f. 64.  
of *England*, præd.

<sup>d</sup> *Knigton*, præd.

<sup>e</sup> *Hist.*

Governor being wounded, and most of his Men slain. From *Brest*, after this brave Exploit, the Duke passed along the Coasts of *Galicia*, and landed at the *Groine* with all his Army, on *St Laurence's Eve*, 9 *August*, 1386, 10 R. II. here they tarried a Month, and then the Duke went to *Compostella*. But the Lord *John Holland* kept the Army in Action, and won many small Garrisons in the neighbouring Country, and others willingly submitted to the Duke, because his Dutcheſs, the right Heir of the *Spaniſh* Crown was with them. The Season being unfit for Action, the Duke consulted with *John*, King of *Portugal*, about their Expedition in the Spring, when it was agreed with their united Forces to invade *Spain*: Also to make the League the stronger, the Duke affianced his Daughter *Phillippa* to the King of *Portugal*. At first his Arms were every where victorious. The *Spaniſh* Army under Don *Alvarez de Perez*, was totally <sup>f</sup> routed, and the *Spaniards* terrified with the Loss kept themselves close in the walled Towns, which were also many of them taken by the *English* and *Portuguese*. The *French* had promised the *Spaniards* Assistance, but a more kind Fate so befriended them, that the *English* were conquer'd without Weapons: The Heat and Unkindness of the Climate, so afflicted his whole Army with mortal Diseases, that many of his best Men, as the Lord *Fitz-Walter*, and others perished, and the Remainder were rendered unfit for any warlike Action. They were likewise in such extream Want of Provision, that <sup>z</sup> many of his

<sup>f</sup> Ibid. p. 265.

<sup>z</sup> Speed's Chron. p. 616.

his Men revolted to the Enemy, merely to get Relief, which the King of *Portugal* observing, said, he would attack them as Enemies; which the Duke prevented, telling him, he knew they did it only thro' Scarcity of Provision. But, as he sat on his Horse, he held down his Head, in great Sorrow and Anguish of Mind; and with Tears lamented his Condition; he begg'd of God, who judges of every Man's Right, to interpose on his Behalf, and make an honourable Conclusion of that Expedition for him; which Prayer the Event so well answer'd, that, (as my Author observes) God may well be judged to have heard him in his Affliction: He indeed <sup>h</sup> endeavoured to retrieve his Loss, by sending into *England* for a Recruit of his Forces; but the Troubles, there would not allow the King to spare him any, which farther increased his Grief. The Duke then having obtain'd Leave of the King of *Spain*, that the sick Soldiers should remain in his Country till they were recovered; departed in Sorrow to *Baion*, a City in *Gascoigne*, and there remain'd in much Melancholy for his ill Luck. Here Providence made way for that happy Conclusion which the Duke had desired: For the Duke of *Berry*, the *French* King's Uncle, making a Proposition of a Marriage with *Catharine* the Duke's Daughter, and Heiress to the Crown of *Spain*, after the Death of her Mother, so roused the Thoughts of the King of *Spain*, lest the Union of two such potent Interests, in *France*, and *England*, should bring greater Danger to his Throne; that by the Advice of his Council, he became



became an earnest Suiter to the Duke of *Lancaster*, for a Match between his eldest Son *Henry* and the Duke's Daughter. Some Propositions tending to a Conclusion had been made with the Duke of *Berry*, but the King of *Spain's* Offers, being more agreeable to his Wishes, and making more for the Honour of both the Lady and himself, the Marriage was soon concluded on these following Conditions, advantageous to all Sides. I. That *Henry*, Prince of *Spain*, should marry the Lady *Catherine*, eldest Daughter of *John*, Duke of *Lancaster*, and *Constantia* his Wife; and that they should be called, after Marriage, Prince and Princess of *Asturia*, so long as the present King lived. II. That the Kingdom of *Spain*, after the present King's Death, should descend to the said Prince and Princess, and the Heirs of their Bodies; and, for want of such Heirs, to *Edmund* Duke of *York*, (who had married King *Peter's* other Daughter) and his Heirs. III. That the King of *Spain* should pay the Duke of *Lancaster* 200000 £. towards the Charges of the Expedition, and 10000 £. *per Annum*, during his and his Duchess's Life. This angered the *French* King, and produced some Threats of a War, for the Wrong done the Duke of *Berry*. But the King of *Spain* valued not his Menaces, so long as he was sure of the Assistance of the *English*, and the Duke of *Lancaster* returned with Joy into *England*.

The King, whilst he was abroad <sup>i</sup> constituted him, May 26, 1388, 11 R. II, his Lieutenant, in the Duchy of *Guyen*, and four Days after <sup>k</sup>, appointed

<sup>i</sup> Rymer, T. 7, p. 583.

<sup>k</sup> Ibid. p. 586.

appointed him his Lieutenant in *Aquitain*, and that he might with greater Advantage treat with the King of *Spain*, he obtained a Commission<sup>1</sup>, dated the first of *June* following, to make a Truce, Peace, or Confederacy, with him. The next Year he<sup>m</sup> obtained divers Privileges in his Duchy of *Lancaster*, viz. for a Chancery-Court there, and to have Writs for that Office under his own Seal; as also Justices for Pleas of the Crown, as well as others, with all Royalties belonging to a County-Palatine, in as ample Manner as the Earl of *Chester* ever had. Likewise for an Exchequer, with Barons, and other necessary Officers, and Power to make Justices itinerant for Pleas of the Forest, &c. And this Year continuing still abroad in his Post of Lieutenant of *Aquitain*, he, by Indenture<sup>n</sup> dated at *Curteys*, April 6, 1389, 12 R. II, entered into Agreement to aid *Gaston Count de Foix*, in War against the Count *de Armagnac*, and the Sieur *de la Bret*, with 300 Men at Arms, at the Pay of the said Count, each Man at 15 Franks per Month; and the said Count promised, on an Emergency, to aid the King of *England* with 200 Men at Arms, at the same Pay.

Having now brought all things to a Conclusion with the King of *Spain*, as already mentioned, he prepared for his Departure into *England*, and to that end the King<sup>o</sup> appointed, August 11, 1389, 13 R. II, *Thomas Savil*, Serjeant at Arms, to impress six Ships and one Barge, in the Port of *Dartmouth*.

On

<sup>1</sup> Ibid. p. 587.

<sup>n</sup> Rymer, præd. p. 615.

<sup>m</sup> Cart. ab an. 11. usq. 13 R. II, n. 4.

<sup>o</sup> Rymer, p. 641.

On the beginning of *November* following he arrived in *England*, bringing with him, as *Walsingham* says <sup>p</sup>, 47 Mules, laden with Chests full of Gold. Just at his landing the King had summoned a <sup>q</sup> great Council of his Peers to meet at *Reading*, to which he immediately hastened; not only to meet the King, and pay his Duty to him, but to reconcile the Difference which he had heard began to arise between the King and his Nobles. This Act, so conducive to the public Benefit, and Good of the Kingdom, he happily effected, and having made them all Friends, went to his Castle of *Hertford*, where he kept his *Christmas*.

On the second of *March* following, the King, by the <sup>r</sup> Consent of the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, created him Duke of *Aquitain* for Life, by <sup>t</sup> putting on his Head a Cap, and giving him a Rod of Gold, to hold that Duchy of the King, and his Heirs, as Kings of *France*. And on the 26th of *May* 1390, 13 R. II, bearing <sup>t</sup> the Title of Duke of *Aquitain*, and *Lancaster*, he was one of those Peers who complained to the Pope, against the Exorbitances, and Encroachments of the Apostolical See. On the eighth of *February* 1391, 14 R. II, he had a <sup>u</sup> Grant for Life to be exempt from paying any Fees, for the great Seal, or other Seals, for any Letters-Patents, Commissions, Writs, Judgments, &c. in any of the King's Courts, &c. And this Year had a great and

<sup>p</sup> *Walsingham*, p. 375.

<sup>r</sup> *Rot Parl.* 13 R. II, n. 21.  
p. 673.

<sup>u</sup> *Ibid.* p. 695.

<sup>q</sup> *History of England*, p. 266.

<sup>t</sup> *Rymer*, p. 659.

<sup>t</sup> *Ibid.*

and noble Hunting <sup>w</sup> in *Leicester* Forest, and the Parks adjoining, accompanied by divers eminent Persons.

The next Year, 15 R. II, he was <sup>x</sup> commissioned to treat of a Peace with *France*, and soon after *Christmas*, with the Bishop of *Durham*, the Earl of *Rutland* his Nephew, several others of the Nobility, and a Train of 1000 Men, passed over to the Place of Treaty at *Amiens*. The King of *France* having heard a great Character of him for his Wisdom and Prudence, (and indeed, as my Author says <sup>y</sup>, he was one of the wisest and greatest Peers of those Days, made as magnificent Preparations for his Reception, as if he had been the greatest Emperor in the World, and met him himself at *Amiens*, with his Brother the Duke of *Touraine*, and his Uncles, the Dukes of *Berry*, *Bourbon*, and *Burgoyne*, and many other Peers of *France*. The Charges of the *English* Embassadors, and their Retinue, were born by the *French* King from their coming from *Calais*, till they returned thither again. At the Treaty divers Propositions for Peace were made on each Side, but both Parties were so cautious to settle an advantageous Peace, that nothing was concluded farther, than that the Truce which was to end at *Midsummer*, should continue another Year, and, in the mean Time, more effectual Counsels should be taken, at the meeting of the next Parliament, for the Conclusion of the intended Peace; and so the Duke and his Retinue returned Home again.

Soon

<sup>w</sup> *Knighton*, p. 2737.  
<sup>y</sup> *Hist. præd.*

<sup>x</sup> *History of England*, p. 268.



Soon after the King, by <sup>z</sup> his Advice, summoned a great Council, like a Parliament, at *Stamford*, to consult on a Peace, or resolve on a War, with *France*. This Meeting, after hot Debates, was dissolved without coming to a Resolution, but in the ensuing Parliament, which met at *Westminster* a little after *Christmas*, the Clergy having <sup>a</sup> granted the King half a Tenth to carry on the Negotiation, he, on the 22d of *February* 1393, 16 R. II<sup>b</sup>, constituted the Duke his Lieutenant in *Picardy*, and by two <sup>c</sup> Commissions of the same Date, the first appointed him, and his Brother the Duke of *Gloucester*, to treat with *John* Duke of *Berry*, *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy*, and others, deputed by the King of *France*, about a Truce, &c. and then gives a like Power to them, in Conjunction with *Walter* Bishop of *Durham*, *Thomas*, Earl-Marshal, Governor of *Calais*, *Thomas* Peircy, Steward of the Household, Sir *Lewis Clifford*, Knight of the King's Chamber, and *Richard Rouhale*, L. L. D.

The two Dukes, &c. immediately <sup>d</sup> passed over to *Lenlyngham*, the Place of Treaty, between *Calais* and *Bologne*, where stately Tents were erected for their Meeting. The *Frenchmen* required to have *Calais* razed, but the Dukes of *Lancaster* and *Gloucester* answered, They had no Power to treat in that Matter, and they knew their Master would hold it in Demesne and Inheritance; and if they intended to conclude a Peace, they must not mention it any farther; which smart Reply put an End to that Demand.

Then

<sup>z</sup> *Hist. præd.* p. 269.

<sup>c</sup> *Ibid.* p. 741, 742.

<sup>a</sup> *Ibid.* p. 270.

<sup>b</sup> *Rymer*, p. 740.

<sup>d</sup> *History of England*, p. 270

Then the Dukes insisted, That the Countries on that Side, which had of late been either in the Possession of King *Edward III*, or King *Richard* their Master, should be restored, and the Florins which were left unpaid, by Reason of the War, should now be paid; which the *English* Lawyers proved to be agreeable to Reason and Equity. But the *French* argued much against it, and would by no Means yield to either: Whereby their Debates were adjourned for nine Days, that the Kings on both Sides might be acquainted with what they had done. The Duke of *Gloucester* was for no Peace, unless the former Conditions were granted. But the *French* King and Nobles, as well as King *Richard* and the Duke of *Lancaster*, were very desirous to bring it to an End, and so a Truce, at their next Meeting, was made for four Years.

During his Absence in *France*, he became a <sup>e</sup> Widower by the Death of *Constance* his Duchess, a Lady of great Virtue and Piety, who was <sup>f</sup> buried at *Leicester* with great Solemnity, the Sunday after the Feast of the Apostles *Peter* and *Paul*. In the next Parliament, which met at *Westminster* a little after the Feast of *St Hilary*, 17 R. II, he accused <sup>g</sup> the Earl of *Arundel*, of encouraging and assisting the Commons of *Chester* against him, lying in his Castle of *Holt* by *Chester*, with a Body of Men, while the People, under one *Nicholas Clifton*, assaulted the Duke's House. The Earl flatly denied he had the least Intention that Way, and gave such probable Reasons

<sup>e</sup> *Walsingb.* p. 385.  
of England, p. 271.

<sup>f</sup> *Knighton*, p. 2741.

<sup>g</sup> *History*

Reasons in his own Defence, that he was cleared of any such Design, and by the Mediation of certain great Persons, was perfectly reconciled to the Duke. Soon after, on the 10th of *March* 1394, 17 R. II, he was again <sup>h</sup> appointed the King's Lieutenant in *Picardy*, and the next Year obtained a Charter <sup>i</sup> for divers Privileges, in his Hundreds of *Gallow* and *Brothercrosse*, in *Com. Norf.* viz. Fines, Amerciaments, and Redemptions of his own Tenants, as also Year, Day, and Waste, Felons Goods, Return of Writs, &c.

Having been created Duke of *Aquitain*, in 13 R. II, as already observed, he, in Autumn <sup>k</sup> this Year went to take Possession of that Country. On his Arrival he <sup>l</sup> summoned the Lords and chief Inhabitants of the great Towns, and declared to them that the King of *England* had given their Country to him and his Heirs for an Inheritance, and desired their peaceable Submission to him as their supreme Lord. But they returned him Answer, That their Country was inseparably united to the Crown of *England*, and would never submit to him otherwise than as the King of *England's* Lieutenant. The Duke insisted on his Gift, but would use no Force to compel them to Subjection, unless it were the more lasting ones of Kindness and Moderation. But they constantly affirmed they had ever been governed by Kings, and could not be alienated from the Crown of *England*, without a Violation of the King's Coronation Oath, and therefore would never submit to those Terms.

At

<sup>h</sup> Rymer, pag. 766.

<sup>k</sup> Knighton, p. 2741.

<sup>i</sup> Cart. 18 and 19 R. II. n. 12.

<sup>l</sup> History of England, p. 273.

At length to end the Controversy, Deputies were dispatched from the People of *Aquitain* to the Court of *England*, where they insisted, that they ought not to be <sup>m</sup> alienated from the Crown, because they depended chiefly on that for Assistance and Protection. And tho' the Duke of *Gloucester*, (more <sup>n</sup> to keep his Brother out of the Nation, than out of Love to Justice, or to his Interests) pressed the inviolable Nature of the King's Grant to his Brother; yet the Arguments of the Deputies were so prevalent with the King, that it was decreed, that the Country and Dutchy of *Aquitain*, should always remain in the Demesne of the Crown of *England*, least it should fall into the Hand of some Stranger. But the Duke remain'd there governing as the King's Deputy, which Station he managed so well, that he gain'd the Love and willing Submission of all the People, being very affable and liberal.

The King therefore, lest the Grant he recalled should be obtained against his Will, sent for him home, and eased himself of that Jealousy; and the Duke, tho' he had been at great Expence to purchase their Favour, chose rather to lose his Money than forfeit his Loyalty; and returned in 19 R. II, to the King at *Langley*, (where he kept his *Christmas*) but perceiving his Reception was rather honourable than real, he left the Court, and retired to his House at *Lincoln*. However before he went there, in the Parliament held at *London*, he <sup>p</sup> moved, that his Son, *Henry of Bolingbroke*, might be adjudged Heir to the

E

King-

<sup>m</sup> *Froissart*, Vol. 4. Chap. 61.      <sup>n</sup> Hist. præd.      <sup>o</sup> *Wals.*  
<sup>p</sup> *Leland*, M. S. p. 383.



Kingdom of *England*, as being the Son of *Blanch*, Daughter of *Henry* Duke of *Lancaster*, Grandson of *Edmond*, first Earl of *Lancaster*, who he pretended was elder Brother to King *Edward* the First, but put by the Crown, by King *Henry* the Third, for the Deformity of a broken Back, and therefore named *Crouchback*. Which was contradicted by *Roger Mortimer*, Earl of *March*, who made it appear to the contrary, and alledged, that being Son of *Philippa*, only Daughter and Heir to *Lionel*, Duke of *Clarence*, second surviving Son of King *Edward* the Third. He was to be preferred before the Son of *John*, Duke of *Lancaster*, as being younger than *Lionel*. This bold Motion of the Duke's, made the King cold to him, as had it been true, it fixed on the three *Edwards*, his Predecessors, the Title of Usurpers. Yet this Spark, his Son *Henry*, after blew into a Flame, and was the Cause of the Civil Wars, between the Houses of *Lancaster* and *York*.

But the Duke of *Lancaster*, whose Ambition being well known, was soon after as much wonder'd at for his Condescension; for, in his Retirement at *Lincoln*, to the Amazement of the People, he married on the *Octaves* of the *Epiphany* 1396, the Lady *Catharine Swinford*, who had been his Concubine in his Wife's Days. The Duke, in 3 R. II, <sup>a</sup> granted her the Wardship of *Bertran de Sanneby's* Heir, in these Words. *Pur le bone & greable service quelle nostre, treschier & bien amee, Dame Katherine Swynford, maistresse de noztresames, filles Philippe & Elizabeth*

<sup>a</sup> Ex libro nigro in Cam. Ducat. Lanc. fol. 96.

beth *de Lancaſtre*, *ad fait a noz dittes filles lui avoir* Grauntes, &c. And <sup>r</sup> calling Her his moſt dear and well-beloved Dame *Catharine Swinford*, granted her an Annuity of 200 Marks, in 5 R. II, payable out of his Honour of *Tickbill*. This Lady was a <sup>s</sup> Native of *Henault*, and Daughter to Sir *Payn Roet*, a Knight of that Country, who was <sup>t</sup> made Guyen, King of Arms, in the Reign of King *Edward* the Third. She was <sup>u</sup> brought up in her Youth in the Duke's Houſe, and attended on his firſt Lady; but, in the Life-time of his ſecond Wife, he had by her three Sons, and a Daughter, to whom he gave the Sirname of *Beaufort* <sup>x</sup>, from the Place of their Nativity, a Caſtle in the County of *Anjou* in *France*. Afterwards ſhe was married to Sir *Hugh Swinford*, a <sup>y</sup> Knight of *England*, who having left her a Widow, the Duke, out of his Affection to his Children, took her to his third Wife. This Match was much diſlik'd by the Court-Ladies, and the Duchefs of *Glouceſter*, and the Counteſſes of *Warwick*, and *Arundel*, particularly diſdain'd her, ſaying, they would not be preſent where ſhe ſhould come, on account of her having Precedency before them. But her prudent Behaviour<sup>z</sup>, conquered their Paſſions, and in a ſhort Time ſhe became very acceptable to them.

The King, ſoon after having <sup>\*</sup> been married to the *French* King's Daughter by Proxy, went over to *Calais* in *October* following, attended by the Dukes of *Lancaſter* and *Glouceſter*, and a very ſpendid

E 2

<sup>r</sup> Ibid. <sup>s</sup> *Stow's Annals*, p. 312. and *Leland*, M. S. Vol. 1. p. 191. <sup>t</sup> *Weever's Funeral Mon.* p. 671. <sup>u</sup> *Stow præd.* <sup>x</sup> *Heylin's Help to Hiſt.* p. 215. <sup>y</sup> *Stow præd.* <sup>z</sup> *Hiſt. of Eng.* p. 273.  
<sup>\*</sup> Ibid. p. 274.

splendid Retinue to receive his Wife. The two Kings, had an Interview between *Guisnes* and *Ardes*, attended by the Nobility of both Realms; and the *French* King, with his own Hands, deliver'd his Daughter to King *Richard*, who thankfully receiving her, delivered her again to to the Duchesses of *Lancaster* and *Gloucester*, she being then but eight Years old. In this Year, (20 R. II.) he was again <sup>a</sup> made Lieutenant of *Picardy*, and shortly after <sup>b</sup> went into *Gascony*. He like wise <sup>c</sup> obtained an Act of Parliament, to legitimate the Children, which he had begotten on the Lady *Catharine Swinford*, before his Marriage with her<sup>d</sup>. And were render'd capable of all Honours and Employments, the royal Dignity excepted.

The next Year, (21 R. II.) the King incensed at the factious Behaviour of the Duke of *Gloucester*, and some other popular Lords contriv'd their Destruction. The Duke of *Lancaster*, disapproved of the rough and dangerous Proceeding of his Brother, and generally opposed him; but when the King complained to him, and the Duke of *York* of his Behaviour, they told him, "That  
 " tho' their Brother *Gloucester*, was somewhat  
 " rash in his Words, yet they knew him to be  
 " of truly loyal Principles, really studious of his  
 " Majesty's and Realms Happiness, and that he  
 " would not act any Thing prejudicial to either."  
 These Words so much allay'd the King's Anger, that had not bad Instruments applied themselves to blow the Coals afresh, all Animosities had been quite extinguished. But the King being inform-

<sup>a</sup> Rot. Franc. 20. R. II. m. 10.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid. m. 7. <sup>c</sup> Wals. 388.

<sup>d</sup> Rot. Parl. 20 R. II. February 9.

ed, that the Duke of *Gloucester* had uttered many seditious Speeches, he suddenly apprehended him, and convey'd him to *Calais*, where he was soon after strangled. The Earls of *Arundel* and *Warwick*, were sent to the *Tower* much about the same Time, and the King having procured the Members of the ensuing Parliament, to ratify his arbitrary Proceeding, he resolved to bring the two Earls to a Trial. The Parliament met about the middle of *September*, and as my Author relates<sup>d</sup>, the Dukes of *Lancaster* and *York* doubting of their own Safety, because their Brother was imprisoned, brought along with them a strong Body of Men to defend themselves, and were received into *London*, tho' the King before had forbidden the Citizens to entertain them; yet certain of the Nobility, who were sent to them from the King, giving them Assurances, that there was no ill intended against them, and that nothing should be done against the Lords, without their Advice and Concurrence, so prevailed with them, that they dismissed their Forces home. But it appears from better Authority<sup>e</sup>, that the Duke of *Lancaster* had the King's Commission, dated 28th of *August*, 1397. 21 R. II, to raise Three hundred Men at Arms, and Six hundred Archers, as had likewise his Son the Earl of *Derby*, to raise Two hundred Men at Arms, and Four hundred Archers; and the Duke of *York*, One hundred Men at Arms, and Two hundred Archers; which they were to march to *Westminster*, the next Parliament, for the King's Guard, and there remain till further Order.

E 3

During

<sup>d</sup> *History of England*, p. 276.<sup>e</sup> *Rymer*, T. 8. p. 14.



During the sitting of the Parliament, the Earls of *Arundel* and *Warwick* were brought on their Trial, and <sup>f</sup> on that Occasion the Duke of *Lancaster* being High-Steward of *England*, past Sentence of Death on them. And soon after, his Son *Henry*, Earl of *Derby*, who had been created Duke of *Hereford*, much resenting the Murder of his Uncle, *Thomas* of *Woodstock*, Duke of *Gloucester*, by the King's Procurement at *Calais*; he said <sup>g</sup> to the Duke of *Norfolk*, Earl-Marshal, Fair Cousin, what thinketh the King our Cousin to do; will he drive out of *England* all the Noblemen? within a while there will be none left. And on that Duke's Information, being sent for, and his Words related to the King in another Sense; and that he, the Duke of *Norfolk*, would prove them with his Body, and thereupon cast his Gauge. The Duke of *Hereford* said, Earl-Marshal, I say, that thou art an evil and false Traitor, and that I shall prove with my Body against thine, and in this Quarrel here is my Gauge. Whereupon the King commanding them to give Security not to depart the Realm, his Father <sup>h</sup> the Duke of *Lancaster*, with the Duke of *York*, and the Earl of *Northumberland*, were Pledges for him.

In 21 R. II. the Duke of *Lancaster*, with others, were <sup>i</sup> commissioned to amend and reform all Matters contrary to the Truces with *Scotland* and *France*. The Year after (22 R. II.) he was <sup>k</sup> constituted Lieutenant in the Marches towards *Scotland*, from the beginning of the Truce between

<sup>f</sup> *History of England*, Vol. I. p. 277.  
<sup>h</sup> *Ibid.* 297. <sup>i</sup> *Rymer*, Tom. 8. p. 32.  
 II. m. 9.

<sup>g</sup> *Froissart*, 299.  
<sup>k</sup> *Rot. Scac.* 22 R.

tween both Realms, for twenty eight Years. But before the end of that Year, he<sup>1</sup> departed this Life<sup>m</sup> at *Ely-House* in *Holbourn*, and was honourably buried by his first Wife in *St Paul's Cathedral, London*, where a noble Monument was erected to his Memory, very loftily built of Free-stone, placed betwixt two Pillars, on the North-side of the high Altar. Their Portraitures were cut in Alabaster, in full length, their Hands erect in Prayer; the Duke in Armour, and his Duchess in the Habit of the Times. There was also a View of the Crest, Shield and Spear, which he is said to have used in his Lifetime. The following *Memorial* was written on a Tablet, placed near the said Monument.

*Hic in Domino obdormivit, Joannes Gandavensis, vulgo de Gaunt, a Gandavo Flandriæ urbe loco natali ita denominatus; Edwardi tertii Regis Angliæ filius; a patre Comitis Richmondiaë titulo ordinatus. Tres sibi uxores in matrimonio duxit; primam Blancheam, filiam & hæredem Henrici Ducis Lancastriæ, per quam amplissimam adiit hæreditatem. Nec solum Dux Lancastriæ, sed etiam Leicestriæ, Lincolniaë & Derbiæ comes effectus; e cujus sobole Imperatores, Reges, Principes, & procures propagati sunt plurimi. Alteram habuit uxorem Constantiam, (quæ hic contumulatur) filiam & hæredem Petri Regis Castilliaë & Legionis; cujus jure optimo titulo Regis Castilliaë & Legionis usus est. Hæc unicam illi peperit filiam Catharinam, ex qua ab Henrico Reges Hispaniæ sunt propagati, Tertiam verò uxorem duxit Catharinam,*

E 4

ex

<sup>1</sup> T. Wals. 393. n. 40.      <sup>m</sup> Let. Col. Vol. 1. p. 695.

*ex equestri familia, & eximia pulchritudine fœminam; ex qua numerosam suscepit prolem, unde genus ex matre duxit Henricus septimus Rex Angliæ prudentissimus; cujus felicissimo conjugio cum Elizabetha Edwardi quarti Regis filia, è stirpe Eboracensi, Regiæ ille Lancastriensium & Eboracensium familiæ, ad exoptatissimam Angliæ pacem coaluerunt.*

*Illustrimus hic Princeps Johannes cognomento Plantaginet, Rex Castellæ & Legionis, Dux Lancastriæ, comes Richmondæ, Leicestriæ, Lincolnæ & Derbiæ, locum tenens Aquitaniæ, magnus seneschallus Angliæ, obiit anno 22 regni Regis Ricardi secundi, annoq; Domini, MCCCXCIX.*

In 4 H. IV, the King, by his <sup>n</sup> Letters Patent, reciting his Licence granted to *Ralph*, Earl of *Westmorland*, *Thomas*, Earl of *Worcester*, and others, Executors to *John*, Duke of *Aquitane* and *Lancaster*, (his dear Father) for their founding a Chantry, in a certain Chapel, (then newly built) situate on the North-side of the Choir of *St Paul's Cathedral*, opposite to the Tomb of the said Duke; and the Lady *Blanch*, his Wife, Mother to the same King: As also another Chantry in the Collegiate Church of our Lady, at *Leicester*, called *the New-work*, for two Priests to celebrate divine Service, for the good Estate of the said King, during his Life in this World, and afterwards for the Health of his Soul, and the Souls of his said Father and Mother, and for the Soul of the Lady *Constance*, former Wife to the said Duke, whose Body lieth interred

interred \* in the same Collegiate Church ; gave further Licence to the said Executors, to purchase Lands to the Value of Forty Pound *per annum*, for Support of the said Chantries, and to keep the Anniversaries of his said Father and Mother.

Also King *Henry* the Fourth, in the ° 10th Year of his Reign, gave to the Dean and Chapter of the Cathedral of *St Paul's*, and their Successors for ever, divers Messuages and Lands, within the City of *London*, for the Anniversary of the said *John*, Duke of *Lancaster*, (his Father) on the fourth Day of *February* ; and of *Blanch*, his Mother, on the twelfth Day of *September*, yearly in the said Cathedral, with *Placebo* and *Dirige*, nineteen *Antiphones*, nineteen *Psalms*, and nineteen *Lessons*, in the Exequies of either of them ; as also Mass of *Requiem*, with Note on the Morrow, to be perform'd at the High-Altar for ever : And moreover, to distribute to the said Dean and Chapter, these several Sums, *viz.* to the Dean, when present, Three Shillings and four Pence ; to the petty Canons, Ten Shillings ; to the Chaplains, Twenty Shillings ; to the Vicars, Six Shillings and eight Pence ; to the Choristers, Two Shillings and six Pence ; to the Virgers, Twelve Pence ; to the Bell-Ringers, Six Pence ; to the Keepers of the Lamps about the Tomb of the said Duke and Duchess, at each of their

\* This shews, that the Epitaph on his Monument was made long after his Decease, and that she was not buried with him ; so that the Effigies lying by him, was for *Blanch* his first Wife, who was buried in *St Paul's*.

° *Dugdale's History of St Paul's* p. 38.



their Anniversaries, Six Pence; to the Mayor of *London* for the Time being in respect of his Presence at the said Anniversaries, Three Shillings and four Pence; to the Sheriffs of *London*, when present, Three Shillings and four Pence; to the Bishop of *London* for the Rent of the House, wherein the said Chantry-Priests did reside, Ten Shillings: And the said Dean and Chapter were also to find eight great Tapers to burn about that Tomb, on the Day of the said Anniversaries, at the Exequies, and Mass on the Morrow; and likewise at the Processions; Masses and Vespers, on every great Festival; and on *Sundays* at the Procession, Mass, and second Vespers, for ever. And, lastly, to provide for those Priests, belonging to that Chapel on the North-part of the said Tomb, a certain Chalice, Missal, and Portvoise, according to the *Ordinale Sarum*; as also Vestments, Bread, Wine, Wax, and Glasses; and other Ornaments and Necessaries for the same, and Repair of their Mansion.

I shall now proceed to give an Account of this great Duke's Descendants. By his first Wife, he had Issue one Son, *Henry de Bolingbroke*, (so surnamed from the Place of his Nativity) Earl of *Derby*, and Duke of *Hereford*, after King of *England*, by the Name of *Henry* the Fourth; and two Daughters, *Philippa* married in 1387, to *John*, King of *Portugal*: Which Marriage was celebrated, to contract a more firm League betwixt the Duke of *Lancaster*, her Father, and that King, whereby he might be the better enabled to pursue the Conquest of *Castile* and *Leon*. She died many Years before her Husband, King  
*John*

*John*, who departed this Life at *Lisbon*, 14th of *August*, 1433. leaving by *Philippa* a numerous Issue, of which the eldest Son living was *Edward*, (so named from his Great-Grandfather, King *Edward* the Third) who succeeded his Father, and reigned five Years, leaving two Sons, *Alphonso*, and *Ferdinand*, Duke of *Visco*. *Alphonso*, succeeded his Father, by the Name of *Alphonso* V. and died in the Year 1481, leaving Issue, *John* the Second, King of *Portugal*, who had Issue, *Alphonso*, King of *Portugal*, in whose Death that Line extinguish'd, Whereupon *Emanuel*, Son of *Ferdinand*, Duke of *Visco*, second Son of *Edward*, King of *Portugal*, succeeded to the Crown; which *Emanuel* dying, Anno 1521. left Issue, *John*, *Henry*, and *Edward*, Ancestor to the present King of *Portugal*. *John* succeeded his Father, by the Name of *John* the Third, and had a Son, *John*, Prince of *Portugal*, who died in his Father's Life-time, leaving Issue his only Son, *Sebastian*, King of *Portugal*, slain in Battle against the *Moors* in *Africk*, anno 1587, without Issue, the last King of *Portugal* of that Line; He was succeeded by *Henry*, the Cardinal, his Great-Uncle, second Son of King *Emanuel*, who, by Reason of his Function and Years, not being capable of Issue, that Kingdom was seized by *Philip* the II, King of *Spain*, in the Year 1590, in Right of *Isabel* his Mother, Daughter of the said King *Emanuel*; and was possessed by *Philip* the Third, and *Philip*, the Fourth, Kings of *Spain*, till the Year 1640: When it was recovered by *John* the Second of that Name, Duke of *Braganza*, Son of Duke *Theodosius*, second Son of  
*John*

*John* the Sixth, Duke of *Braganza*; and *Catharine* his Wife, Daughter of *Edward*, Infanta of *Portugal*, youngest Son of King *Emanuel*, as before-mentioned; which *John*, Duke of *Braganza*, by the primitive Constitution and Law of *Lamego*, was undoubted Heir to that Kingdom, and dying *anno* 1656, is the direct Ancestor to the present King of *Portugal*.

*Elizabeth* of *Lancaster*, second Daughter to *John*, Duke of *Lancaster*, by his first Wife, was first married to *John Holland*, Earl of *Huntingdon* and Duke of *Exeter*; 2dly, to Sir *John Cornwall*, Lord *Fanbope*, and Knight of the Garter, by whom she had no Issue. But by the Duke of *Exeter* had Issue, *John Holland*, Duke of *Exeter*, who, by *Anne* his first Wife, Daughter of *Thomas* of *Woodstock*, Duke of *Gloucester*, youngest Son of King *Edward* the Third, had Issue an only Son, *Henry Holland*, Duke of *Exeter*, from whom (by his second Wife, *Anne* Daughter of *John Montagu*, Earl of *Salisbury*) descended the *Nevils*, Earls of *Westmorland*. But *Constance Holland*, only Daughter of *John*, Duke of *Exeter*, who was married first to *Thomas Moubray*, Duke of *Norfolk*, (by whom she had no Issue) and 2dly, to *John* Lord *Grey* of *Ruthin*, was Father by her of *Edmond* the first Earl of *Kent*, from whom the present Duke of *Kent* is descended, and all of his Lineage.

The Duke of *Lancaster*, by his second Wife, Daughter of King *Peter* of *Spain*, had Issue one Daughter, *Catharine* married, as before-mentioned, to *Henry*, Prince of *Asturias*, who succeeded his Father in the Kingdom of *Castile* and *Leon*, by the Name of *Henry III*, and had Issue  
by

by her *John*, the second King of *Castile* and *Leon*, Father of *Isabel*, his sole Daughter and Heir, married to *Ferdinand*, King of *Arragon*, surnamed *the Catholick*, by whom she had Issue her only Daughter, *Joan*, espoused to *Philip*, Archduke of *Austria*, and in her Right King of *Spain*. And by her was Father of *Charles V*, Emperor of *Germany*, and King of *Spain*; and *Ferdinand*, Archduke of *Austria*, who, upon the Resignation of his Brother *Charles*, succeeded to the Empire in 1558. He was born in *Spain*, in 1503, and in Right of his Wife, was in 1527 crowned King of *Hungary* and of *Bohemia*, and is the direct Ancestor to the present Emperor of *Germany*, and of that Progeny. But to *Charles* the fifth Emperor of *Germany*, succeeded in the Kingdom of *Spain*, his Son *Philip*, Father of *Philip* the Third, King of *Spain*, who had Issue *Philip IV*, King of *Spain*, who left Issue a Son, *Charles* the Second, King of *Spain*, and a Daughter, *Maria Theresa*, married to *Lewis* the XIV, late King of *France*, who had Issue by her an only Son, *Lewis*, Dauphin of *France*, born on the 1st of *November*, 1662, who died in the Life-time of his Father, 14th *April*, 1711, leaving three Sons, *Lewis*, Father of the now King of *France*, *Philip*, Duke of *Anjou*, the Possessor of the Kingdom of *Spain*, by the Will of the before-mentioned *Charles II*, King of *Spain*, who died without Issue, in the Year 1700.

The Lady *Catharine Swinford*, third Wife of the Duke of *Lancaster*, surviving him, departed this Life, on the 10th of *May*, 1403, 4 *H. IV*, and lieth buried in the Choir of the Cathedral Church of *Lincoln*, under a fair Tomb of Marble,



ble, built Altar-ways, with her Effigies in Brasse, and this Epitaph cut on a Plate of the same Mettle, in old *English* Characters, beginning on the South-side from the Head.

**Icy gist Dame Katherine Duchesse de Lancastre, jadyes femme de la tresnoble, & tresgracious Prince John Duke de Lancastre, sitz a tresnoble, Roy Edward le tierce. La quelle Katherine moreult le 8 iour de May, l'an du grace mil CCC tierz; de quelle almes Dieu cyt mercy & pitee. Amen.**

By her the Duke had Issue *John*, surnamed *Beaufort*, Earl of *Somerset*, *Henry* Bishop of *Winchester*, and Cardinal, as also Lord Chancellor of *England*. *Thomas*, Earl of *Dorset*, and Duke of *Exeter*, who left no Issue; *Joan*, first married to Sir *Robert Ferrers* of *Oversley*, and afterwards to *Ralph*, Earl of *Westmorland*. All which Children were<sup>p</sup> legitimated by Act of Parliament, in 20 R. II.

*Joan*, Countess of *Westmorland*, lies buried by her Mother at *Lincoln*, under a Tomb adjoining to her's, whereon is this Epitaph.

*Filia Lancastricæ Ducis inclyta sponsa Johanna  
Westmorland primi jacet hic Comitiss,  
Desine scriba suas virtutes promere: nullo  
Vox valeat merita vix reboare sua.  
Stirpe, decore, fide, fama, spe, prece, prole,  
Actibus & vita polluit ymmo sua  
Natio tota dolet pro morte, Deus tulit ipsam  
In Bricii festo C. quater, M. quater X.*

This

This Countess of *Westmorland*, was first married, (as was said before) to Sir *Robert Ferrers*, Baron of *Oversley*, who had by her only two Daughters, his Co-heirs; *Elizabeth* married to *John* Lord *Greystock*, who had Issue by her, besides four Sons, who were not married, *Ralph*, Baron of *Greystock*, and two Daughters; *Joan* the Wife of *John* Lord *Darcy*, from whom the present Earl of *Holderness*, and many others are descended; and *Eleanor* the Wife of *John* Lord *Evers*, from whom the Lord *Evers* descended. *Ralph*, Baron of *Greystock*, marrying *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *William*, Lord *Fitz-Hugh*, left Issue by her, *Robert*, his Son and Heir, who by *Elizabeth* his Wife, Daughter of *Edward* Grey, Earl of *Kent*, had an only Daughter and Heir, *Elizabeth*, married to *Thomas*, Lord *Dacres* of *Gillesland*, who in her Right was Baron of *Greystock*, from whom the present Earl of *Carlisle*, and many others are descended.

*Mary* the other Daughter, and Co-heir of Sir *Robert Ferrers*, Baron of *Oversley*, was married to *Ralph* *Nevil*, second Son to *Ralph*, Earl of *Westmorland*, by *Margaret* his first Wife, Daughter to *Hugh*, Earl of *Stafford*, and there-upon *John* his Son, had the Title of Lord *Ferrers*, whose Daughter *Joan*, (Heir to the Baronies of *Oversley* and *Newmarch*) being married to Sir *William Gascoigne*, he left only a Daughter, *Margaret Gascoigne*, his Heir, Wife to *Thomas Wentworth*, Ancestor by her to the present Earl of *Strafford*.

The said *Joan*, Daughter to the Duke of *Lancaster*, had Issue by her second Husband  
*Ralph*,

*Ralph*, Earl of *Westmorland*, eight Sons and five Daughters; 1. *Richard Nevil*, Earl of *Salisbury*, who had that Title in Right of his Wife *Alice*, sole Daughter and Heir of *Thomas Montagu*, Earl of *Salisbury*, by whom he had Issue four Sons; *Richard*, Earl of *Warwick* and *Salisbury*, *John*, Marquis *Montagu*, Sir *Thomas Nevil*, Knight, and *George*, Bishop of *Exeter*, and Lord Chancellor of *England*, afterwards Archbishop of *York*. Also six Daughters, whereof *Joan* was the Wife of *William Fitz-Alan*, Earl of *Arun- del*, from whom descended *Henry*, Earl of *Arun- del*, who left Issue two Dughters his Co-heirs; *Joan* married to *John*, Lord *Lumley*, but left no Issue surviving; and *Mary* married to *Thomas*, Duke of *Norfolk*, from whom the present Duke of *Nor- folk*, the Earl of *Stafford*, and others, derive their Descent. *Cicely*, second Daughter of *Richard*, Earl of *Salisbury*, was married to *Henry Beau- champ*, Duke of *Warwick*, by whom she had an only Daughter, who died unmarried. *Alice*, third Daughter was espoused to *Henry*, Lord *Fitz-Hugh*, and had Issue by him five Sons, from whom no Descendants are remaining; and five Daughters, whereof *Alice* was married to Sir *John Fines*, Knight, Son of *Richard*, Lord *Dacres*, and *Elizabeth* espoused first to Sir *Wil- liam Parr*, Knight of the Garter; and 2dly, to *Nicholas*, Lord *Vaux*, by whom she had only three Daughters; but by her first Husband she had Issue, Sir *Thomas Parr*, Knight, and *Wil- liam*, Lord *Parr* of *Horton*, who left four Daugh- ters his Co-heirs, from the eldest of which the present Earl of *Denbigh* is descended. The eldest Son,

Son, Sir *Thomas Parr*, took to Wife, *Maud*, Daughter and Co-heir to Sir *Thomas Green*, Knight, and had Issue *William*, Marquis of *Northampton*, who died without Issue; and two Daughters, *Anne* married to *William Herbert*, Earl of *Pembroke*, from whom the present Earl of *Pembroke*, the Marquis of *Powis*, and *Henrietta-Lovisa*, Countess of *Pomfret*, one of the Ladies of the Bedchamber to her late Majesty, with many others, are descended. *Catharine*, the other Daughter, was first married to *Edward Borough*, a younger Son of *Thomas*, Lord *Borough*; 2dly, to *John*, Lord *Latimer*, 3dly, to King *Henry* the Eighth, and lastly, to *Thomas*, Lord *Seymour* of *Sudley*; but she had no Issue that lived to Maturity, except by her second Husband, whose Son by her *John*, Lord *Latimer*, left four Daughters his Co-heirs, whose Descendants are hereafter mentioned.

The other Daughters of *Richard*, Earl of *Salisbury*, were four, *Eleanor*, espoused to *Thomas Stanley*, Earl of *Derby*, from whom the present Earl of that Name, the Duke of *Athol*, and others, are descended. The fifth, *Catharine* wedded to *William Borvile*, Son and Heir to *William*, Lord *Harrington*, whose Daughter and sole Heir *Cicely*, became the Wife of *Thomas*, Marquis of *Dorset*, from whom the present Earl of *Stamford* and those of that Line are descended; and 2dly, to *William*, Lord *Hastings*, Ancestor to the present Earl of *Huntingdon*; 6. *Margaret* to *John de Vere*, Earl of *Oxford*, from whom descended *Aubrey de Vere*, Earl of *Oxford*, whose Daughter and Heir the Lady *Diana Vere*, was married to *Charles* late



Duke of *St Albans*, by whom she was Mother of the present Duke of *St Albans*.

The eldest Son of *Richard*, Earl of *Salisbury*, before-mentioned, was after his Father's Name *Richard*, and was Earl of *Warwick*, as well as *Salisbury*, having married *Anne*, Daughter and Heir of *Richard Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*; and was so eminent an Actor in those Broils, between the Houses of *York* and *Lancaster*, that he had the Title of *King-Maker*. But he left only two Daughters, *Isabel* married to *George Plantagenet*, Duke of *Clarence*, third Son to *Richard*, Duke of *York*, and Brother to King *Edward* the Fourth, who, in her Right, had the Earldoms of *Warwick* and *Salisbury*, and from them the present Earl of *Huntingdon* is descended. The other Daughter, *Anne*, was first married to *Edward*, Prince of *Wales*, Son to King *Henry VI.* and 2dly, to the Murderer of her first Husband, afterwards King *Richard* the Third.

*John*, Marquis of *Montagu*, second Son of *Richard*, Earl of *Salisbury*, had Issue two Sons, who died young, and five Daughters; *Anne*, Wife of Sir *William Stoner* of the County of *Oxford*, Knight, *Elizabeth* of the Lord *Scroop* of *Upsall*, *Margaret* of Sir *John Mortimer*, Knight, and afterwards of *Robert Horne*; *Lucy*, first of Sir *Thomas Fitz-Williams*, Knight, and afterwards of Sir *Anthony Brown*, Knight, from which Marriage is descended the present Lord Viscount *Montagu*, the Lord *Tenham*, and others; and *Isabel* of Sir *William Huddleston*, Knight.

I now return to *William Nevil*, second Son of *Ralph*, Earl of *Westmoreland*, by *Joan* of *Lancaster*,

*caster*. Which *William* in Right of his Wife *Joan*, Daughter and Heir to *Thomas*, Lord *Fauconberg*, enjoy'd that Title, and was afterwards created Earl of *Kent*. He left Issue only three Daughters his Co-heirs, *Joan*, Wife to Sir *Edward Bedbowing*, Knight, *Elizabeth* to Sir *Richard Strangeways*, Knight, and *Alice* to Sir *John Conyers*, Knight, from whom is descended the present Earl of *Holdernefs*.

3. *George Nevil*, third Son of the said *Ralph*, Earl of *Westmoreland*, by Gift of his Father, enjoying great Part of the Inheritance of the ancient Lords *Latimer's*, had Summons to Parliament by that Title in the Reign of *Henry* the Sixth, and from him descended Lord *John Latimer*, who left four Daughters his Heirs. 1. *Catharine* married to *Henry*, Earl of *Northumberland*, whose only Daughter and Heir was married to his Grace the present Duke of *Somerset*. 2. *Dorothy* the Wife of *Thomas Cecil*, Earl of *Exeter*, Ancestor to the present Earl. 3. *Lucy* wedded to Sir *William Cornwallis*, Knight, from whom the Lord *Cornwallis* is descended. 4. *Elizabeth* married to Sir *John Danvers*, Knight, from whom the present Duke of *Leeds* is descended.

4. *Edward Nevil*, fourth Son, was Lord *Abergavenny*, in Right of his Wife *Elizabeth*, Daughter and sole Heir to *Richard Beauchamp*, Lord *Abergavenny*, by whom he had Issue *George*, Lord *Abergavenny*, who by *Margaret* his Wife, Daughter of Sir *Hugh Fenn*, Knight, Vice-Treasurer of *England*, was Father of five Sons, *George*, *William*, *Edward*, *Thomas*, and *Richard*, and

two Daughters, *Jane*, Wife to Sir *Henry Pole*, Lord *Montagu*, who left two Daughters Co-heirs, *Catharine* married to *Francis*, Earl of *Huntingdon*, from whom the present Earl is descended, and *Winifred*, Wife to Sir *Thomas Barrington* of *Barrington-Hall* in the County of *Essex*, Knight, Ancestor in the Male-Line to the present Sir *John Barrington*, Baronet; and thro' the Marriage of *Elizabeth*, Daughter of Sir *Francis Barrington*, Baronet, with Sir *William Masbam*, Baronet, to the present Lord *Masbam*; and *Elizabeth*, Wife of Sir *Edward Berkley* of the Vine, in *Com. Southamp.* Knight, who had Issue by her two Daughters his Co-heirs, *Anne*, and *Lora* married to *John Ashburnham*, Esq; Ancestor to the present Earl of *Ashburnham*. The said *Anne*, eldest Daughter of Sir *Edward Berkley*, was espoused to *John Brent* of *Charing* in the County of *Kent*, Esq; by whom he had *Margaret* his Daughter, and at length sole Heir, Wife of *John Dering* of *Surrenden-Dering* in *Kent*, Esq; Father of *Richard Dering*, Esq; who married *Margaret*, Daughter of *William Twisden*, and had Issue Sir *Anthony Dering*, Knight, who took to Wife *Frances*, Daughter of Sir *Robert Bell*, Knight, by whom he was Father to Sir *Edward Dering* Baronet, who wedded *Anne*, Daughter of Sir *John Ashburnham*, Knight, and had Issue by her Sir *Edward Dering*, Baronet, who married *Mary*, Daughter of Sir *Daniel Harvey*, Knight, and left Issue, amongst other Children, *Catharine*, Wife of Sir *John Perceval*, Bart. from which Match proceeded *John Perceval*, now Earl of *Egmont*, who married *Catharine*,

*rine*, Daughter of Sir *Philip Parker*, of *Arwar-ton*, in *Com. Suff.* Bart. by whom he hath Issue now living one Son, *John*, Lord Viscount *Perceval*, and two Daughters; the Lady *Catharine*, Widow of *Thomas Hanmer*, Esq; and the Lady *Helena* yet unmarried. The said *John*, Lord Viscount *Perceval*, married the Lady *Catharine*, second Daughter of *James*, late Earl of *Salisbury*, by whom he is Father of two Sons, *John-James Perceval*, two Years old, and upwards, Anno 1740, and *Cecil-Parker Perceval*, born October, 1739.

Having thus deduced the Descendants of *George*, Lord *Abergavenny*, by his Daughters, I shall next give an Account of his Sons, whereof *George* the eldest was Ancestor to *Henry Nevil*, Lord *Abergavenny*, whose only Daughter and Heir, *Mary*, was married to Sir *Thomas Fane*, Kt. from which Match is descended the present Earl of *Westmoreland*, as also many others of that Family now living. And *Edward*, third Son, had Issue two Sons, *Edward*, and *Henry* of *Billingbeer*, in *Berks*, from whom the *Nevils* of that County descend; as also, three Daughters, whereof *Frances* was the Wife of Sir *Edward Waldegrave*, Ancestor to the present Earl of *Waldegrave*, &c. *Edward*, eldest Son of the said *Edward*, succeeded to the Title of Lord *Abergavenny*, and is Ancestor to the present Lord, and to *Margaret* now Countess of *Coningsby*.

The other Sons of *Ralph*, Earl of *Westmoreland*, were *Robert*, Bishop of *Durham*, 6. *Cuthbert*, 7. *Henry*, and 8. *Thomas*, who all died issueless.



The five Daughters of *Ralph*, Earl of *Westmoreland*, were first, *Catharine*, married to *John Mowbray* Duke of *Norfolk*; and, after his Decease, to *Thomas Strangeways*, Esq; 3dly, to *John*, Viscount *Beaumont*, and lastly, to Sir *John Widvile*, Knight; 2. *Eleanor*, espoused first to *Richard*, Lord *Spencer*, and 2dly, to *Henry Piercy*, Earl of *Northumberland*; 3. *Anne* wedded to *Humphry*, Duke of *Bucks*, and 2dly, to *Walter Blunt*, Lord *Montjoy*; 4. *Jane*, and 5. *Cecilia*, married to *Richard*, Duke of *York*, by whom she was Mother to King *Edward* the Fourth; as also to *Anne Plantagenet*, first married to *Henry Holland*, Duke of *Exeter*; and 2dly, to Sir *Thomas St Leger*, Knight, by whom she had Issue an only Daughter *Anne*, married to *George Manners*, Lord *Roos*, from which Match the Duke of *Rutland* is paternally descended, and by maternal Ancestors, the Earls of *Exeter*, *Orrery*, *Shaftsbury*, *Salisbury*, and others of the Nobility.

I shall now proceed to treat of the eldest Son of the Duke of *Lancaster* by his third Wife, which was *John*, Earl of *Somerset*, whose Son *John*, was created Duke of *Somerset*, and left Issue an only Daughter his Heir, *Margaret*, married to *Edmond Tudor*, by whom she was Mother of King *Henry* the Seventh. But *Edmond*, his younger Brother, succeeded him, and was also created Duke of *Somerset*. He left Issue, *Henry* his Successor, who by *Joan* Daughter of — *Hill*, Esq; was the Father of *Charles*, Earl of *Worcester*, from whom the present Duke of *Beaufort* and many others of our Nobility are descended. And *Edmond*, Duke of *Somerset*,  
Successor

Successor to his Brother *Henry*, dying also without Issue, his four Sisters were Co-heirs, viz.

*Eleanor Beaufort*, married first to *James*, Earl of *Ormond* and *Wiltshire*, by whom she had no Issue; and 2dly, to Sir *John Spencer*, Knight, by whom she had two Daughters, *Catharine* married to *Henry Piercy*, Earl of *Northumberland*; and *Margaret* to *Thomas Carey*, Esq; from whom the present Lord *Hunsdon*, and the Lord Viscount *Falkland*, and all of those Lines derive their Descent.

*Anne Beaufort*, second Sister, was first married to the Lord *Hotb* of *Ireland*; and 2dly, to Sir *John Fry*, Knight.

*Joan Beaufort*, third Sister, was the Wife of Sir *William Paston*, Knight, by whom she had Issue two Daughters, his Co-heirs, *Anne* married to Sir *Gilbert Talbot*, who also left by her two Daughters, from whom the present Sir *Thomas Littleton* of *Frankley*, Bart. by the eldest, and the *Astleys* of *Patesbul* by the youngest, are descended. *Elizabeth* the second Daughter of Sir *William Paston*, was the Wife of Sir *John Savile*, of *Thornhill*, in *Com. Ebor.* Knt. who had Issue *Henry Savile*, Esq; Grandfather of *John Lord Savile*, of *Pomfret*, Father of *Thomas* Earl of *Sussex*, who by *Anne* his Wife, Daughter of *Christopher Villiers*, Earl of *Anglesey*, had Issue *James*, Earl of *Sussex*, who died issueless; and two Daughters, *Frances*, married to *Francis*, Lord *Brudenel*, Ancestor to the present Earl of *Cardigan*; and *Elizabeth*, married to *James*, Lord *Audley*, Son and Heir of *Mervin*, Earl of *Castlehaven*.

The said Sir *John Savile* had also three Daughters, *Anne*, married to Sir *Henry Thwaites*; *Elizabeth*, to Sir *Thomas Conyers*, of *Sockbonre*, in *Com. Pal. Durb.* and 2dly to *Thomas Southill*, Esq; and *Margaret*, wedded to *Thomas Wortley* of *Wortley*, in *Com. Ebor.* Esq; and 2dly to *Richard Corbet*, Esq. The said *Thomas Wortley*, had Issue by her *Francis Wortley*, of *Wortley*, Esq; who by *Mary* his Wife, Daughter of Sir *Robert Swift*, of *Rotheram*, in *Com. Ebor.* Knight, was Father of Sir *Richard Wortley*, Knight, w<sup>o</sup> married *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *Edward Boughton*, of *Causton* in *Warwickshire*, by whom he had Issue four Sons, of which only *Francis* the eldest left Issue; and four Daughters. The said *Francis Wortley* was created a Baronet 24 of June, 1611, and married *Grace*, Daughter of Sir *William Brounkard*, of *Melkesham*, in *Wiltshire*, by whom he left Issue a Daughter, married to Sir *Henry Griffith*, of *Agnes Burton*, in *Com. Ebor.* and an only Son Sir *Francis Wortley*, Bart. who died *Anno* 1666, and left his Estate to the Honourable *Sidney Montagu*, second Son of *Edward*, Earl of *Sandwich*, who had married *Anne* his Daughter, and to bear the Name of *Wortley*.

The four Daughters of Sir *Richard Wortley*, were *Mary*, the Wife of *Henry*, Baron of *Hilton*, in *Com. Pal. Durb.* Ancestor to the present Baron of *Hilton*; *Anne*, Wife of Sir *Rotheram Willoughby*, of *Wollaton*, in *Com. Nott.* Ancestor to those of that Place. *Elizabeth*, 3d Daughter was married to Sir *Henry Crofts*, of *Saxham*, in *Suffolk*, Knight; and *Eleanor* the 4th, to Sir *Henry Lee*, of *Quarendon*, in *Buckinghamshire*, Knight

Knight and Baronet, from whom the present Earl of *Litchfield*, and others of his Family, derive their Descent.

I now return to *Margaret Beaufort*, fourth Sister and Coheir of *Edmund*, Duke of *Somerset*. She married to her first Husband *Humphry*, Earl of *Stafford*, who, by her, was Father of *Henry*, Duke of *Buckingham*; whose Son *Edward*, Duke of *Buckingham* had Issue *Elizabeth*, Wife of *Thomas Howard*, Duke of *Norfolk*, Grandfather of *Thomas*, Duke of *Norfolk*, who married *Margaret*, Daughter of *Thomas Lord Audeley*, of *Walden*; and, among other Children, had Issue *Margaret*, married to *Robert Sackville*, Earl of *Dorset*, who had Issue *Richard*, Earl of *Dorset*, whose sole Daughter, and Heir *Margaret*, was the Wife of *John Tufton*, Earl of *Thanet*; and, from *Edward*, Earl of *Dorset* (Brother to the said *Richard*) is descended his Grace *Lionel*, now Duke of *Dorset*.

The said *Margaret Beaufort* had to her second Husband Sir *Richard Darel*, by whom she had Issue a Daughter, Wife of *James Touchet*, Lord *Audley*, from whom the present Lord *Audley*, and Earl of *Castlehaven*, and others, are lineally descended.



# I N D E X

## O F

### N A M E S.

- A.
- |                                   |                               |                |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------------------|----------------|
| <b>A</b> Bergavenny, Lord George  | Basset of Drayton, Ralph      | 33             |
| 83, 85. Edward                    | — Lord                        | 55             |
| Anglesey, Earl Christop. Villiers | Bavaria, Duke William         | 6, 9           |
| 87                                | Beauchamp, Lord               | 55             |
| Anjou, Duke of                    | — Richard Earl of             | 82             |
| Annesley, John                    | Warwick                       | 82             |
| Armaignac, Count                  | — Richard Lord A-             | 83             |
| Arragon, King Ferdinand           | bergavenny                    | 84             |
| Arundel, Earl of                  | Beaufort, Duke of             | 87             |
| 63, 69, 70                        | — Eleanor 87. Anne            | 87             |
| — Richard 8, 10, 33. Wil-         | Joan 87. Margaret 89          |                |
| liam Fitz-Allan                   | Beaumont, Viscount John       | 86             |
| — Countess of                     | — Lord 55. Henry              | 5              |
| Ashburnham, John                  | — Thomas                      | 35             |
| — Earl of                         | Bedhowing, Edward             | 83             |
| Asheton, John                     | Bell, Robert                  | 84             |
| Astley of Pateshul                | Bergavenny, Lord William      | 12             |
| Asturias, Prince Henry            | Berkele, Thomas               | 33             |
| Athol, Duke of                    | Berkley, John 35. Edward      | 84             |
| Audley, Lord James                | Berry, Duke 47, 57, 58, 61.   | 62             |
| Audeley of Helegh, William        | John                          | 88             |
| — Lord Thomas of Wal-             | Blount of Beveresbrok, John   | 35             |
| den                               | Blunt, Walter, Lord Montjoy   | 86             |
| Austria, Archduke Philip          | Bolingbroke of, Henry Earl of | 65, 74         |
| Ferdinand                         | Derby                         | 81             |
|                                   | Bonville, William             | 81             |
| B.                                | Borough, Edward               | 81             |
| Baliol, Edward                    | — Lord Thomas                 | 33             |
| Bardolf, William                  | Bottreux, William             | 81             |
| Barrington, Thomas 84. John       |                               | 84. Francis 84 |
| 84. Francis 84                    |                               |                |
- Bottiler,

# I N D E X.

Bottler, John	35	Crofts, Henry	88
Bourbon, Duke of	61	Cromwel, Ralph	33
Boughton, Edward	88	Curton, Smebron	33
Brember, Nicholas	30		
Brent, John	84		
Bretagne, Duke	11	D.	
Brittany, Duke John	3	Dacres, Lord Thomas of Gillef-	
Brounkard, William	88	land	79
Brown, Antho.	82	—— Lord Richard	80
Bruys, David	40	Dangle, Guisghard	19
Brudenell, Lord Francis	87	Danvers, John	83
Buckingham, Earl 48. Thomas	34	Darcy, Philip	33
—— Duke Humphry	86	—— Lord John	79
Buckingham and Essex, Earl	50	Darel, Richard	87
Thomas	50	De la Bret, Sieur	59
—— Duke Henry and	89	De la Mare, Thomas	34
Duke Edward	61	De la Pole, Michael 33, 34, 35.	35
Burgoigne, Duke of	61	Edmund	12, 13
Burgundy, Duke of 14, 47, 48.	62	De Endregghan Arnold	80
Philip	62	Denbigh, Earl of	37, 38
—— Dutcheſs Margaret 10	33	Denia, Earl of	31, 81. Henry
Buttetourt, John	38	Derby, Earl of	40, 47, 55
Buxhall, Allan	38	Dering, John, Anthony, and Ed-	85
		ward	35
		Despenſer, Philip	81
		Dorſet, Marquis, Thomas	43
		Douglas, Earl of	43
		Dunbar, Earl of	43
		Durham, Biſhop of 61. Walter	62. Robert 85
C.		E.	
Cambridge, Earl of 17, 19, 34.		Edward the 4th King	82, 86
Edmund 10, 23, 32		Egmont, Earl John	84
Canterbury, Archbiſhop, Simon	23	Elmham, William	47
	87	Exeter, Earl of	83, 86
Cardigan, Earl of	87	—— Biſhop, George	80
Carey, Thomas	79	Evers, Lord John	79
Carlisle, Earl of	11, 19, 20		
Caſtile, King Pedro	77	F.	
—— and Leon, King John	87, 89	Falkland, Lord Viſcount	87
Caſtlehaven, Earl of	83	Fane, Thomas	85
Cecil, Thomas Earl of Exeter	25, 59	Fauconberg, Lord Thomas	83
Cheſter, Earl of	66	Fenn, Hugh	83
Clarence, Duke Lionel	12, 13	Ferrers, Ralph 38. Robert	79
Clequin, Bertram	62	Ferrers, Lord John	80
Clifford, Lewis	63	Fines, John	79
Clifton, Nicholas	23	Fitz-Hugh, Lord William	80
Cobham, John	85	Henry	80
Copingsby, Counteſs Margaret	88	Fitz-Walter	
	88		
Conyers, John 83. Thomas	83		
Corbet, Richard	83		
Cornwallis, William	83		
—— Lord	83		

# I N D E X.

<b>Fitz-Walter, Walter</b>	33	<b>Horne, Robert</b>	82
——— Lord	55, 56	<b>Hoth of Ireland, Lord</b>	87
<b>Fitz-Warren, Lord</b>	55	<b>Huddleston, William</b>	82
<b>Fitz-Williams, Thomas</b>	82	<b>Hunsdon, Lord</b>	87
<b>Flanders, Earl of 11, 50. Lewis</b>	10	<b>Huntingdon, Earl of</b>	81, 82
<b>Foix, Count, Gaston</b>	59	——— Earl Guischart	34
<b>Fry, John</b>	87	<b>Francis</b>	84
<b>Furnival, William</b>	33		
		<b>I.</b>	
		<b>Ipres, John</b>	27
<b>G.</b>		<b>K.</b>	
<b>Gascoigne, William 79. Margaret</b>	79	<b>Katerington, Thomas</b>	40
<b>Germany, Emperor, Charles Vth.</b>	77	<b>Kent, Earl Edmund 33, 34. Ed-</b>	
<b>Gloucester, Duke of 62, 63,</b>	65, 67, 68, 69	<b>ward Grey 79. William</b>	83
——— Dutchess	67, 68	<b>Knowlles, Robert</b>	36
<b>Greilly, Archibald</b>	33		
<b>Green, Henry 50. Thomas</b>	81	<b>L.</b>	
<b>Grey of Wylton, Henry</b>	33	<b>Lancaster, Duke Henry, 5, 10,</b>	24, 66
—— of Ruthyn, Reginald	33	——— Earl Edmund	66
—— of Rotherfield, Robert	34	<b>Langley, de Edmund</b>	46
<b>Greystock, Lord Ralph 33, 79.</b>	79	<b>Laon, Bishop</b>	47
<b>John</b>	79	<b>Lee, Henry</b>	88
<b>Griffith, Henry</b>	88	<b>Leeds, Duke of</b>	83
		<b>L'Estrange, of Knockyn, Roger</b>	33
		<b>Latimer, Lord 38, 83. John</b>	81, 83
<b>H.</b>		——— William,	23, 32
<b>Hale, Francis</b>	23	——— John	49
<b>Hanmer, Thomas</b>	85	<b>La Warre, John</b>	33
<b>Haryngton, Robert</b>	34	<b>Litchfield, Earl of</b>	89
<b>Harrington, Lord William</b>	81	<b>Littleton, Tho.</b>	87
<b>Harvey, Daniel</b>	84	<b>Lincoln, Bishop, John</b>	8
<b>Hastings, Lord William</b>	81	<b>Lisle, Warin</b>	34
<b>Henry VIth. King</b>	82	<b>London, Bishop 26, 27, 28, 38,</b>	39. Simon
<b>Henry VIIth. King</b>	86		23
<b>Henry VIIIth. King</b>	81	<b>Lovel, John</b>	33
<b>Herbert, William Earl of Pem-</b>	81	<b>Lucy, Lord</b>	55
<b>broke</b>	81	<b>Lumley, Lord John</b>	80
<b>Hereford, Earl Humphry</b>	40		
——— Duke Henry 69, 70	70		
<b>Hertford, Earl Humphry</b>	11	<b>M.</b>	
<b>Hill</b>	86	<b>Manners, George Lord Roos</b>	86
<b>Hilton, Baron Henry</b>	88	<b>March, Earl of 24. Edmund</b>	32, 33
<b>Holderness, Earl of 79, 83</b>	83	<b>Marshal, Earl Tho.</b>	62
<b>Holland, Lord John 49, 55, 56</b>	56	<b>Masham, William</b>	84
——— Henry Duke of Exe-	86	——— Lord	84
<b>ter</b>	86		
<b>Hoo, Richard</b>	34	<b>Montagu</b>	

93

Montagu, John	33	Percy, Henry 33. Tho. 55, 62	
Marquiss John	80,	Henry Earl of Northum-	
	82	berland	86, 87
Montagu, Lord Viscount	83	Lord 34. Henry	25
Moreaux, Tho.	55	Perez de Alvarez	56
Mortimer, Roger Earl of March	66	Peter, King	58
	82	Plantagenet, George Duke of	
John	82	Clarence	82
Moubray, John Duke of Nor-		Anne	86
folk	86	Pole, Henry Lord Montagu	84
Multon, Simon	23	Pomfret, Countess Henrietta-	
		Louisa	81
N.		Portugal, King of	54
Namur, Robert	14	King John, 56, 57,	
Nevil, John 33. Ralph	79.	King Edward, &c.	
Wm. 89. Tho.	80		75, 6
Lord Ralph 11. John	44	Powis, Marquiss of	81
Edward Lord Aberga-		Poynings, Richard	34
venny	83	Lord	55
Henry Lord Aberga-			
venny	85	R.	
George Lord Latimer	83	Redman, Matthew	41, 45
Family in Berkshire	85	Richard III. King	82
Norfolk, Duke of 70. Tho.	80,	Richmond, Earl John	33
	89	Roet, Payn	67
Norris, John	34	Roos of Hamlake, Thomas	33,
Northampton, Marquis Wm.	81		34
Northumberland, Earl of 41, 43,		Rouhale, Richard	62
46, 51, 70. Henry 34, 44,		Rutland, Earl of	61
45, 48, 83		Duke of	86
Norwich, Bishop of	47	S.	
Nottingham, Earl John	34	Sackville, Lionel Duke of Dorset	
O.			88
Ormond and Wiltshire, Earl		Robert Earl of Dor-	
James	87	set	89
Orrery, Earl of	86	Richard Earl	89
Oxford, Earl of 54. Tho.	10	St. Albans, Duke Char.	81
P.		St. Amand, Almery	33
Parker, Philip	85	St. Leger, Tho.	86
Parr, Lord Wm. 80. Tho.	80,	St. Paul, Earl	15
	81	Salisbury, Earl of	86
Palton, William	87	Earl William, 23, 33.	
Pembroke, Earl of 17, 32, 81		Richard, 80, 81, 82. Tho.	
Perceval, John 84. John-James		Montagu 80. James	85
and Cecil-Parker	85	Sandwich, Earl Edward	88
Lord Viscount John		Sanneby, Bertram	66
	85	Savage, Arnold	23
		Savil,	



# I N D E X.

Savil, Tho. 59. John and Henry	87	Tourain, Duke of	61
—— Lord John	87	Trefiliari, Judge	51
Scales, Roger	33	Trivit, Tho.	47
Scroop of Upsale, Lord	82	Tudor, Edmund	86
Ser, Pelegrin	39	Twisden, William	84
Seymour, of Somersfet, R.	33	Tufton, John Earl of Thanet	88
—— of Sudley, Lord Tho.	81		
Shakell, John,	37, 38	V.	
Shaftsbury, Earl of	86	Vaux, Lord Nicholas	80
Shepeye, John	23	Vere, John Earl of Oxford	81
Somersfet, Duke of 83. John	86.	—— Aubrey Earl of Oxford	81
—— Edmund	86, 89	—— Lady Diana	81
—— Earl John	86	Vienne, de John	52
Southill, Tho.	88		
Spain, King of	57, 58, 59	W.	
—— King Philip, King		Wake, Lord Thomas	5
Charles, &c.	77	—— of Glyfton, John	35
—— Prince Henry	58, 59	Wales, Princess of	52
Spencer, Lord Richard	86	—— Prince Edward	82
—— John	87	Waldegrave, Edward	85
Stafford, Earl 31, 80. Ralph	5.	—— Earl of	85
Hugh. 33. 79. Humphry	88.	Warwick, Earl of 32, 46, 69,	
Stamford, Earl	81	—— Earl Richard	82
Stanley, Tho. Earl of Derby	81	—— Duke Henry Beau-	
Staple, Adam	30	champ	80
Stoner, William	82	—— Countefs of	67
Stouteville, Lord	15	Welynton, John	33
Strafford, Earl of	79	Wentworth, Tho.	79
Strangeways, Richard 83. Tho.	86	Westmoreland, Earl Ralph	72,
		9, 80, 2, 3, 5, 6	
Suffolk, Earl of 46. Rob. 10.		—— Countefs Joan	78
Wm.	33, 35		
Suffex, Earl Tho.	87	Widvile, Joan	86
—— Earl James	87	Willoughby, Robert	33
Swift, Robert	88	—— Lord	55
Swinford, Lady Catharine	66,	—— Rotheram	88
67, 68, 77, 78		—— William	88
—— Hugh	67	Wortley, Thomas, Francis, and	
		Richard	88
		—— Montagu Sidney	88
T.		Worcester, Earl John	72
Talbot, Gilbert	33, 4, 87	—— Earl Charles	86
—— Lord	55	—— Bishop Henry	33
Tenham, Lord,	82	Wycliff, John	25, 26
Thwaits, Henry	88	Wymondeswold, Richard	4
Touchet, James Lord Audeley	89		

# I N D E X. 95

Y.		Z.
York, Duke Edmund	58, 68,	Zouch of Foulkborn, Henry 33
	9, 70	———— Haryngworth, Wm.
— Duke Richard	82, 6	33

## F I N I S.

---

## E R R A T A.

*P. 34. l. 7 for those r. these.*



\*\*\*\*\*

*Books printed for T. OSBORNE  
in Gray's-Inn.*

I. **T**HE *British* Librarian, or an Abstract of above fifty valuable Books and Manuscripts ; with Historical and Critical Remarks, (*being the Specimen of a comprehensive and most useful Design, to communicate the Contents of our scarce and most choice Authors.*)

II. An Universal History, from the earliest Account of Time to the present, compiled from original Authors, and illustrated with Maps, Cuts, Notes, Chronological and other Tables, 5 vol. A Work of so extensive a Nature, that it is in itself a Library.

III. *Grotius* of the Rights of War and Peace, with *Barbeyrac's* Notes. This is a most excellent and useful Book, containing all the Principles of true Policy.

IV. General, Historical, and Critical Dictionary, 10 vol. the Whole containing the most illustrious Persons of all Ages and Nations, particularly those of *Great Britain* and *Ireland*, distinguished by their Ranks, Actions, and other Accomplishments.

V. *Bundy's Roman* History, 6 vol. with Cuts. The Antiquities, as well as History of the *Romans*, are explained in this Work.

VI. *Fleetwood's* Sermons, and other Works. Learned, curious, penned in a fine Stile.

